

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

Fxsl xggħpxn-NcpI hkxn-NcpxI

قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ (صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآلِهِ):

إِنِّي تَارِكٌ فِيكُمْ الثَّقَلَيْنِ: كِتَابَ اللَّهِ، وَ  
عِزَّتِي أَهْلَ بَيْتِي، مَا إِنْ تَمَسَّكْتُمْ بِهِمَا لَنْ تَضِلُّوا  
أَبَدًا، وَإِنَّهُمَا لَنْ يَفْتَرِقَا حَتَّى يَرِدَا عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضَ.

Pcbncj | edycl fcnx C; ncl i  
fwdwnl wavwn... ÅPcrxrcjck l ck sxbxk  
hnhk'bv h x; x hy'n mc vcdcnx cl hkcj rudwf  
'evxncl ... Hgghp`k ;xjhjhf mc Xjncjxl ughk  
Cpgx-fedjxl . Ukghnh shn`gv'y`k'b mhojh  
rcvcn pe] mhoj dugwkwbw hbl hbs`k'b mc  
ukghn â: umscnß pumwbwkwk dhk`kv h l ckc  
'cgvf ]hj`k[hdh rcvcn fxn-fxnkvck  
hcn`gl hbghn.í

(صحيح مسلم، ج ٧، ص ١٢٢، سنن دارمي، ج ٢، ص ٤٣٢، مسند احمد، ج ٣،  
ص ١٤، ١٧، ٢٦، ٥٩، ج ٤، ص ٣٦٦، ٣٧١، ج ٥، ص ١٨٢، مستدرک حاكم،  
ج ٣، ص ١٠٩، ١٤٨، ٥٣٣، و....)

L CHGXL WG-L CVNCSCJEDK

(FXNXK {X {XGV)



L CHGXL WG-L CVNCSCJEDK

(FXNXK {X {XGV)

***Əllamə Seyyid Mürtəza Əsgəri***

***Mütərcim: M. Əlizadə***

***“Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ ” cəmiyyəti***



Kitabın adı: \_\_\_\_ "Məalimul-mədrəsəteyn" (1-ci cild)  
Müəllif: \_\_\_\_ Əllamə Seyyid Mürtəza Əsgəri  
Mütərcim: \_\_\_\_ M. Əlizadə  
Hazırlayan: \_\_\_\_ "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyətinin  
\_\_\_\_ tərcümə idarəsi, mədəni-maarif şöbəsi  
Sair həmkarlar: Redaktor: İftixar Məhəmmədov  
Kompüterə yığan: Rza Şükürbəyli  
Orijinal ilə uyğunlaşdırma və yekun baxış:  
İftixar Məhəmmədov  
Texniki redaktor və səhifələyən: M. Əlizadə  
Cildi hazırlayan: Hüseyn Səmədi  
Nəşr edən: \_\_\_\_ "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyəti  
Çap növbəsi: \_\_\_\_ Birinci  
Çap tarixi: \_\_\_\_ 2005  
Tiraj: \_\_\_\_ 3000  
Çapxana: \_\_\_\_ Leyla  
Elektron poçtu: [www.ahl-ul-bait.org](http://www.ahl-ul-bait.org)  
İSBN: \_\_\_\_ 964-

*Kitabın çap və sair hüquqları "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyətinə məxsusdur.*

Ünvan: İran, Tehran, poçt qutusu 14155-7368  
Telefon: (++9821) 8907289  
Faks: 8893061

## BISMILLAHIR-RƏHMANIR-RƏHİM

### *“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ☪ cəmiyyətindən*

Şübhəsiz, Əhli-Beyt ☪ məktəbinin nəfis inci xəzinələrindən olan və ardıcılarının vasitəsilə qorunub saxlanılan mədəni-maarif mirası islami maarifin müxtəlif yönlərində olan hərtərəfli bir məktəbdir. Bu məktəb qeyd olunan zülal çeşməsindən mümkün qədər su içməyə qabiliyyəti olan istə`dadlı insanları tərbiyə etmiş, İslam ümmətinə bu məktəbin yolunu gedən böyük alimlər və dahi şəxsiyyətlər təqdim etmişdir. Bu böyük alimlər də mütəmadi olaraq əsrlər boyu – həm islam cəmiyyətinin daxilində, həm də xaricində – müxtəlif ideologiyalar və məzhəblər müqabilində düzgün mövqe seçərək, onlara ən dolğun və qənaətbəxş cavablar vermişlər.

“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ☪ ” cəmiyyəti öhdəsinə aldığı bu məs`uliyətli vəzifəni yerinə yetirmək və İslamla müxalif olan müxtəlif fırqə və məzhəb başçıları tərəfindən risalət hüduqları və onun həqiqətlərinə qarşı yönələn ardıcıl hücumlar qarşısında onu müdafiə etmək üçün Əhli-Beyt (əleyhimus-salam) və bu haqq məktəbin davamçılarının üslubunu davam etdirmək əzmindədir.

Bu xüsusda Əhli-Beyt ☪ məktəbi alimlərinin dəyərli kitablarında mövcud olan təcrübələr öz növbəsində misilsizdir. Çünki onlar əql və bürhan əsasında olan dərin elmi üsullara arxalanır və boş təəssübkeşlikdən və nəfsani istəklərdən uzaqdır, onun dinləyiciləri mütəxəssis alimlər və mütəfəkkirlərdir ki, onlara sağlam fitrətin qəbul etdiyi və əqlin bəyəndiyi bir tərzdə xitab edir.

“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ☪ ” cəmiyyəti həqiqət aşiqləri üçün bu məktəb alimlərinin, yaxud bu şərəfli məktəbin ardıcılı olmaq və Allahın nə`mət verdiyi şəxslərin yazdığı müasir zəngin elm və mə`rifət xəzinəsini onlara təqdim etmək üçün yeni bir mərhələni qarşıya qoymuşdur. Bundan əlavə, qədim şiə alimlərinin də bu məqsədlə yazdığı nəfis əsərlər onların ixtiyarına verilir ki, haqq axtaranlar üçün bir hədiyyə olmuş, “Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ☪ ” cəmiyyətinin bəşərin əqli səviyyəsinin yüksələrək

təkamülə çatdığı, ruhun çox sürətlə inkişaf etdiyi bir əsrdə bütün dünyaya təqdim etmək istədiyi həqiqətlərə yol açılmış olsun.

Əziz oxuculardan xahiş edirik ki, özlərinin dəyərli tənqid və təkliflərini yazıb bizə göndərsinlər. Eləcə də, bütün alimləri, müəllif və mütərcimləri, mədəni-maarif mərkəzlərini dəvət edirik ki, əsl İslam mədəniyyətinin yayılmasında öz köməklərini əsirgəməsinlər.

Allah-taaladan aciz surətdə istəyirik ki, bu azacıq işi bizdən qəbul etsin, bizi Özünün xüsusi nəzərləri sayəsində və yer üzündəki höccətinin – İmam Məhdi ﷺ -in himayəsində qərar versin!

**Bu dəyərli kitabın müəllifi Həzrət Əllamə Seytyid Mürtəza Əskəri və onu Azərbaycan dilinə tərcümə edən M. Əlizadə cənablarına, eləcə də kitabın çapa hazırlanmasında zəhmət çəkən bütün şəxslərə, xüsusilə tərcümə bölməsinin əməkdaşlarına dərin minnətdarlığımızı bildiririk.**

*“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ ” cəmiyyətinin mədəni-maarif  
şöbəsi*



# FXSLXGGHPXN-NCPLHKXN-NCPXL

Pcvddc ugwkwn...

Lzmghl`bh, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk kcmcsx, XI hl x  
Csnc – pxvhdcj ]`nhy`kh!

Ed l ckl hyhl ! Fxbxl fw hbh[`r mc vcdcnxb cl cdxl xbx  
rcfwg ej!

﴿فَلَمَّا دَخَلُوا عَلَيْهِ قَالُوا يَا أَيُّهَا الْعَزِيزُ مَسَّنَا وَأَهْلَنَا الضُّرُّ وَجِئْنَا بِبِضَاعَةٍ مُزْجَاةٍ فَأَوْفِ لَنَا  
الْكَيْلَ وَتَصَدَّقْ عَلَيْنَا إِنَّ اللَّهَ يَجْزِي الْمُتَصَدِّقِينَ﴾

âEd Cbxb! Fbxb mc fxbxl hvhl ghn`l`b` ]cjxkgx; mc bxdhk finiliavin,  
hbh[`r scnl hdc xgc 'cgl xax;. Fxbxl \edl hkcgcnxl xbx jhl hl -;hl hg men, fxbc  
fcoaxa ej. } i k; x Hgghp fcoaxa evckgcnc l i; hthj menxn.ß

âDwsxtB swncsx, hdc.88

Ed ;cnxl , ed hgx[ckhf! Hgghp dhk`kvh fxbc acthcj ej ;x,  
'i khpghn`l`b` fhy`aghs`k, fxbxl zbil i bc mc fxbxl  
hvhl ghn`l`bh fha menck bxdhkghn` mc ]cjxkgx; gcnx hnhvhk  
rhgv`ns`k. } i k; x U, ncpl evckgcnxk ck ncpxl gxsxvxn.

Sxbxk oxvl cj]xgcnxkxbxk ck bcxtx Seddxv L i njcbh Cs'cnx

﴿فَبَشِّرْ عِبَادَ الَّذِينَ يَسْتَمِعُونَ الْقَوْلَ فَيَتَّبِعُونَ أَحْسَنَهُ أُولَئِكَ الَّذِينَ هَدَاهُمُ اللَّهُ وَأُولَئِكَ هُمْ

أُولُوا الْآلْبَابِ﴾

âFckvcgcnxl c l i qvc menæ u ;csgcnc ;x, szbgcnc rwghr hs`f ukghn`k ck  
dhoa`s`kh jhfe ughnghn. Ukghn pcl xk ;csgcnvxn ;x, Hgghp ukghn` pıvhdıj ejl xavxn  
mc ukghn crg shpxfgcnvxn.ß

âBil cnß swncsx, hdc... 17-18

Hgghp`k : xjh`f`k` mc |edycl fcn ; si kkcsxkx cob  
evcnc; ;e]l xa xbbcj mc acnctxl xbc dekvck fhaghdhr.

HGGHP-K : XJHF- MC |EDYCLFCN ; SI KKCSX  
LEPMCXXKVC MCPVCJ

Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpxl . Cgpc l vw gqghpx Ncfxg-hgcl xk, mcs-scghjw mcs-scghl w cgh Lwpc l cvxk mc hgpxj-jhpxnk mcs-scghl w cgh csphfxpxg-fcncncjxg- l cdhl xk.

Fxb l i scgl hkghn vhoxgvck coghrx l cscgcgc n fhncvc fxn-fxnl xbgc l i khrxacdc fhaghl `a`r, Xsghl vi al ckgcnx xsc ohnx[vck, fxbc l c/gwl ugl hdhk dughngh mcpvcjxl xbx u rcvcn jctnxc mc \cnh;ckvcgxdc vi ]hn ejl xa, cbcl cj mc azm;cjxl xbx bxtgcj l xagcn, pcjjh zbi l i bi l i vhtxc ejl c;vck fegc, h[xb rhgl `a`r, kcjx[cvc ukghn fxbc rhgxf `cgl xagcn. Phgfw;x, L i jchg Hgghp Rwn/hkvh fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَطِيعُوا اللَّهَ وَرَسُولَهُ وَلَا تَنَازَعُوا فَتَفْشَلُوا وَتَذْهَبَ رِيحُكُمْ وَاصْبِرُوا إِنَّ اللَّهَ مَعَ

الصَّابِرِينَ﴾

âHgghph mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh xjhcj evxk mc fxn-fxnxkxbgc ]c;xal cdxk, (c;s phgvh) bxtgcdcnxkxb, rinvncjxkxb mc azm;cjxkxb hnhvhk `evcn!B<sup>1</sup>

Vel cgx, dhoe` ughn ;x, fw `i kvc mc i l wl xddcjgc suknh; `pcn fxn `i kvc Hgghp`k : xjhfk`kh mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcsxkc rhd`vhr, zb mcpvcjxl xbx l cpb fw x;xsxkxk cshs`kvh rwnwff l zp; cl gcvc; . L i jchg Hgghp fwdwnwn...

﴿فَإِنْ تَنَازَعْتُمْ فِي شَيْءٍ فَرُدُّوهُ إِلَى اللَّهِ وَالرَّسُولِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ تُؤْمِنُونَ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ ذَلِكَ

خَيْرٌ وَأَحْسَنُ تَأْوِيلًا﴾

âC`cn pcn phks` fxn aedvc l i fhpxsckxb mc l i khrxackxb ugsh, (ukwk) pz;l i ki Hgghph mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh rhdjhn`k.B<sup>2</sup>

Fxb fw ;xjhfvh ughk sxgsxgcmx egl x fcpsgc nxl xbvcl cpb Hgghp`k : xjhfk`kh mc |edycl fcni -xk si kkcsxkc l i nh[xcj evxn, xojxghtg` l cscgcgc nvc l cpb Hgghp`k : xjhfk`k` mc

<sup>1</sup> âCkthgß swncsx, hdc.46

<sup>2</sup> âKxshß swncsx, hdc.59

|edycl fcn si kkesxkx zbi l i bc dug 'zsjcnck se]xnx; ;x,  
Hgghp`k xbkx xgc, mcpvcjx dekvck cgvc evc fxgc; .

l l xvmhnhl ;x, Xsghl hgxl gcnx mc l i jctc;;xngcnx vc fw  
l edvhkvh fxbxl gc ]xdxk-]xdxkc pcnc;cj evc[c;, zb kxrjedx-  
kcbcnvcnxkx, jckrxv mc jc;gxtgcnxkx fxbxl i ]i k dhb`f  
'zkvcnc[c; gcn.

Seddxv L i njcbh Cs'cnx

: XJHF-K I LWLX FCPSGCNX

1-XI hl cj mc oxghtcj l cscgcsxkvc x; x l c; jcf (oi gcth mc Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfgcnx) hnhs`kvh l zm[wv ughk xojxght`k l ckacdxkx hnhav`nhk mc vi b'i k pcgg duggn`k` fcdhk evck l i rcvvlx hjx fcpsgcna

2-Fw x; x l c; jcfvc xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcngxgc cghrcvhn ughk fcpsgcna mc ukghn`k cgvc evxgl c duggn`a fegc ; x, xsghl x pz; l - gcn mc crxvcgn l cpb fw l ckfcgcnxk cshs`kvh rwnwgwf l zp- ; cl gckxn mc hahy`vh; ` fea l i pi l l cscgcdc ahl xgvxn...

h) X; x l c; jcfxk ascphfcß mc aszpfjß phrr`kvh; ` kcbn-gcnxæ

f) X; x l c; jcfxk xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fhncsxkvc; x kcbngcnxæ fegc ; x, pcn x; xsx xsghl x acnxcj ]hjl hrvh mc Xsghl fhncsxkvc vi b'i k kcbnxdckxk dnhkl hs`kvh l i pi l dugvwn.

m) X; x l c; jcfxk xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnx fhncsxkvc; x kcbngcnxæ fw vh hahy`vh; `ghnvk xfhncjvxn...

(1) X; x l c; jcfxk Rwn/hkx-: cnxl fhncsxkvc; x ncmhdcjgcnxkxk hnhav`n`gl hs`æ

(2) X; x l c; jcfxk |edycl fcn j si kkcsx fhncsxkvc; x kcbngcnx, egc[c vc ocgxtgcnxk acosx nc/d cshs`kvh x[jxphv mc cl cg ejl cgcnxkxk xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnxkxk fxn pxsscscxkc ]emnxgl csxkxk ke[cgxdx, pcl ]xkxk ukwk Hgghp`k : xjh` mc |edycl fcn j si kkcsx xgc edkx scmxddevc jwjwgl hs`k`k scfcfx. Fw fcpsgc oi gcth (ocgxtgcna) l c; jcfxkvc xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnx mc ukw cgvc ejl cdxk duggn`k`k hnhav`n`gl hs` sukh ]hjl `a ugvwn.

4-Fc/bx acosgcnxk dhgk`b zb nc/dgcnxkc cl cg ejl csx mc acosx x[jxphv` kcjx[csxkvc |edycl fcn j si kkcsxkvc dnhkhk sh`l hghn`k, cdxkjxgcnxk bxvxxc XI hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k rxdhl ejl csxæ

5-Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k`k Φ Xsghl [cl xddcjxkvc XI hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k rxdhl `kvk sukh |edycl fcn j si kkc-

sxkx fxn vphph cmmcg; x mcbxddcjc rhdjhnl hyh, ukghn`k l c; jcfx-  
kxk Pcbncj Pi sedk ™ -`k mcthj`kvhk suknh |edycl fcn  
j si kkcsxkx dhdI hyh rhvxn ugl hs`kvhk xfhncjvxn. Fw  
fcps xgc xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnx mc ukw Cpgx-fedj Φ l c; -  
jcfxkvck cgvc ejl cdxk duggghn` phrr`kvh;` fcps sukh ]hj`n.  
Fwkwk sukh ]hjI hs` xgc vc fw x; x l c; jcfxk jctc; ; i ni kvc  
ughk jcpqyg swncjxkvc; x hnhav`nl hghn vh de; wkgha`n.

## L I RCVVXL HJX FCPSGCN

L i r c v v x l c

- \* Xsghl v x k x h n v [ g g h n ` h n h s ` k v h d h n h k h k x o j x g h t ` k f c / b x k c j x [ c g c n x æ
- \* H g g h p ` k f c / b x s x t c j g c n x m c u k v h ; ` x o j x g h t ` k l c k a c d x æ
- \* | e d y c l f c n j - x k s x t c j g c n x f h n c s x k v c u g h k x o j x g h t m c u k w k

l c k a c d x æ

- \* | e d y c l f c n g c n x Φ d h v e j l c ; f h n c s x k v c u g h k x o j x g h t æ
- \* | e d y c l f c n g c n x k Φ r c f x n g c n x k c j c m c s s i g e j l c ; f h n c s x k v c u g h k

x o j x g h t æ

- \* L e d d x j c h y g h l h r f h n c s x k v c u g h k x o j x g h t m c u k w k l c k a c d x æ
- \* R w n / h k h d c g c n x k x k j c t s x n m c j c / m x g x f h n c s x k v c u g h k x o j x g h t æ
- \* O i g h s c m c o h j x l c ( d e ; w k f c p s x ) .





## 1-L I RCVVXL C

L i jchg Hgghp Zbi ki k ni fwx l crhl `k`k jcgcfxkc 'znc xkshk i ]i k, ukwk pcdhj mc 'i bcnhk`k` ghb`l`k[h jckbxi evck, cfcvx schvcj mc rwnjwgawakh bcl hkcj menck, xkshkxddcjxkxk ;hl hgh ]hjl hs`k` sin/cjgckvxnck fxn vxkx acnxcj rhkwkw phg`kh shgl `a mc fw vxkx âXsgl ß hvghkv`nl `av`n.<sup>1</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh Zbi ki k dnhjv`y` fi ji k l cogwrhj` i ]i k ukghn`k txjncjxkc wdywk, pcl hpck' mc l i jckhsxf ughk fxn kxbhl rcnln menl xa, pcl xk kxbhl `k mhsxjcsxgc ukghn`k mi [wvghn`k` ;hl hg vcnc[csxkc ]hjv`nl `a, xgphl mc dhowv x[fhn mhsxjcsxgc ukghn` jc/dxk ugwkI wa dugh pxvhdcj ejl xavxn.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> L i jchg Hgghp âHgX-XI nhkß swncsxkxk 19-[w hdcxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿إِنَّ الدِّينَ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ الْإِسْلَامُ﴾

âHgghp dhk`kvh vxk dhgk`b Xsgl vlxvxn.ß Pcl xk swncxkxk 85-[x hdcxkvc xsc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَمَنْ يَبْتَغِ غَيْرَ الْإِسْلَامِ دِينًا فَلَنْ يُقْبَلَ مِنْهُ وَهُوَ فِي الْآخِرَةِ مِنَ الْخَاسِرِينَ﴾

âPcn ;cs Xsgl vkh fharh fxn vxkx se]cnsc, ukvhk pe] mhoj rcfwg ugwkI hdh[hrv`n.ß

<sup>2</sup> Hgghp-jhhgh fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿سَبِّحْ اسْمَ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى الَّذِي خَلَقَ فَسَوَّى وَالَّذِي قَدَّرَ فَهَدَى وَالَّذِي أَخْرَجَ الْمَرْعَى فَجَعَلَهُ غُثَاءً أَحْوَى﴾

âFzdi ; mc w[h Ncfffkxk hv`kh jcsfxp vez U ;cs ;x, (pcn fxn aedx) dnhjv` mc kcbi c 'c]xnvxæ U ;cs ;x, ckvhbc evnc; pxvhdcj ejvxæ U ;cs ;x, ujghrghn` mc zniaçnx ocgr ejvx, suknh ukghn` rwnvwvf rhnh (nck`g) rcnln menv.ß (âC/ghß swncsx, hdc...1-5)

﴿قَالَ رَبُّنَا الَّذِي أَعْطَى كُلَّ شَيْءٍ خَلْقَهُ ثُمَّ هَدَى﴾

âFxbxl |cnmcnvx`hn`l`b u : csvxn ;x, pcn fxn mhnjy`k oxgrcj epjxdh[ghn`k` ukh menl xa, suknh ukw pxvhdcj ejl xavxn.ß (âJhphß swncsx, hdc.50)

Dekc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَوْحَىٰ رَبُّكَ إِلَى النَّحْلِ أَنِ اتَّخِذِي مِنَ الْجِبَالِ بُيُوتًا﴾

HI l h xkshk kzmi kc 'cgvx; vc xsc, mcbxddcj jhl hl xgc fharh [i n ugl wavwn...xghpx \edycl fcnvcnvc pcn phks` fxnx zb i l l cjx hnhs`kvh ukwk i ]i k jc/dxk ugwk l wa mcbxtckx denxkc dejxnvx; vck suknh mcthj evcn;ck, l hg-vzmgcj mc ri vncj shpxfgcnx ukwk 'cjxnvxdx acnxcjx vcdxavxnx f jcpnxt evxn, zb kctshkx xsjc; gcnxgc l i ohgxt ughk pcn fxn aedx jcnsxkc ]emxnxn, dhowv phrr` 'xbgcvx, fwkvhk suknh vh jcpnxt ugwk l wa pcl xk acnxcjx Hgghph mc Ukwk \edycl fcnxkc hxv evxnvxgc n.<sup>1</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh Zbi ki k sukwk[w |edycl fcnxkx 'zkvcnl c; gc, jcpnxt ugwk l wa fc/bx l cnhsxl gcnx mc vxkx ai hngn` ri mmcvck shgv`rvhk suknh (cmmcgvc khbxg ejvxdx mc hv` i l wl x ac; xgvc Xsghl ughk) vxkxkx fxn vphph dekxgcavxnl xavxn... Ohjcl i g-ckfxdh Pcbncj L i pcl l cv i -x Rwn/hkgh fxngx; vc 'zkvcnl xa, Xsghl `k cshs \nxksx\gcnxkx – crxvc mc pz; l gcnxkx l zp; cl hdcgcncv khbxg ejl xa, ukwk acnpxkx mc cjnhtg`xbhp`k` vh hdn[h ac; xgvc Zb |edycl fcnxkc mcpd ejl xavxn ; x, u pcbncj

---

âSckxk |cnmcnv`hn`k fhg hn`s`kh fegc mcpd ejv... vhyghnvhk, hyh[ghnvhk mc dwohn` rhgv`n`ghk vhnfcjsjgcncvck (jhmhngghnvhk) zbik i ]i k em se]...â (âKcpğß swncsx, hdc.68.)  
Dekc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَالشَّمْسُ وَالْقَمَرُ وَالنُّجُومُ مُسَخَّرَاتٌ بِأَمْرِهِ﴾

â`ikca, hd mc wgvwbghn Ukwk cl nxkc l i jxvnxgc n.â (âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.54)

<sup>1</sup> L i jchg Hgghp fwdwnwn...

﴿وَإِنَّ مِنْهُمْ لَفَرِيقًا يَلُؤْنَ أَلْسِنَتَهُم بِالْكِتَابِ لِتَحْسَبُوهُ مِنَ الْكِتَابِ وَمَا هُوَ مِنَ الْكِتَابِ وَيَقُولُونَ هُوَ مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ وَمَا هُوَ مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ وَيَقُولُونَ عَلَى اللَّهِ الْكَذِبَ وَهُمْ يَعْلَمُونَ﴾

âUkghnvhk fxn rnw\w zb vggcnxkx Hgghp`k : xjhfk`k isgwfw xgc egc t`nghv`nv`ghn ; x, ([hl hhj) ukwk âHgghp`k : xjhfb ugvywkw jcscmmi n ejsxkjc n, phgf w;x u, Hgghp`k : xjhfkvhk vedigvx. Mc vedinvxgc n ; x, âfw, Hgghp jcnctxkvckvxn!ß, phgf w;x Hgghp jcnctxkvck vedigvx. Ukghn Hgghph, fixc-fixc dhghk kxsfcjx meninvxgc n.â (âHgx-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.78.)

Dekc fwdwnwgvwn...

﴿أَفَتَطْمَعُونَ أَنْ يُؤْمِنُوا لَكُمْ وَقَدْ كَانَ فَرِيقٌ مِّنْهُمْ يَسْمَعُونَ كَلَامَ اللَّهِ ثُمَّ يَحَرِّفُونَهُ مِنْ بَعْدِ مَا عَقَلُوهُ وَهُمْ يَعْلَمُونَ﴾

âDuosh ukghn`k sabc xl hk 'cjxnc[c; gcnxkx wl wnskwkb?! Phgf w;x ukghnvhk fxn rnw\w Hgghp`k : cghl `k` eavxn, vcn; evxf fhah viavi; vck suknh fixc-fixc jcpnxt evxnvxgc n.â (âFcrncnß swncsx, hdc.75)

Egc[c vc hahy`vh;` hdcgcnc l i nh[cj evc fxncnsxkxb... âFcrncnß swncsx, hdc.42, 146, 159, 174â âHgx-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.187, âKxshß swncsx, hdc.46, âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.13, 15, 41, 59, 61

Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc khbxg ughkghn` xkshkghn i ]i k (cjhntg` ac; xgvc, jctsxghj` xgc) fcdhk mc jctsxn ejsxk.<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcnx C; ncl i vc Xsghl acnxcjxkx, zbi ki k fi ji k xk[cgx; gcnxgc fxngx; vc, u [i l gcvck... khl hb mc ukwk r`g`kl h rhdvhs` mc nc; cjgcnxkxk shd`æ unw[ mc ukwk acnjgcnxæ pc[[, jcmht, ukwk cmmcgx, ho`n` mc s. ; xl x mh[xf, l i sjcpcf mc phnhl pz; l gcnx l i scgl hkghnh zdncvxf xbhp ejvx. L i scgl hkghn`k pcbncj |edycl fcnvck cob evxf zdncvxf; gcnx fw jc/gxl gcn vc âacnxt Kcfcmx pcvxs gcnxß i kmhk` xgc jhk`kv`. L i jchg Hgghp pcl vc |edycl fcnx C; ncl i -xk sxncsxkx (sxnc – hvcj-ck/ckc, nctjhn mc vhmnhk`a, l i j.) Xsghl `k jc[cssi l ugwkl wa sxl mugw rcnbn menvx mc xkshkghn`, ukh jhfe ugl hyh vc/mcj evcnc; fwdwnvw...

﴿لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةٌ حَسَنَةٌ﴾

âPcrrcjck, Hgghp`k Ncswgwkvh sxbxk i ]ik 'zbcg mc fcdckxgl xa kil wkcgcn mhnv`n.<sup>2</sup>

|edycl fcnx C; ncl i -vck kcrg ugwkhk pcvxs gcnx u Pcbncjxk sxncsxkx l c[l wsw Xsghl acnxcjxkvc âsi kkcß hvghkv`n`g`n. Hgghp-jhhgh fxbc cl n ejl xavxn ; x, u pcbncjxk si kkcscxkc jhfe ughr.<sup>3</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh Xsghl ` l cpb Rwn/hk mc |edycl fcn si kkcscx mhsjcsxgc jhl hl ghd`f ; hl xg ac; xgvc fxbc ]hjv`nl `av`n. Hgghp`k Ncswgw vh zb mcthj`kvhk cmmcg i l l cjxkc ocfcn menl xa, ukghn` runowvnhnr fwdwnl wavwn...

âCmmcg; x i l l cjgcnvc fha menckgc edkxgc fw i l l cjvc vc fha menc[c; vxn. C`cn cmmcg; x i l l cjgcnvck pcn phks` fxn acos ; cnjck; cgckxk dwmhs`kh 'xnl xasc,

<sup>1</sup> Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿أَفَتَطْمَعُونَ أَنْ يُؤْمِنُوا لَكُمْ وَقَدْ كَانَ فَرِيقٌ مِّنْهُمْ يَسْمَعُونَ كَلَامَ اللَّهِ ثُمَّ يُحَرِّفُونَهُ مِنْ بَعْدِ مَا عَقَلُوا وَهُمْ

يَعْلَمُونَ﴾

âMc Fxb bx;nx (Rwn/hk`) sckc khbxg ejvx; ; x, xkshkghnh khbxg ughkghn` ukghn i ]ik fcdhk evcsck, fcg;c jctc; ; in evcgcn.B (âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.44)

<sup>2</sup> âCpbhfb swncsx, hdc.21

<sup>3</sup> Hgghp-jhhgh dwohn`vh redv ugwkhk hdcvc fxbc cl n evxn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk sxncsxkc jhfe ughr. âPcanß swncsxkx 7-[x hdsxkvc vc fxbc tcnl hk menxn ; x, |edycl fcnxk pcvxsxkc cl cg evc; . Si kkc vc egc fw x; xsxkx l c[l wswkvhk xfhncl vxn.

fw i l l cjvck vc fxn ;cs pcl xk [i n ;cnjck;cgckxk dwmhs`kvh ugh[hrv`n.B<sup>1</sup>

Fw, Xsghl vh shghl hj, l zp;cl mc jcpnxtsxb rhghk Rwn/hkx-  
: cnxl vxn. } i k; x, Hgghp-jhhgh ukw pcn kzm jcpnxtvck, vcdxa-  
vxnxgl c; vck runwdh[hy`kh bcl hkcj mencnc; fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿إِنَّا نَحْنُ نَزَّلْنَا الذِّكْرَ وَإِنَّا لَهُ لَحَافِظُونَ﴾

âPcrxrcjck, Fxb Rwn/hk` khbxq ejvx; mc Fxb vc ukh ;eax;]xdx;.B<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn hdcvc fwdwnwgnw...

﴿لَا يَأْتِيهِ الْبَاطِلُ مِنْ بَيْنِ يَدَيْهِ وَلَا مِنْ خَلْفِهِ﴾

âFhjxq ukh kc zkvck, kc vc hnohvhk (pe] fxn jcnctvck) dug jh`h fxgl cb.B<sup>3</sup>

HI l h ]uogw ncmhdcjgcnxk mhsxjcsxgc fxbc 'cgxf ]hjnk sxnc,  
pcvxs mc si kkcdc 'cgvx; vc xsc, Hgghp-jhhgh ukw jcpnxtgcnvck  
hl hkvh shoghl hl `av`n. Fegc ; x, fi ji k l i scgl hkghn`k ; xjh f-  
ghn`kvh l zm[wv ughk Kcfcmx ncmhdcjgcnx hnhs`kvh; ` xojxghtghn  
mc ukghn`k fc/bxgcnxkxk vx' cngcnxgc bxvvxddcj jca; xg ejl csx uk-  
ghnvh jcpnxtxk l zm[wv ugl hs`kvhk pe; hdcj evxn. Pcjjh acnxt

<sup>1</sup> Fw fhncvc kerg ugwkl wa pcvxsgcnx fw l i rcvvl hjx fcpsxk 5-[x  
fzgi l i kvc, egc[c vc âDi b cgx shojh scphfcß hvq` ; xjh f`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc  
redv ejl xax; . Fw pcvxsgc cghrcvhn hahy`vh; ` l ckfcgcnc l i nh[xcj evc  
fxgcnxkxb...

h) â: cl hgww-vxkß (Aedo Scvwr), scp.476â âFxpnhwg-ckmhnb, 8-[x [xgv, scp.3â  
âL c[l ci g-fcdhkß mc âRhbxnb jctsnx, âGcjc; cfwkkc jcfcrck ck jcfcrxkß  
hdcsxkxk jctsnxkvcâ

f) âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âCkfxdhß ; xjh f`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.171, 3-[i pcvxs, âCg-  
e/jxshl w fxg-; xjhfx mcs-si kkcdß ; xjh f`, 4-[i [xgv, scp.176, pcvxs 1 mc 2â  
âTcjpi g-Fhnx acnpw Scpxpx Fwohnxß, 17-[x [xgv, scp.63-64

m) Ki mcmxkxk âScpxpx L i sgi l ßc dhhv`y` acnp, 16-[` [xgv, scp.219, egl  
fzgi csx,

r) âScpxpx Jxnl xbxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.27-28, 1-[x [xgv, scp.109

y) âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, pcvxs 3994

v) âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsb, pcvxs 1346 mc 2178.

e) âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.327, 368, 450, 511, 527 mc 3-[i [xgv,  
scp.84, 94, 4-[i [xgv, scp.125, 5-[x [xgv, scp.218 mc 340

c) âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.261, Jcfcnhkxvck kergck.

q) â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 11-[x [xgv, scp.123, Jcfcnhkxkxk âCg-Umscjß mc  
Ph; xl xk âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh fghn`kvhk kergck.

b) âJctsnx Si dwjxßvc mc âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh f`kvh âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsxkxk  
âgh jc; wkw ; cggcbkxk...ß hdcsxkxk jctsnxkvc.

<sup>2</sup> âPx[nß swncsx, hdc.9

<sup>3</sup> âTwssxgcjß swncsx, hdc.42

pcvxsgcnvc; x xojxght egc fxn pcvvc ]hjl `av`n ; x, oi gcth  
 l c; jcfxkxk fc/bx hgxl gcnxkx fw fhncvc l i cddck ]hnc dugghn`  
 tx; xngcal cdc mc âJc/mxgw l i ojcgctxg-pcvxsß,<sup>1</sup> âFcdhkw l wa; xgxg-  
 pcvxsß,<sup>2</sup> âFcdhkw l wa; xghjxg-hshnß<sup>3</sup> mc s. ; xl x l i ojcgxt ; xjhfgghn  
 dhbl hyh mhvhn ejl xavxn.

Pcvxsgcnvc l zm[wv ughk l cpb pcl xk xojxghtghnh 'znc  
 l i scgl hkghn fi j i k vzmngcnvc Rwn/hk`k csg l c/kh mc  
 l ctpwl wkw vi b' i k ac; xgvc fhah vi al c; vc xojxghth,  
 \cnh; ckvcgxdc vi ]hn ugl wagh. Oi swsxc, fwkw vh kcbenc hghr  
 ; x, ukghn l i ojcgxt [cl xddcjgcnvc dhahl `a, hdn`-hdn` vxk mc  
 nc/d shpxfgcnxgc i ksxddcjvc ugl wagh. Fwkghn`k phl `s` vh  
 ukghn`k Xsghl fhncsxkvc; x kcbngcnxkvc xojxght dhnkh l hs`kh  
 scfcf ugl wa, fc/bxgcnxkx mhvhn ejl xavxn ; x, acnxt Rwn/hk hdc-  
 gcnx mc scpxp Kcfcmx pcvxsgcnxkx zbgcnxkxk Xsghl fhncsxkvc; x  
 cgvc ejvx; gcnx acosx ]`ohn`aghn` xgc wdywkghav`ns`kghn, zbgcnxkxk  
 vcn; evxf fhah vi avi ; gcnx pcn fxn aedx rcjx mc xk; hnevxml cb  
 peshf ejsxkgcn, fharhghn`k`k nc/dgcnxkc l cpcg rudl hd`f fxn-  
 fxnxkx jc; txn ejsxkgcn (; htxn hvghkv`ns`kghn).

Fw redv ugwkhhkghn`k phl `s` vhoxgvc fha menck xojxght  
 hl xggcnx vxv ; x, vhoxgx l wbvwnghn`k mhsxjcsxgc x[nh evxgck  
 ohnx[x hl xggcn vc ukghnh cghmc evxgx...

#### OHNX{X JCONXFHJ}-G-R HLXGGCNX

Xsghl x l ckfcgcnvc (pcvxs, sxnc, jctsnx mc shxn ; xl x ; xjhfg-  
 ghnvh) jcpnxt mc jconxfhj hl xggcnxkvck fc/bxgcnx ; xl x, hahy`vh; `  
 acnp xgc ohnx[x jconxfhj]`g`r hl xggcnxkx redv ejl x; ughn...

1-: xjhfg cpgxkxk (l csxpx mc dcpwvxgcnxk) ocfc n mc ncmhdcj-  
 gcnxkxk xsghl x jcprrhj l ckfcgcnxkc ki twb ejl csxæ Fwkghn  
 : c/fi g-cpfhn, Jcl xl Vhnx mc shxn ; xl xgcnxk mhsxjcsxgc  
 dh`d`gl `av`n.

2-Xfkx Cfxg-Um[h, Sedt xfkx Zl cn mc shxn ; xl x vxksxb  
 hvhl ghn`k jcnctxkvck dhh`g`f dh`d`ghk ncmhdcj mc ocfcngcn vc

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx Ri jedfc Cfvi gghp xfkx L i sgi l i k ; xjhfg`v`n. (U, 280, dhowv 276-  
 [ ` xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn. )

<sup>2</sup> Xfkx Twnc; L cpcl l cv xfkx Pcsck, (406-[ ` xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn).

<sup>3</sup> Cfw { c/ten Cpl cv xfkx L cpcl l cv Cbwvx (Jcphmx hv` xgc l capwnvwn  
 mc 331, dhowv 333-[i xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn)

Xsghl l ckfcgcnxkc ki twb ejl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

3-Suk vzmngcnvc; x acnrai khsghn`k jzncjvxdx jconxfhj]`g`r xagcnxæ Fegc ; x, xsjxsl hn]` vzmgcjgcnxk l i scgl hk zg; cgcnxkc scgxf di ni agcnx jca; xg ejvx; gcnx, ]uo vhy`v[` mc jcpgi ; cgx sxghpgghngh Xsghl hgcl x xgc rhna`ghav`rghn` bhl hk l csxpx mc dcpwvx hgxl gcnx āacnrai khsß hv` xgc fxn mcbxtc ughnhr zpvc-gcnxkc hgl `av`ghn ; x, xsghl x l ckfcgcnvc l zm[wv ughk bcxt [cpcjgcnx ]uo vcrxrgx; gc zdnckxf ukghn`k mhsxjcsxgc Xsghl gh l i fhxnbcd rhgos`kghn. Ukghn vh dunwgl hvhk ]hg`ahnhr xsghl x l ckfcgcn i ]i k vcrxr l i kvcnx[hjghn phb`nghd`f `zbcg ac; xgvc ]h\` ejvxgc, ukghn`k mhsxjcsxgc fijik xsghl x l ckfcgcnxk l zpjc mhs`kh mhrxt ugvwghn. Jcvnx[gc ; xjhfgghn`k hnhs`kvhk Xsghl `k ]zpncsxkx ]xn; xk rcgl c menck fc/bx shojh mc rukvhl h pcvxsgcnx – āNcmhkrß ctshkcsx mc shxn ; xl x aedgcnx – jh\`v`ghn. Ukghn cgvc ejvx; gcnx bcxt [cpcjgcnx jhl deks i sgwfvh, hmhl [hl hhj`k fcdckvxdx jcnbvc āVhxcji g-l chnxtx xsghl xddcß (xsghl x l hhnxt eksx; gu`evxdhs`), āL cpcl l cv \edycl fcn mc sxdhscj]xß mc shxn ; xjhfgghnvh fxn denc d`yv`ghn.<sup>2</sup>

Fwkvhk vh jcpgi ; cgxsx xsjxsl hn]` ri vncjgcnxk l c; ngx sxdh-scjgcnx mc hgvhv[` jcvfxngcnx xv. Ukghn Xsghl gh l i fhxnbcd h\`hl hr i ]i k dengx cphgxvck jcfgyhj]`ghn mc l c/bwkghn phb`nghd`n, ukghn` zbgcnxkx fcdckvxdx āl cvckxddcjßgc sxghp-ghkv`n`f Xsghl zg; cgcnxkc `zkcvcnvnvgcn. Vhph suknh ukghn`, dengx cphgx hnhs`kvh jcfgy evcnc; ukghn` āXsghl xsghphj]`ghn`ß, āXsghl bxdhg`ghn`ß, ā[cl xddcjxk rhfhrvh `evckgcnxß ; xl x jcrvxl evxnvvgcn. Fwkghn vh zb cnfhfgghn`k`k tx; xngcnxkx Xsghl zg; cgcnxkvc l i ojcgxt mhsxjcgcnge, [i nfc[i n hv mc i kmhkgghngh dhdl hyh fhaghd`nv`ghn. Ukghn`k dejxn l cgcnxkvck ughk sen seddxv Cpl cv Pxkvxsjhk`k āCgxrnß acpcnxkvc Xsghl

<sup>1</sup> : xjhfgcpgxkxk (l csxpx mc dcpwvxgcnxk) xsghl x jcprrhj l ckfcgcnxkc ke[c ki twb ejl cgcnxkx mc vxksxbgcnxk Xsghl hgcl xkvc h\`hmv`rghn` jconxfhj]`g`r tchgxddcjgcnxkx āXl hl ghn`k vxkxk vxn]cgvxgl csxkvc; x nugwß fzgl csxkvc hnhav`n l `a`r. Acnrai khsghn`k h\`hmv`y` jconxfhj]`g`rghn` vh pcl xk ; xjhfg`k 3-4-[i tcsxggcnxkvc redv ejl xax; . Pcl ]xkxk, āDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ; xjhfg`kvh mc āCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjhfg`k`k l i rcvvl c fcpsgcnxkvc Sedt xfkx Zl cnxk h\`hmv`y` jconxfhj]` tchgxddcjgcnx oi swsx ac; xgvc fcdhk ejl xax; .

<sup>2</sup> Pcn fxn csnvc acnrai khsghnvhk ]uo hb rxsl x, zbi vc ]uo khvxn phghnvh phrr`k rhna`s`kvh jcsxgl ugvnwvghn.

wkxmensxjeix h]l`a, Cpl cv Gi jtx ácsnxk wsjhv`ß hv` xgc jhk`kl`a, Rhsxl Cl xk Lxsnvc árhv`k pi rwrghn`k`k l i-vhtxc]xsxß i kmhk` xgc l capwngghal`av`. Xnhrvh, Xnhkvh mc shxn ; xl x Xsghl zg; cgcnxkvc ukghn`k dejxnvxdx fxn ]uoghñ`k`k hv`k` ]c; l c; ughn.<sup>1</sup>

}uo jcfxx phgv`n ; x, fwkgghgh csg xsghl x jctc; ; i n mc l cvc-kxddcjxk runwdw[wghn` hnhs`kvh vhl ]c; xal cgcñ fha menl cgx vxv, xsjxsl hn]`ghn vh zb l wlvwngghn`kh fh[hñv`rghn` rcvñ ; zl c; evxnvxcñ.

Ukghn`k phg-phb`nvh Xsghl h rhna` cgv c jwjvwrghn` mc fw vxkgc l i fhñxhc h`hnv`rghn` ck xjx sxghp mc ck `i [gi mhsxjc ukghn`k jcnctxkvck áXsghl ai khsgr`ß, áXsghl jhñoxß, áxsghl x acosddcjgcñ fhñcsxkvcb mc s. hvghgh ]h\ ejvxngxck ; xjhñ mc l crhgccñvñ. Fegc ; x, sen Seddxv Cpl cv Rwn/hk` zb vi ai k[csx xgc jctsn evñ, {in[x Bedvhk Xsghl fhñcsxkv vhsjhkgghñ szdgcñ mc s... Fwkgghn`k zbgcñxkxk, egc[c vc ukghn`k acñrai khs cñfhfghn`k`k ck i l vc sc/dgcñ mhpñv fxñ pcvctxk `en]c; gcal csxvñ. Ukghñvhk fxñ fegc vel xavñ... áVxk, vxk r`g`k[`kvhk fharh fxñ aedgc zgvi ni gc fxgl cblß

Ukghñ pcl xk pcvctxk pcdhjh ; e]l csx dugwkvh Rwn/hk jctsnx dñb`n, acñxt Kcfcmx pcvxsgcñ xbhñ mc acñp evñ, |edycl fcñ-C; ncl ; -xk mc l c/swl xl hl gñn`k Æ sxñcsxkx rcgcl c hg`n mc zb l c; ngx tchgxddcjgcñ cshs`kvh ]hg`-a`nv`ghñ ; x, xl hl gñn`k redf egl xkc h`hp ugl hghn`k` l i cddck dughghgh xk; hn evcñ; phl `s`k` fcacñ jcfxcjxkxk fxñ [xgmcsx ; xl x rcgcl c mensxkgcñ. Sukñh vh ; xkhdcgx mc l i cl l hg` xah-

<sup>1</sup> Fwkgghñ mc fw ; xl x di bgcñgc shñ acosgcñ l cktwn rcñf l cvckxddcjxkxk jcfgyhj]`ghn` ugl hrgh Xsghl `k `zbcg hvñ-ck/ckgcñxkx l cpm evñ, phfegc Xsghl zg; cgcñxkvc fw vxkxk l i jcnccrx rhdvñ-rhkwwghn` mc pz; l gcñxgc l i ohgxcj vghyghñ dhñhv`nv`ghñ. Fxb cmmcggcñ ukghn`k rcñfxk shojh mc xkshkxddcj c bxvv jctc; ; i ni ki epjxmñ evck kcanxddcgcñxkvck fc/bxgcñxk jckrxv ejl xavx; . Fw jckrxv redvgcñxk fxñxk[x pxsscsxkx Xnhrvh ]h\ ejvxñv; , gh; xk sukñghñ ; xjhñ`k ]h\ mc kcanx xgc l caywg ughk jca; xghjghñ fw xavck fudwk rh]`ñjv`ghñ. Gxmhk`k Lhñwx pz; wl cñx vc pcl xk vzmñvc ; xjhñ`k fw zg; cdc vhoxg ugl hs`k`k rhna`s`k` hgñ, kcñx[cvc rhghk pxsscgcñ ]h\ evc fxgl cvx; . Phg-phb`nvh fw l zmbw cññt`kvh ck dhóa` ; xjhñ Cfvi nncpl hk Pcsck Pckfc; c Ledvhkxkxk dhbv`y` áC/vhwg-Xsghl ß ; xjhñ`k`k sxgsxgc kcanx ughk áC[kxpcji g-l c; nxs-scghscßvñ ; x, cgfcjñc, ukvñ l i cddck xñhvghñ vh mñhv`n.

ncgcngc, fc/bck vc jhl ha; hn ac; xgvc, pe] fxn aedvck ]c; xk-  
l cvck fegc jcgrxk ejl c; xsjcdxngcn ; x, \edycl fcngcnvck pcn  
fxnxkxk vxkxkvc, dhowv Xsghl vxkxkvc pcn fxn aed zb csn mc  
bcl hkcsxkc l i jckhsxf mc fcacnxddcjxk oednxkc ughnhr xk; xaht  
evxn. Ukghn áfxb fw 'i k Xsghl vxkxkxk dekxgcavxnxgl csxkc,  
ukwk pz; l mc 'zsjcnxagcnxkvc l i cddck xsghphjghn h\hn`gl h-  
s`kh epjxdh[g`d`rß - vedcnc; Xsghl vxkxkxk cshs`k` vcdxacnc;  
zb jcscmmi ngcnxkc 'znc ukw fw bhl hk, ukwk acnhxj mc  
jcgcfgcx xgc wdywkghav`nl hr xsjcdxngcn.

Ukghn, jc/sxn mc kcjx[cgcx [hl hhj`k ]uowkvhk 'xbgxk rhghk  
fegc fxn sxghpgh Xsghl mc l i scgl hkghn i ]i k fc/bx l wbvwn  
sxdhscj]xgcnvck vc hnj`r bxdhkg`v`nghn. Ukghn fxbxl zg; cgcncv  
; htn scgxf di ni a]i gcnxkxk oednxkc xagcdcnc; ukghn` Xsghl  
zg; cgcnxkvc ph; xl ejl xagcn. } i k; x fwkghn Xsghl `k csqx xgc  
xveuguqx l i phnxfcdc rhgol `a, vxkx pcrxrcjgcx fc/bck  
âxsghl ai khsgrß, fc/bck vc âxk; xaht ejl c; vc ughk, jc/sxn rcfwg  
evck, bcl hkckxk [hmf`k` vedck Xsghl ß hv` xgc jcpnxt evxngcn.

Redv ugwkhhkghn`k l c[l wswkvhk hdv`k ugwn ; x, fw`i k; i  
l i scgl hkghn pcrxrx Xsghl jetc; ; i ni kc rhna` xsjxrhl cjgck-  
vxnxgck fw rcvcn xveuguqx jcbdxrgcnvck suknh l i ojcgxt xsghl x  
txnrcgcncv l zm[wv ughk kcbcnxddcgcx vcnphg zdnckxf,  
hnhav`nl hr mc pcrxrx Xsghl `k fwkghnvhk phks` ugvywkw  
zdnckl c; l cscgcsxkc ; cs; xk epjxdh[ vwdwnghn. Phgfw; x, fc/bx  
redncjgx l i scgl hkghn fw ; xl x l cscgcgcnc `nxal c; xsjcl xn,  
l i scgl hkghn`k mcpvcjxkxk runwkwf` shoghk`gl hs` i ]i k  
fi ji k fwkghn`k rhna`s`kvh si ; wj ejl cdx vhph l i khsxf peshf  
evxngcn. Hl l h l ck fxgl xncl æ`zncsck, fegc fxn aed l i l ; i k  
ugh fxgc, dh duo?! Phgfw; x egc fxbxl zb hnhl `bv h e/jxrhv  
i swgghn`k` fi ji k l i scgl hkghn` ; htn ejl c; cshs`kvh rwnhk  
ocmhnx[gc mhnv`n. Ukghn dhgk`b zbgcnxkx l i scgl hk peshf  
evxn, zbgcnxkvck fharh phl `k` l i anx; shd`n, ocgxtcgcncvck Us-  
l hk mc Xl hl Cgxvck, phfegc l z/l xkgcnxk hkhs` Hdxacvck,  
Jcgpc, Bi fedn, L i hmxdc, Cl n Hs mc ukghn`k phmhvhngghn`k`k  
phl `s`kvhk febhng`r evxn, ukghn` mc fi ji k l i scgl hkghn`  
gc/kcjcgcxngcn!

Fegc aed ke[c l i l ; i k ugh fxgc, phgfw; x l i scgl hkghn`k  
fc/bxgcx | edycl fcx-C; ncl j -xk rcfnxkx, pcl ]xkxk  
l i scgl hkghn`k xl hl ghn`k`k rcfxngcnxkx bxdhncj mc jcfcni ;



ejl cdc, ukghnvhk acthcj xsjcl cdc, ukghnh jmcssi g evcnc;  
 Hgghp vcn'hp`kh dho`kghal hyh nwpck haxrvxngcn! Pcl xk phgvh  
 fc/bxgcnx vc fijik fw xagcnx Hgghph rhna`axn;, Xsghl vkh  
 ]`ol hr, phnhi mc fxv/cj peshf evxngcn! Fwkh `znc vc fegc  
 xvvh evxngcn ;x, l i scgl hkghn 3-[i px[nx csnxkvck fhaghdnhr  
 xkvx;x vzmnc rcvnc l i anx; vxngcn. Ukghn zb crxvcgcnx xgc vi b  
 'cgl cvxdxkc 'znc l i scgl hkghn`k âPcnhß l hyhnh`k`k dugw  
 i bcnxkvc mc shxn ;xl x dengcnvc vi bcgvcnc; jcfenni ; ejvx; gcnx  
 l cs[xvvcnx vhy`jl`aghn. Pcl ]xkxk, l i scgl hkghn`k xl hl ghn`  
 k`k âFcrxßvc;x rcfxngcnxkx, l z/l xkgcnxk hkhs`k`k, |edycl fcn  
 j -xk cl xsxkxk mc zmghvghn`k`k, scphfcgcnxk mc âl pi vß  
 acpxvcgcnxkxk phl`s`k`k rcfxngcnxkx sz; i f mxnhk ejl xagcn!!!

Phgfw;x, fw xagcnx dcpwvxcnc, Jzmnjh mc ukghn`k  
 ;xgscgcnxkca l csxpxgcnc, Xk[xgc mc ukghn`k ;xgscgcnxkc rhna`ncmh  
 'znl cl xagcn. Ukghnvh scgxfgcnxk (oh]ghn`k), Xshk`k ped; cgxkxk,  
 dhowv Lcndcl xk ac; xggcnxkxk l zm[wv ugvwyw, ha; hn ac; xgvc -  
 kc/wbw fxgghp! - âXsh fxbxl \cnmcnvx`hn`l`bv`nß, âHgghp, fw i ]  
 kctcnvck fxnxvnß vevx; gcnx phgvh ukghnh pe] mhoj âsxb  
 l i anx; sxkxß - vel xngcn!

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxk, pcl ]xkxk ukghn`k uoahn`ughk shxn  
 l cscgcgc l i scgl hk fxn tcnvxk acosx mc [i b/x l cscgcxs, dc/kx  
 khl hlvh Cpgx-fedj Φ l cbpcfz mc l hgx; xgc ;xl x cggcnx  
 h]`r shoghl hr, dhowv pckctx mc pckfcgx l cbpcfzkvc cggcnx  
 fhyghl hræ egc[c vc vcsjcl hb hghk bhl hk hdhrgn`dwl hr,  
 duosh ukwk i sjikc l csp ]c;l c; ;xl x l cscgcgcncvck vc  
 vedxgvxn ;x, l i scgl hk fxn acos ukwk i ]ik si fwj ugwk l wa  
 duggngh - x[jxphv, dhowv jcrxv cshs`kvh - cl cg ejxk, vx`cn  
 fxn l i scgl hk vh zbi i ]ik si fwjh dejl csxkx cshs jwjnhhr  
 ukwk l cbpcfzk l i ohgxt ughk dugg cl cg ejl xa, edkx phgvh  
 pcn x; xsx vc mhpxv Xsghl [cl xddcxkvc rhna`g`rg` hkghal h  
 acnhjxkvc dhahl`a ugswkghn. C; sxkc, fw ;xl x xagcn Xsghl  
 [cl xddcxkxk cshs mc l i pi l xagcnxkvckvx.

Redv ugwkxk l cscgcgc rednx-vxkx mc sxdhsx rcbxddcgcnvck  
 vc vedxgvxn ;x, l i scgl hkghn`k mcpvcjxkxk runwkxf shoghk-  
 l hs`khl xkc ukh 'zb dwl wf`i bcjic`ejl c; l i l ; i k ugswkæ  
 ]ik;x fc/bx pz;wl cjgc âMc [hc vznwg-l c[wsß mc s. ;xl x  
 ;xjhfgn`ha;hn mc l cotx hvghngh l hgxddcgavxnf ukghnvkh  
 l xgdukgngh ki soc ]h\ evxn mc l i scgl hkghn`k fzdi ; fxn

rnw\wkw Xsghl vxkxkvck ]'ol `a peshf evxngcn. Ukghn zbgcnx-  
 kxk l cktwn l cnhl mc l crscvgnxkx dhdl hr i ]i k l xgdhvn-  
 ghng h\wg ocn[gcdxn, pcn denvc l cs[xv mc l cvncsc vi bcgvxn ; x,  
 âUkghnvhk fharh fi ji k l i scgl hkghn l i anx; vxngcn!ß – ve-  
 sxkgcn. Pcl ]xkxk, vi kdhk`k l i ojcgxt dengcnxkc l xkgcngc l i -  
 fcggy 'zkvcnngcn ; x, âmhpxv fxn l cn; cbxddcjß xveugu'xdhs`k`  
 dhds`kghn. Fwkghn`k phl `s` vh s`nt ac; xgvc sxdhsx mc rednx-vxkx  
 l crscvgnxc denxkc dejxnxgn.

Fw ;xl x xagcn xsjxsl hn]`ghn`k l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh  
 jctnxrc shgl hr l crscvx xgc x[hv ejvxdx egc l cscgcgnvck vc  
 vedxgvxn ; x, ukwk rhna`s`kvh si ; wj ejl c; dhoad` ugswkæ c; sxkc  
 fwkghn egc phvxscgcnvxn ; x, xl hl Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgkx vzm-  
 ni kvc (240-[` p.r xgxkvc mcthj evxf), Aedo xfkx Jedl xddckxk  
 (728-[x p.r xgxkvc mcthj evxf) mc ukwk hnv`[`ghn`k`k mhsxjcsxgc,  
 pcjjh ukghnvhk rhfhr mc suknh;` vzmngcnvc vc tunl ghahnhhr,  
 fc/bxgcnxkxk [hk`kh ki twb ejl xa mc Xsghl [cl xddcjgcnxkvc  
 dhdl`gl `av`n. L i ojcgxt vzmngcnvc mc l i ojcgxt zg; cgcncv di b  
 l xkgcngc l i scgl hk`k rhk`k` khphr denc ho`jl hr, ukghn`k  
 ; xjhfohkghn`k` dhkv`n`f mxnhk ejl c; fxbxl l i vvchl `bh ck  
 dhoad` si fwjvwn. Mcbxddcjxk l cpb fegc ugvwyw jcrvxnv  
 (cgfcjjc, fwkwk kcjx[csxkvc l i ojcgxt zg; cgcnc ukvhk sxdhsx  
 [cpcjvck xsjxthvc evxngcn) fw fhncvc fxn ]'o`a dugw  
 tx; xngcaxgl cbsc, egc cmmcgvc ugvwyw ; xl x, dekc vc l i cddck  
 acosgcnxk xsjc; gcnxkx jc/l xk ejl c; l crscvx `i vc[c; vxn.

Redv ejvxdxl xb ; xl x, fwkghn xsghl x [cl xddcjgcnc ki twb  
 ejl xa ; z; gi crxvcgcnvxn ; x, ukghn`k l i rhfxgxkvc zgi l sh]hk  
 fxn si ; wj ejl c; l i scgl hk jhdthghn` hnhs`kvh pe] mhoj mcp-  
 vcjc, dho`kg`yh mc rhna`g`rg` hkghal hdh scfcf ugl hdh[hrv`n.  
 C; sxkc, fw [i n densxb si ; wjghn i l l cj hnhs`kvh l zm[wv ughk  
 xojxghtghn` mc \hn]hghkl hk` vphv vh vcnxkgcavxnxn, mcpvcjxk  
 'en]c; gcal c mhoj`k` 'i kfc'i k jc/oxnc shg`n. Xkvx cghmc xbhphj  
 mc dwohn`vh fcdhk ejvxdxl xbc vcgxg ughnhhr zb acosx l i ahpx-  
 vcgcnxl xbvck fc/bxgcnxkx redv evxnx; ...

2-I L L C J ZMGHVGHN- HNHS-KVH L I AHPXVC EJVDXL  
 XOJXGHTGHN-K FC/BX JC/SXNGCNX

I l l cj hnhs`kvh fc/bx l i scgl hkghn`k vx`cn l cbpcf hnv`-  
 [`ghn` jcnctxkvck ; htxn peshf ugwkl hs` fhncvc redv ugwkhl[hr

I cjcfcgcnx Xsghl zg; cgcnxkc sctcngcnxl vc cgvc ejvxdxl I i ah-  
pxvcgcn cshs`kvh, pcl ]xkxk I i ojcgxt I i scgl hk hgxl gcnx mc  
jctc; ; i n shpxfgcnxkxk fxn denc d`y`av`rghn` bhl hk, oi swsxcg  
pc[[c 'ejvxdxl uk sctcnvc cgvc ejvx; gcnxl x redv evxncl .

#### FXNXK{X SCTCN

Cfvi g-cbxb Hgx Scwvwk `hvahpg`y` vzmni kvc ejvxdxl xg;  
pc[[ sctcnxkvc fc/bx rcnxfc aedgcnx I i ahpxvc ejvxl . Ukghnvhk  
fxnx vc fw vxv ; x; ; hnmhk`I `b (Xnhr ph[`ghn`k`k ; hnmhk`) NxI hp  
acpcnxkc ]hjv`rvh fxbx 24 shhj jc/oxnc shgv`ghn. Fxbxl phl `I `b  
ukghn`k (fzdi ; fxn I cs[xvvc) jca; xg ejvxdx [hl hhj khl hb`kvh  
xajxnh; evxnvx; . Pcnc; cj bhl hk` dho`kghahkvh acpcn cph-  
gxskvck fxn vcsjcsx fxbxl cjhnt`I `b hg`f; ; hnmhk`I `bh jhl hah  
evxnvxgc. Pcl xk acpcnxk h'hp mc I c/gwl hjg` hvhl ghn`kvhk  
ugl hs` fcgxx ughk fxn acos ukghn`k dhk`kh 'cgvx mc ukghn i ]i k  
]o`a ejvx, suknh fxbxl ; hnmhkh xahnc evcnc; vevx... âFwkghn  
I i anx; vxngcn!ß Suknh vevx... âFwkghn Pcscckgc Pi sedkc hi gh-  
d`nghn!ß Suknh I ckc xahnc evxf vevx... âFw ukghn`k fcgcx]xsxvxn,  
c'cn cgxl c vi asc fha`k` ; csxf, rhk`k` x]cncl !ß Ph[`ghnvhk fxnx  
ukh dho`kgha`f vevx... âVedc fxgcnsckl x ; x, fxb kc i ]i k  
I i anx; x; , phgfw; x, fxb Hgghp emxkxk bxdhncjxkc 'evxn,  
Lcpcl I cv `edycl fcnxk rcfnxkx bxdhncj evxnx; ?!ß U acos  
rcbcfgckxf vevx... âL i anx; ugl wshk! C'cn Scwvwk hjh-fhfhs` vh  
'cgsc, sckx pxl hdc evc fxgl cb. Kc hy`b vugwsw âLcpcl I cv-  
Lcpcl I cvß vedxnsck! Lcpcl I cv ; xl vxn?! U vh I ckxl ; xl x  
fxn hvhl vxv, zgvi mc rwnjhvn` 'ejvx.ß

Xnhr g` ph[` runowvhk csl cdc fhaghd`f vevx... âSxb kc vedxn-  
sxkxb?! Fcs I ck kc vedxl ?ß U ; xax vevx... âFegc ve... Hgghpvhk  
fharh pe] ; cs bxdhk ]hjv`nh fxgl cb. Hgghpvhk fharh pe] fxn  
aed oedxn ]hjv`nh fxgl cb.ß U ph[` vh fwkwk jcgrxk ejvxdx pcn  
fxn aedx jc; nhnghl hyh fhaghv`.

Fw bhl hk fharh fxn xnhr g` ph[` vh ukwk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx...  
âLcpcl I cv vc sckxk ; xl x fxn ; xax xvxl x?!ß U, zb szbi ki fxn  
vhph jc; nhnghd`f vevx... âFcgl Lcpcl I cv vc I ckxl ; xl x fxn  
; xax vxv, zgi f 'ejvx!ß

Xnhr g` ph[` ukh vevx... âLcpcl I cvc Rwn/hk khbxg ugl wavw.  
Sckc vc Rwn/hk ; xl x fxn aed khbxg ugwfl w?ß U ; xax fxn szb  
vedc fxgl cvx...

L ha`kghn`l`bh l xkxf dugwl wbh vhmhl ejvx; . Fxbxl ph[`-ghnvhk fmxkxk Scwvxddc \hs\unjw mhn vxv, hl l h zbi Xnhrvh dhahd`nv`. Scnpcvc ]hjkh bhl hk Scwvxddc vzmgcjxkxk \hs\unj l c/l wnw ukwk \hs\unjkw hg`f fhov` mc ukw rumwf xsjepbh xgc vevx...âXsghl zg; csxkx fwnho`f axn; zg; csxkvc l cs; wkghal`-shk?lß

Ph[` ukwk l i rhfxgxkvc dhgmhnl hyh fhaghv` ; x, \hs\unjkw rhdjhs`k...

## 2-X: XK{X SCTCN

U vzmncv Xnhv hgx l gcnxkxk tx; nx fw vxv ; x, Xsghl pz; l gcnx [cl xddcjvc x[nh ugwl hg`v`n. Fwkh `znc vc l cs[xvgcnvc mc l i ojcgxt l i khsxfcjgcngc cghrcvhn jca; xg ugwkxk l cnhsxl gcnvc [hl hhj` rctgcj dwowswkvhk hd`gv`nv`ghn ; x, [cl xddcjvc Xsghl pz; l gcnxkxk dekxvck x[nh evxgl csxkx jcgcf ejsxkgn. Xnhv vzmgcjx Xsghl pz; l gcnxkc mc acnxcjc l i ohgxt rhkwkghn rcfwg ejvdxkc `znc hgx l gcn ukwkgh l i fhnxbcd rhgol `av`ghn. Fxb vc pcn fxn denvc l i scgl hkghn`k ; e]xnvdx fhdnl ackgx; gcnx xgc cghrcvhn ofcngcnx xbgcdxnvx; . Cg[cbhxncv tnhks`bghn cgedpxkc fhaghkhk pcnc; hj`, Tcgcsjxk xkrxghf`k` mhn-ri mmcl xbgc pxl hdc evxn, âEnxjneßkxk Pcfcaxsjhk cgedpxkc h\hmv`y` l i fhnxbcgcnx hkfhhk xbgcdxnvx; . Fxb xsghl pz; l gcnxkxk fxn vph [cl xddcj rhdjhn`gl hs` xgc cghrcvhn fha menck pcnc; hjghn`k rcgcf ncl bxkx vcn; ejl xavx; . L i scgl hkghn`k fw fhncvc edkx tx; xnv mc fxn-fxn xgc pcl nc/d ugl hghn`k` mc xojxgthg l cscgcgcnx hnj`r wkwjvwrgn`k` `i l hk evxnvx; . 1382-[x xgxk acmmhg hd`k`k 25-vc Xnhkvh Xsghl pcnc; hj` fhaghv`æ l i scgl hk hgx l gcnx âTedbxddcß l cvncscsxkvck pcnc; cjc fhaghd`f jhywjk ph; xl xddcjx xgc l i fhnxbcd rhgov`ghn. Lck fw phvxckx l i sfcj rxdl cjgck-vxnvxl mc semxkvxl . Ukghnh ; zl c; ejl c; i]i k mhn-`i[i - l i bgc ]hg`av`r, ukh oxvl cj ejl c; i]i k jhl phb`ng`y`l`b`fxgvxnvx; . Xnhv hgx l gcnx xl ; hkghn`kvh ughk pcn fxn aedgc fw pcnc; hj` pxl hdc ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn. Hgghp ukghn`k phl`s`kh oedxn xkhdcj ejsxk!

Fegc fxn acnhxjvc xncgx si ni gck ai hngnhg pc[[c dugh vi a-vi l . Lckxl ai hn`l l i scgl hkghn` jumpxv ; cgl csxkc vc/mcj ejl c; mc xsghl x pcdhj`k dekxvck vxn]cgvxgl csxkc ]hg`al hr vxv. Lck l i scgl hk hgx l gcnxkxk Xnhkvh;` ; xl x xsghl x fxn

pcnc;hj`k fhaghl hghn`k` jc;gxt evxnvxl . Sctcnvc l i scgl hk  
ncpfcngcnx mc l i jctc;;xngcnx i ]i k fw pcnc;hj`k cshs scfcf-  
gcnxkx xbhp evxn, ukghn` fw pcnc;hjh ;zl c; ejl cdc ]hy`n`n mc  
vedxnvxl ;x, Xsghl pz;l gcnxkxk fxn vph [cl xddcjvc x[nh  
evxgl csx dugwkvh fhaghkhk pcnc;hj mhpv fxn pcnc;hjv`n ;x,  
c'cn Xsghl zg;cgcnxkxk pcn phks` fxnxkvc rcgcfc ]hghnsh, fharh  
dengcnc vc zb jc/sxngcnxkx rudh[hr mc ukwk oednx fi j i k l i -  
scgl hkghnh ]hjh[hrv`n. Fi j i k i l xv mc hnbwghn`l eavck rw-  
ghrghn jh`l hr vx ;x, Xnhkvh;` l i scgl hkghn`k ]cjxkgx;gcnxkx,  
pcvct mc l crscvvc mhpv l cnhl h l hgx; ugl hy`l `b` ukghn  
i ]i k fcdhk evcl .

Fw sctcn fudw Swnxdhk`k āXomhkwg-l i sgxl xkβ pcnc;hj`k`k  
ncxsx xgc, egc[c vc L c;;cvc Scxv Nhl hbk xgc, Cncthjvh āEnxj-  
neβ pcnc;hj`k`k ncxsx L cpcl l cv Hvcl gc, Tcgcsjxkxk Xunvh-  
kxdvh;` mc Fedji g-l i rcvvcsv; x l i jctc;;xngcnx mc xsghl x  
rcbejgcnxk dnb`]`ghn`, l i jctc;;xngcnx, ocjxfgcnx mc xsghl x pcnc-  
;hj ncpfcngcnx xgc, u [i l gcvck, Cfwg-Pcsck Kcvmx, Cfwg-C/gh  
L wvwvx (|h;xsjhk`k xsghl x [cl xddcjxkxk ncxsx) mc fharh l ca-  
pwn egl x-sxdhsx acosddcjgcnc 'zni ai f l i bh;xncgc n h`hnv`l .

Zb xaxl c L cvxkvc hvx [hl hhj`k mc ph[`ghn`k hnhs`kvh  
`hdghkl hr i ]i k kbcnvc jwjwghk kcanxddc mc e/ghkklh cgcnxk  
dhd`gl hs` xgc fhaghv`l . Ukw dhov` ac;xgvc jckbxl mc unvh  
Xnhk Xsghl pcnc;hj`k` cjnhtg` ac;xgvc acnp ejl xavxl , ahp`k  
jhywj]w pz;wl cjxkxk bi gl gcnxkx mc ukwk ;i tn fha]`ghn` i ]i k  
l wbvwngr ejl csxkx h]`rghl `av`l , pcl vc vi kdh l i scg-  
l hkghn`k` fw pcnc;hjh ;zl c; ejl cdc ]hy`nl `av`l . Lck  
kbcnvc jwjl wavwl ;x, ukghn` āRwnfhkβ fhdnl ` 'e[csx,  
āLca/cni g-phnhl βvh [hl hhjh `hdghd`l . Hl l h bxg-px[[ckxk 7-  
vc L c;;edx-l i ;cncl cvc 'zbgckxgl cvck ocfcn menvxgc ;x,  
fw mcncrgcnxk `hdghkl hs`k` zpvcsxkc hghk acos ukghn` acnxt  
Pcncl vc `hdghdhn;ck l c/l wngn jwjwf bxkvkh shgl `a mc  
fi j i k e/ghkklh cgcnx l i shvxc ejl xagcn. Fwkh 'znc vc Xnhk mc  
Xnhr hgx l gcnx xgc fxngx;vc āRwnfhkβ fhdnl ` 'i ki kvc  
Scwvddc Cncfxsjhk`k` mcgxcpx Tedscgxk 'zni ai kc 'ejvx; mc  
ukvhk ohpxa ejvx; ;x, pcfs evxgckgcnx hbhv ejxk, l i shvxc  
ugwkl wa kcanxddcgcnx fxbc rhdjhns`k. Fw bhl hk ti nscjx  
rckxl cj shdnhhr ukh vevxl ... Sxbxk pz;wl cjxkxb Rwn/hk  
pz;l gcnxkxk x[nh ugwkl hs`k` fw zg;ckxk cshs ai hn` se]l xavxn.

Fwkh 'znc vc 'cnc; zb zg; cgcnxkvc Rwn/hk pz; l gcnxkxk x[nh ugwkl hs` dugwkvh [xphv evck, ;i tn pz; l gcnxkx zb zg; c-gcnxkvc ri mmdc l xkvxn l c; xsjcdck zg; cgcncv pz; wl cjgc l i fhnxbc h\hnhk l i scgl hkghnh sxbxk jcnctxkxbvck ;zl c; ugwkswk mc âFcgcv i g-pcncl xkß (L c; ;ckxk) fxn pxsscscx zb pz; ;wl cjgcnx xgc l i fhnxbc h\hnhkghn i ]i k s'y`kh[hr denx jc/dxk evxgsxk mc sxb vc zb l cbgwl xddcjgcnxkx ph[` rhnvhaghn`kh acnp ejl csx i ]i k ukghnh ;zl c;gx; 'zsjcncsxkxb. Fw vh Hgghp-jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw fw hdckxk kil wkcsx ugh fxgcn... âZbgcnx i ]i k l ckhtedix ahpxv ugswkghn.ß

Fwkvvh suknh l i scgl hk hgx l gcnxk Rwl egl xddc pzmbc-sxkvc;x rxdhl ghn`k` ohj`nghjv`l , Xnhkvh fhaghkl`a ughk xsghl x pcnc;hj`k l i cddck dzkgcnxkx cjnhtg` ac; xgvc fcdhk ejvxl , xsghl ncpfcngcnxkxk, oi swsxc Scwvxddc pz; wl cjxkxk ukghn`k rhna`s`kvh xth ejl cgx ugvwyyw mcbxtcgcnx ohj`nghjv`l mc szbi l i fw l cscgc fhncsxkvc;x e/ghkkl cgcnx dhdhkghn mc ukghn`k jwjwgl hghn` xgc sukh ]hjv`nv`l . Fw l cscgc cjnht`kvh fxbxl gc ukghn`k hnhs`kvh l i fhpxsc fhaghkv` mc fw vh pcfs ugwkghkghn`k hbhvg`yh fwnho`gl hs` xgc kcjx[cgckvx.

Pc[[ cl cggcnxkx denxkc dejxnvx;vck suknh rcbejgcn dhbl `av` ;x, wsjhv L wvwvx [i l c 'i ki hoahl i sji âPxkvxß l cs[xvxxkvc ]`o`a evc[c;vxn. Fxb u l c[gxsvc xajxnh; ejl cdx rcninh hgvr. Wsjhv L wvwvx zb ]`o`aghk`kvh ohj`nghjv` ;x, Xsghl rhkwkghn`k`k [cl xddcjvc x[nh evxgl csx ghb`l v`n. Fwkwk i ]i k l i scgl hkghn sc; ;xb aedc nxhdcj ejl cgxvxngcn...<sup>1</sup>

Ukwk ]`o`a` rwnjhnv`rvhk suknh xncgx `ejvxl mc l x; -nutukwk hnohs`kvh vdhkhnhv vevxl ... Fw'i k; i pcnc;hjghnvh l i scgl hkghnh fw i ] aed ghb`l v`n...

1-L i scgl hkghn |edycl fcnc-C; ncl ; -xk fe/scjxkvck uk vnzv csn suknh fha menck fw phvxscgcnx kcbenc hgl hrgh pz; l gcnxk xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnxkvck ke[c ]`ohn`gl hs`kh, pcvxs, txrp mc si kkcvc vcnxkvck jctc; ;i n ejl cdc epjxdh[g`-v`nghn. Ukghn fw l cscgcgcncv ;e]l xavc dhahl`a mc mcthj ejl xa hgx l gcnc jcrgxv ejl c; vck [xvvx ac; xgvc ]c; xkl cgxvxngcn.

2-Xsjxsl hn]` ;htxngcn xsghl zg; cgcnxkc pi [wl ejl xa,

<sup>1</sup> Fw ]`o`a`k l cjxkxk âNhfxcji g-hgcl xg-xsghl xddB x[ghs`kvh uowl hr i ]i k phb`nghl `av`l , gh; xk x[hbc menxgl cvxdx i ]i k pcl xk l cs[xvvc fcdhk ejvxl .

I i scgl hkghn`k mcpvcjxkx \ubl wa, ukghn`k hnhs`kh jctnxc shgl `a, fwkwkgh vh vi kdhk`k pcn fxn denxkvc dhnkhkh xsghl x pcnc;hj` I cpm ejl cdc rhvxn ugl wagh. (Fwkvk suknh Cg[c-bhxn I i scgl hkghn`k`k tnhks`bghn cgedpxkc fhaghv`rghn` pcnc;hj`, Enxjekxk pcfcaxgc cgedpxkc mc Xnhk hgxl gcnxkxk ahp`k jhywj]w neqxl x cgedpxkc fhaghv`rghn` I i fhxhbcgcnx h]`rghv`I mc fi ji k I i scgl hkghn` ukghnh ;zl c; ejl cdc scsgcvxl .)

3-Fw `i k fxbxl Cfwbcn, Cl I hn mc Si I cddc ;xl x xl hkh I hgx; ughk acosgcnc epjxdh[`I `b mhnv`n. (Vhph suknh ukghn`k Lc;;c apcnxkvc I c/nwb rhgv`rghn` xa;ck[cgcnx fcdhk ejvxl .)

\*\*\*

Lcvxkvc ugvywyl wb I i vvcj cnbxkvc fxbxl xsghl x ped/cjgcnc ;e]xnvxdxl xb `zni agcn Cfvi g-cbxb Fekfhhb`k rwghy`kh ]hjv`. Ukh vel xavxgc ;x, Fhyvhv hgxl gcnxkvck txghk oi swsddcjgcnc I hgx; ughk fxn kctcn Lcvxkc apcnxkvcvxn. U I ckx oi gcth I c;jcfxkxk hnv`[g` peshf ejl xa mc Lcvxkvc jcbc jc/sxs ugwkl wa Xsghl wxmensxjejxkvc `zni a ;e]xnl cdx-I xbx xsjcl xavx. Suknh vh wxmensxjejxk I ha`k`k` `zkvcnl xavx ;x, I ckx Fhyvhv hgxl gcnx mc vx`cn e/jxl hvg` acosgcnc fxngx;vc unhdh h`hns`k.

Wxmensexjexk I i cggl gcnx fzdi ; fxn shgukvh fxbx `zbgcdxnvxgc. Ukghn fxbx pcnhncjgc rhna`ghv`ghn. Jcgcfcgcnvck fxn rnw\w vh fxbx `zni c; i ]i k fxkhk`k rhna`s`kvh fxn denc ju\hal `av`ghn. Lck jnxfwkhdh rhgov`rvhk suknh Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvxl , Xnhr hgxl gcnxkxk jcctxkvck Lcvxkedx-I i kcmncncvc Xsghl wxmensxjex h]`gl hs`k` jcfnx; ejvx;vck suknh vevxl ... |edycl fcnc-C;ncl i fw I i rcvvc I c;hkh vhoxg ughk bhl hk I i ph[xngc ckshn hnhs`kvh rhnvhag`r cpv-\edl hk` fhyghv`, fzdi ; Xsghl [cl xddcjxkx vc I cpb fw rhnvhag`r cshs`kvh rwnvw. Sxb vc xkvx r`no fea zg;cvck fwnhdh `cgl xa jcgcfcgcnvck fxngx;vc u Pcbncjxk dugkwk `evcnc; Xsghl h mc I i scgl hkghnh fzdi ; oxvl cj evc fxgcnsxkxb. Ai fpcsb, fw`i k;i I i scgl hkghn fegc fxn rhnvhag`yh ;cs;xk epjxdh[ vwdwngn. } i k;x ukghn vi kdhk`k I i ojcgxt dengcnxkvc ;htxn vi al ckgcnc mc xsjxsl hn]` ri mmcgcnv rhna`ghal hrvh-v`ngn. Fw I i scgl hkghn`k fc/bxgcnx fxghmhsxjc ukghn`k rhkvhg-ghn` hgj`kvh xkgcdxn, fc/bxgcnx vc ukghn`k I wbvwnghn`k`k ki twb mc ph;xl xddcjx hgj`kvh dhahd`n. Fw zg;cgcnxk cphgxsv vc fegc

I wlvwngngh rhna`-rhna`dhv`nghn. Cg[cbhxn I i scgl hkghn`  
tnhks`b xsjxsl hn]`ghn` xgc I i fhxabc h`hn`nghn, fegc ; x, ukghn`k  
fha`kh 'cjxngxck I i sxfcjgcn vxggc fcdhk evxgcsx vedxgvxn. Enxjne  
xkrxghf]`ghn` Pcfcac xl `enhjunw Pedghs Khsx xgc I i fhxabc  
h`hn`n. Ukghnh rhna` ncmh 'zni gck phrs`bg`rghn` szbgc ]hjv`n-  
I hr I i l ; i k vedxgvxn. Xnhkvh I i scgl hk hgxl gcnx jhywj-  
]wghngh, ukghn`k xsjxsl hn]` cnfhfghn` xgc [xphv h`hn`n mc ]hg`-  
a`nghn ; x, vi kdhvh ck ncpxl sxb mc rhks`b ; htxn xsjxsl hn]`ghn`  
zg; cvck rumwf [cl xddcjvc Xsghl pz; I gcnxkx fcnrcnln ejxsk-  
gcn. Fwnhvh vh fha menck phvxscgcnx vxggc fcdhk ejl c; rednx-  
I i l ; i kvi n...

Fw szbgcnx, I i scgl hkghn hnhs`kvh I zm[wv ughk jctnrcckxk  
bxdhkghn`k` h]`r ac; xgvc vevx; vck suknh ]uogw I xshgghn  
'cjxncnc; szbi I i sukh ]hjv`nv`I. Fw bhl hk fxbxl  
rukhr]`I `b Fekfhbb`k ]`o`a`kh kzmfc ]hjv`. Hkhvhk`cgl c ; un  
ughk Fekfhbb I ckxl Cpgx-fedj ☼ I c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`g`  
ugvwywl w xkvx hkghv`y` i ]i k ; z; si ki vi bcgvx mc dhgk`b  
fxn [i l gc vevx... âSxb I i anx; sxkxb, Xsghl `rcfwg evxk, suknh  
I i scgl hkghnvkh xsjcdxk ; x, sxbxkgc fxngcaxf I i jcpvx  
ugswkghn]ß Rhk vhl hngnh`I vh rhdkhl hyh faghv`. Ukwkgh  
wbwk fxn I i fhpasc h`hnv`I ; x, ukwk phl `s`k`k fwnhvh redv  
ugwkl hs` fcpsxk pi vvwghn`kvkh ohnx[vcvxn.<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, fxn ]uo pc[[ sctcngcnxkvc Lc; ; c mc Lcvxkvc xl hl -  
[i l cgcnxk mc [hl hhj khl hb` r`ghk xl hl ghn`k szbgcnxkc  
rwghr hsl `ahl. Fc/bck I cynxf mc xah khl hb`k` âOxtß  
I cs[xvskvc ukghngh fxngx; vc r`ghn; ck x; x khl hb hnhs`kvh  
ukghngh egl x I i bh; xnc h`hn`n, âNhfxjcji g-hgcl xg-xsgl xddß  
x[ghs`kvh ukghn`k szbgcnxkc rwghr hsl hr i ]i k xajxnh;  
evxnvxl. Vx`cn fxn sctcnvc vc Lxsn hgxl gcnx, oi swsxc Cg-  
cbpcn Acnxt xgc 'zni agcn ; e]xnjvxl, shxn xsghl x zg; cgcncvc vc, u  
[i l gcvck Gmhkvh, Thns ; zntcbx zg; cgcnxkvc, Pxkvxsjhkvh,  
| h; xsjhkvh, : cal xnvc mc s. ; xl x zg; cgcncvc Xsghl hgxl gcnx xgc

<sup>1</sup> Ukwk fw sctcnvc vevxdx szbgcnx dhgk`b fwkh 'znc redv ejvx; ; x,  
fxbxl Xsghl hgcl xkvc mcpvcj i ]i k kcbcnvc jwjvwywl wb ai hngnhv mc  
xncgx si nvi di I i b jc; gxtgcncvc kc rcvsn scvhrjcjg ugvywywl wbw fxgvxnc; .  
Fc/bck u scpkcgcnc dhv`I h shg`nhl , u aedoc ; ufwv szbgcnc [hmhf mencnc;  
[cfpc jwjl hr xsjcvxdxl hkghn` ohj`nghd`n mc fw bhl hk rcgfxl hyn`d`n, 'zb  
dhaghn`I hol hyh faghd`n.



'zni ai f l i bh; xncgcn h\hmv`l . Fc/bck egc aedgcnx eavxnxvl ; x, ukghn`k kcrq ugwkl hs` xkvx; x bhl hkvh l csgcpcjc wdywk vedxgvxn. Fxn szbgc, l i scgl hk hgxl gcnx mc l i scgl hk ncpfcngcnx xgc h\hmv`y`l l i bh; xncgcncvc amc gh dwkcffxw; c l xsgw ocfxnxk<sup>1</sup> fhah vi avi l ; x, xojxgthg` l cscgcgcncx vcnxkvck hnha-v`n`f ukghn`k csg ; z; i ki mc l ckacdxkx jh`l hvhk, vphph suknh ukw pcgg ejl cvck l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh rhna`g`rg` hkghal h mc dho`kghal h pe] mhoj l i l ; i k ugl hdh[hrv`n.

Fxb vc l i ojcgt l cscgcgcncvc; x xojxgthg`k l ckacdxkx jh`l hy` ukghn`k pcggx dugw ; xl x tx; xngcavxdxl xbvck 'cgc[c; fcpsgcncv ukghn`k fc/bx ki l wkcgcnxkx redv evc[c; mc vphph suknh Hggh-p`k pzmg mc ri mmcsx xgc xojxgthg` l cscgcgcncx pcgg ejl c; i ]i k xncgx 'evc[cdx; .

### 3-HGGHP-K FC/BX SXTGJGCNX MC UKGHN-K FHNC SXKVC XOJXGHT-K LCKACDX

L i scgl hkghn`k fc/bxgcnc fegc jcscmmi n evxngcn ; x... aHgghp-jhhgh Hvcl x Zb tunl hs`kvh mc swncjxkvc dnhhl `av`n<sup>2</sup>, aHgghp`k fhnl hrghn` mhnv`n<sup>3</sup>, aUkwk fhgv`n` mc hdhrghn` mhnv`n<sup>4</sup> mc aU, rxdhl cjvc Zb hdhy`k` [cpckkcl xk i sji kc, dhowv [cpckkcl xk uvwkh rudhn, [cpckkcl aFcsvxn! Fcsvxn! Fcsvxn! vedc tcnhdv evcn<sup>5</sup> aHgghp`k l c; hk` mhnv`n, U, fxn l c; hkvhk fharh fxn l c; hkh 'evxn.<sup>6</sup>

Fw [i n jcscmmi ngcnc fcncj rhbhkv`nl hr i ]i k vedxngcn ; x, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl ; fegc fwdwnl wavwn... aFxbxl |cnmcn-vx`hn`l`b l cogwrhj` dnhhl hkvhk zk[c ocgc/ mcbxdddjxkvc xv - dc/kx Ukwkgh dhkha` pe] fxn aed duo xv - Ukwk hgj mc i sj jcnctx fua xv, unvhv pe] fxn

<sup>1</sup> aPe] ; cs scx, ocfxn (ocfcvhn) acos ; xl x h'hp ejl cb.B (aTcjp<sup>7</sup> swncsxkxk 14-[i hdcxkvck xrxjxfhs ugwkxf.)

<sup>2</sup> aScpxpx Fwohnx<sup>8</sup>, aCg-xsjx/bhk<sup>9</sup> ; xjh<sup>10</sup>, afcv/wg-xsgl B fzgi l i aScpxpx L i sgi l B, a{ckkcj<sup>11</sup> ; xjh<sup>12</sup>, pcvxs 28, aCg-fxnn<sup>13</sup> ; xjh<sup>14</sup>, pcvxs 115 aL i skcvx Cpl cv<sup>15</sup>, 2-[x [xgv, scp.244, 251, 323, 365, 426, 569.

<sup>3</sup> aScpxpx Fwohnx<sup>16</sup>, aBi l cn<sup>17</sup> swncsxkxk jctsnx, 2-[x [xgv, scp.122, 4-[i [xgv, scp.186 mc 192 aScpxpx L i sgi l B, asxtcji g-rxdhl cj<sup>18</sup> fzgl csx, pcvxs 19, 21 mc 22

<sup>4</sup> aScpxpx Fwohnx<sup>19</sup>, aduml c dw; actw ck shr<sup>20</sup> hdcxkxk (aRcgl B swncsxkvcvxn) jctsnx mc amw[wpwk duml cxbxk khbxcnp<sup>21</sup> hdcxkxk jctsnx, 4-[i [xgv, scp.189

mhngr duo xv. Ukwk cnax vc swdww i bcnkvc fcnrcnbn xv.B<sup>1</sup>

Vx'cn fñn ncmhdcjvc fegc fwdwnvwykw vedxngcn... âUkwk cnax  
hsxl hkghn'k dwohn's'kvh fw ac;xgvc xv - cggcnx xgc 'i kfc b ac;gkx 'zsjcnvx -  
suknh fwdwnvw... (Hghp-jhhgh unhdh jcbdxr 'zsjcnvdxkc mc hy'ng'r shgv'y'kh 'znc)  
vc mckxk 'hghk' ;xl x scsgckxn.B<sup>2</sup>

Ukghn'k vevxdx fharh fñn pcvxsc 'znc |edycl fcnx C; ncl  
j fegc fwdwnl wavwn... âHghp-jhhgh 'e[ckxk ho'ngn'kvh vi kd h  
hsxl hk'kh 'cgñ (khhxg ugvn) mc... â: xl vñn Lckvck fñn aed xsjcsxk mc Lck vc  
ukw x[hfcj evxl ?! : xl vñn Lckvck fñn aed ohpxa ejxk, Lck vc ukh cjh  
evxl ?!...B - vedc fwdwnwn.B<sup>3</sup>

Dekc fegc fwdwnvwykw kcr g evxngcn... âAc/fhk hd'k'k unjhk[<sup>g</sup>  
'iki Hghp vi kd h hsxl hk'kh khbxg ugvn mc fcoaxa evxn.B<sup>4</sup>

Rxdhl cj fhncsxkvc xsc fegc fwdwnvwykw kcr g evxngcn...  
â(Hghp) {cpckkcl c vedcn... âSck (pcgc) vugl hl 'shk?B U vedcn... âDekc vc  
mhnl 'B Fw bhl hk Hghp Zb hdhy'k' ukh rudhn mc [cpckkcl ... âFcsvñ!  
Fcsvñ!B - vedcn.B

Vx'cn fñn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc kcr g evxngcn... âHl l h [cpckkcl c  
'cgñ;vc xsc, Hghp Zb hdhy'k' unh rudl hd'k[h, u, vudl hb. {cpckkcl vedcn...  
âFcsvñ, fcsvñ!B Fw bhl hk u vudhn mc (ukwk x]xkvc;xgn) fñn-fñnxkc rhn'ahn.B<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, ;xjh<sup>f</sup> k l i rcvvl csx, pcvxs 182â âSi kckx  
Jxnl xbxß, âPwvß swncsxkx jctsnxâ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.11 mc 12.

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, pcvxs, 4726â âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, ;xjh<sup>f</sup> k  
l i rcvvl csx, âl h ck;cncjxg-[i pcl xddcjwß fzgi l i â âSi kckx Vhnc l xß,  
;xjh<sup>f</sup>wn-ncrhr, âtx ac/kxs-shcjx mc ki bwgxn-Ncffx jchghß fh<sup>f</sup>. Egc[c vc  
hahy'vh;` l ckfcgcnc l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnxkxb... Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi g-  
Mcpph<sup>f</sup> k (1206-[<sup>g</sup> xgvc mcthj evxf) âJumpxvß ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, Xfkx Jedl xddckxk  
âL xkph[ws-si kkcß ;xjh<sup>f</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnß, cj-jcpc[[i v mcj-jumpxv mcv-vccmhj ;xjh<sup>f</sup> âScpxpx  
L i sgi l B, vwh ;xjh<sup>f</sup> âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, si kkc ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, pcvxs 4733â  
âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, scghj ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, 2-[x [xgv, scp.233 mc 235â vccmhj ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, 13-[i  
[xgv, scp.30â âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, pcvxs 1366â âSi kckx Vhnc l xß, scghj ;xjh<sup>f</sup> â  
âCg-l i mcjjcß (L hgx;), Rwn/hk ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, 30-[w fhfâ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv,  
scp.264, 267, 282, 419, 433, 487, 504, 521, 3-[i [xgv, scp.34, 4-[i [xgv, scp.16.

<sup>4</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, suml ;xjh<sup>f</sup> âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, âxrh l cjws-scghjß  
;xjh<sup>f</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.433.

<sup>5</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.128, 4-[i [xgv, scp.191, (pcn x; x ncmhdcj  
Cfw Pi nedncvckvxn), 4-[i [xgv, scp.129-vh xsc Ckcsvckvxn. âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß,  
[ckkcj ;xjh<sup>f</sup>, 10-[w [xgv, scp.129, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.396

# HGGHPGH " ZNI A FHNC SXKVC

Ncmhdcj ejl xagcn ; x, Ncswgx-C; ncl j rxdhl cjvc zb |cnmcnvx' hn'k` 'znc[c; vxn. U Pcbncjxk vxgxkvck fegc vedxgx...  
 â|edycl fcngcn acthcjvck xl jxkh ejvx; gcnx bhl hk l z/l xkgcn l ckxl dhk' l h  
 'cgcn. Lck vc 'evxf Hgghpvhk x[hbc xsjcdcncl. Hgghp vh l ckc x[hbc mencn.  
 Hgghp' l` 'znvidil bhl hk sc[vcdc viacncl ... (Pcvxsxk ho'n'kvh fegc  
 vedxgx.) Suknh l ckxl i]ik jc/dxk evxgl xa pivvwghnvh acthcj evcn mc ukghn`  
 fepxajc vhoxg evcncl. Rhd'vnhl, |cnmcnvx' hn' l` 'znvidil bhl hk dekvck  
 sc[vcdc viacncl ...B<sup>1</sup>

Dekc vc u pcbncjxk vxgxkvck vedxgx... âSxb jebgx; gc zb |cnmcnvx-  
 'hn'k'b' ha; hn ac; xgv 'znif liahpxvc evc[c; sxb.<sup>2</sup> Liscgl hkghn vh hd'  
 fwgwwswb 'ikvc liahpxvc ejvx; gcnx ; xl x, rxdhl cj 'ikikvc zb \cnmcnvx' hngn'k`  
 'znc[c; gcnæ Ukghn fw 'zniavck bxdhk ]c; lcbgc.<sup>3</sup> Hgghp-jhhgh u 'ikvc fegc  
 fwdwnhn... âPcn ; cs kcdc \cncsjxa evxfsc, ukwk vhgk[h 'ejsxk. B Fw bhl hk  
 fc/bxgcx 'ikcaxk, fc/bxgcx hd'k, fc/bxgcx vc jhywjghn'k hnv'k[h 'evcngcn. Fw  
 i l l cj l i khturgcgc fxng; vc zb denxkv rhghn. Hgghp-jhhgh jhk'kl hb fxn phgvh –  
 ukghn'k jhk'v'rhg'kvk fharh fxn tunl hvh – ukghn'k dhk'kh 'cgxf vedcn... âLck  
 sxbk |cnmcnvx' hn'k' bhl !B Ukghn vedcngcn... âSckvck Hgghp \ckhp h\hn'n'r!  
 |cnmcnvx' hn' l` b fxbxl dhk' l` bh 'cgck rcvcn fwnvh rhgh[hy'r. Pcn mhoj  
 Hgghp 'cgsc, fixb Ukw jhk'dh[hy'r. B Hgghp suknh ukghn'k jhk'v'y' sxtcjc ukghn'k  
 dhk'kh 'cgnc; vedcn... âLck sxbk |cnmcnvx' hn'k' bhl .B Ukghn vedcngcn... â(Fcg.)  
 Sck fxbxl |cnmcnvx' hn' l` bshk!B Suknh ukwk vhgk[h 'evcngcn...B<sup>4</sup>

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc kerg evxngcn... âKcphdcj, Hgghp  
 \cncsjxa evckgcncvck fharh dhoe` mc \xs cl cg shpxfgcnx zb  
 dengcnxkv rhghngn. |cnmcnvx' hnx-hgcl ukghn'k 'znvi ; gcnx  
 pcl xk swncjc dho`k fxn swncjvc ukghn'k dhk'kh 'cgcn mc  
 vedcn... âKcdx 'zbgcdxnsxkb?! Pcn i l l cj \cncsjxa ejvxdx aedxk  
 hnv'k[h dugh vi asi klB Ukghn vedcngcn... â...Fxb zb \cncsjxa  
 ejvxdxl xb |cnmcnvx' hn` 'zbgcdxnx; .B Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnhn... âLck  
 sxbk |cnmcnvx' hn'k' bhl .B Ukghn x; x-i ] vctc vedcngcn... âFxb pe]  
 fxn aedx Hgghp acnx; rcnln menl xnx; .B Hgghp fwdwnhn... âSxbxkgc

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, jumpxv ; xjhF, 4-[i [xgv, scp.185, cghmc acnpgc, scp.190

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Jenl xbxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.229

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.188

<sup>4</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, xl hk ; xjhF, âl c/nxtc jw jcnxrcjwn-nz/dcjß fhFæ  
 âScpxpx Fwohnxß, jumpxv ; xjhF, âmw[wpwk duml c xbxk khbncpß hdxsxxk jctsxnx  
 fhF, 4-[i [xgv, scp.188æ Pcl xk ; xjhfvh âRhtß swncsxkxk jctsxnx.

Ukwk hnhs`kvh fñ cghl cj mc kxahkc mñhl ` ; x, Ukw (pcl xk cghl cjgc) jhk`dhs`k`b?ß Vedcngcn... âHdhy`k 'zmvcsx (fhgv`n).ß Hgghp Zb hdhy`k`k fhgv`n`k` ukghnh 'zsjcncn (mc ukghn sc[vc evcngcn).<sup>1</sup> Suknh fhaghn`k` sc[vcvck rhgv`n`f 'zncngcn ; x, Hgghp fñxk[x vctc 'znvi ; gcnx swncjc vi al i avi n mc vedxn... âL ck sxbxk |cnmcnvx' hn`k`bhl .ß Ukghn vedcngcn...â(Fcgx!) Scksck fxbxl |cnmcnvx' hn`l `b!ß<sup>2</sup>

#### FEPXAJVC HGGHPGH " ZNI A

Ukghn vedxngcn...â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fepxajvc sh; xk ughk l z/l xkgcn fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn... âL z/l xkgcn fepxajvc zbgcnxkxk Ncffxkx 'znvi ; gcnx bhl hk ukghngh Hgghp`k hnhs`kvh, Ukwk i bi kvc; x ; xfnxdh (cbcl cj) rcfhs`kvhk fharh fñ aed thsxc shgl hdh[hrv`n.ß<sup>3</sup> Fepxaj cpqx unh mñnxv ughk bhl hk L i jchg Hgghp fwdwnhn...âFñ aed xsjcdxnsxkxbl x ; x, sxbxk i ]i k (cghmc ughnh) hnj`n`l ?ß Ukghn vedcngcn... âFxbx i bi hy ejl cvxkl x? Fxbc fepxajvc den menl cvxkl x mc fxbx [cpckkcl uvwkvhk oxghs ejl cvxkl x?ß Hgghp Zb px[hf`k` h]hn mc ukghn`k dhk`kvh Hgghpgh 'zni avck vc semxl gx fñ aed ugl hb.ß<sup>4</sup>

Dekc vedxngcn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fwdwnl wavwn... âFepxaj cpqx unhk`k khb-ke/l cjcgnxkc rcnr ugvwrghn` phgvh, 'zbgckxgl cvck ukghn`k i sji kc \hnghr fñ kwn sh]hn. Fhaghn`k` rhgv`n`f 'zncngcn ; x, |cnmcnvx' hñx-hgcl ukghn`k fhaghn`k`k i bcñxkvcvñ mc fegc fwdwnwn...âEar ugswk sxbc, ed fepxaj cpqx!ß (|edycl fcn suknh fwdwnvw.) Fw vh Hgghp-jhhghk`k Rwn/hkx- : cnxl vc fwdwnvwyw âScghl wk rumgck l xk Ncffxk Ncpxl ß ; cghl `k`k l cbl wkwwwn. Vhph suknh fwdwnvw... âFwkvhk suknh Hgghp ukghnh jhl hah evcn mc ukghn vh Hgghph kcbcn shghnghn. Fw 'zni a vhmhl evck bhl hk ukghn fepxajvc; x shñ ke/l cjcgnxk pe] fñxkc cpcl xddcj menl cbgcn. Suknh Hgghp ukghn`k 'zbgcnxkvc redfc ]c; xgcñ, hl l h Ukwk kwnw mc

<sup>1</sup> Fw, sc[vc fhncsxkvc; x pcvxsxk fñ pxsscsx vxv.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, xl hk ; xjh`f, pcvxs. 229æ âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âKxshß swncsxkxk jctsnx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.80 mc 4-[i [xgv, scp.189.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, jumpxv ; xjh`f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.191, âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, xl hk ; xjh`f, pcvxs 296

<sup>4</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, xl hk ; xjh`f, pcvxs 297

fcnc; c; x unvh rhghn.β<sup>1</sup>

Dekc fegc kcr; g evxngcn... ā...Hgghp dhk`kvh ukghn`k cbxbx u  
; csvxn ; x, si fp-hoahl Hgghp`k i bi kc fhos`k. Suknh fw hdckx  
(āRxdhl c; β swncsx, hdc.22-23) jxghmcj ejvx...

﴿وَجُودٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ نَاصِرَةٌ إِلَىٰ رَبِّهَا نَاطِرَةٌ﴾

āMi [wpwk duml c; bxk khb;ncp, xgh Ncffi;ph khb;ncp – U `i kvc fc/bx  
i bgcn semxk [gxvxn mc zb |cnmcnvx`hngghn`kh jcnct kcbcn shghn-  
ghn.β<sup>2</sup>

Ukghn vedxngcn ; x, |edycl fcn ; ocfc;nc mencnc; fw-  
dwnl wavwn... āFepxaj cp;gx Hgghp-jhhghk` `zncn, Hgghp Zb cnaxkx  
ukghnh ha; hn evxf, fepxaj fhyghn`k`k f;nxkvc ukghn i ]i k bhpxn  
ughn. U l c [gxsvc; xgc;nvck egc f;nx rhgl hb ; x, Hgghp ukwkgh  
vhk`al hs`k. Kcphdcj, Hgghp sxbgc;nvck fc/bxgc;nxkx;bc vedcn...  
āTxghk; cs, dhv`kvhv`nl ` ; x, txghk `i kvc kc xagcn `znvi k?β U  
vedcn... ā|cnmcnvx`hnh, l c`cn l ckx fhy`aghl hv`k?β Hgghp fw-  
dwnhn... āCgfcj;jc, fhy`aghl `ahl ...β Suknh zb l ck;bxggcnxl xbc rh-  
d`vhn`r, bzm [cgcnxl xb f;bxl `zni ai l i bc `cgxf vedcn;ncn... āOua  
`cgvxk, sc;th `cj;xnvxk! Sck egc f;xn phgvh rhd`jv`k ; x, `zbcgg;xdxk,  
kwnwk mc cj;ngx xdxk f;bxl dhk`l `bv;hk `ejvxdxk mhojh kxs-  
fcjck v;hph hnj`rv`n.β Fxb vedcnx; ... āFw `i k zb |cnmcnvx`hn`-  
l `bgh f;xn denvc vx; . Fegc vc ugl hg`v`n ; x, fw f;xb; ghdxrvxn.β<sup>3</sup>

Si kki l ckfcgc;nxkvc rxdhl c;vc Hgghp`k `zni kl csx mc  
Ukwk bhpxnx cbhghnh l hg; ugl hs`k` `zsjcnck ncmhdcjgc;nxk  
x]xkvck dwohn`vh; `ghn` redv ejl c; gc ; xthdcjgc;nx; , fwkghn`  
vh shvc [c ughnhr ki l wk; i ]i k redv ejvx; . } i k; x f;xb ukghn`k  
phl `s`k` f;xn denc ju`ghl hr cbl xkv; vedxgx; . Xkvx fw  
pcvxsgcnxk l c/kh mc jc/mxgxkv; dhnkhkx; xojxghtg` l cscgcgc;nx  
hnhav`n`n`r...

FW NCMHDCJGCNXK L C/KHS- MC JC/MXGXKVC L ZM{WV UGHK  
XOJXGHTGHN

L i scgl hkghnv;hk fc/bxgc;nx fw ncmhdcjgc;nxk bhpxnx l c/khs`kh  
xl hk `cj;xcnc; e/jxrhv fcsgcl xa, pcl ]xkxk ukh xl hk  
`cj;xn l cdx vc Hgghp; xl hk `cj;xn l cdxk, jumpxvc mc

<sup>1</sup> āSi kckx xfkx L h [cβ, l i rcv;xl c, pcvxs 184

<sup>2</sup> āSi kckx Jxn l x;bx, sxtc; j g-[ckkc; f;zgl csx, 10-[xgv, scp.18-19.

<sup>3</sup> āSi kckx xfkx L h [cβ, bzpv ; xjh`f, pcvxs. 4336, scp.1451-1452; āSi kckx  
Jxn l x;bx, sxthjx [ckkhj fhfghn`, 10-[w [xgv, scp.16-17.

de'hkc\cnscjgxdc e/jxrhv`k vcgxx peshf ejl xagcn. Fw pcvxs-gcnvc (Hgghp) [xsl xddcjvck fharh fxn l c/kh menckgcnx xsc  
âl i cjjxgcji s-sxtcjß, dc/kx âHgghp`k sxtcjgcnxkx ri mmcvck  
shghkghnß hvghkv`n`ngn!

L i sgi l fw pcvxs-gcnx â; xjhfwg-xl hkß fzgl csxkvc, Fwohnx  
xsc â; xjhfwj-jumpxvß fzgl csxkvc [cl ejl xavxn.

Xfkx Pi bedl c<sup>1</sup> fw fhncvc âJumpxv mc |cnmcnvx'hn`k sxtcj-  
gcnxkxk xsfhj ugwk l hs`ß hvg` fxn ; xjh f dhbl `a mc pcl xk ncmh-  
dcjgcnxk phl `s`k` xsjxskhs`b ughnhr scpxp fxgcnc; xkhkl `av`n  
; x, fwkghn`k phl `s` hvxg acosgcncvck ncmhdcj evxgl xavxn mc uk-  
ghn` kcrg evckgcnxk e/jxl hvg` acos ugl hs`kvh pe] fxn ac; ; -ai f-  
pc mc xnhv duovwn.

XFKX PI BEDLCKXK : XJHF-K-K FC/BX FZGLCGCNX..

- \* Hgghp i ]i k kcts ugl hs`k`k xsfhj evxgl csx fhf`æ
  - \* Hgghp i ]i k i b ugl hs`k`k xsfhj evxgl csx fhf`æ
  - \* |cnmcnvx'hnx-[cgxxk swncjxkxk bx; nx fhf`æ
  - \* Owvhmckv i ]i k 'zb ugl hs`k`k bx; nx fhf`æ
  - \* Hgghp-jhhghk`k (bhpxnx cbhghngh) 'znl csx mc eajl csxkxk  
xsfhj ugwk l hs` fhf`æ
  - \* Hgghp i ]i k cgxk ugl hs`k`k xsfhj evxgl csx fhf`æ
  - \* Hgghp i ]i k hdhr ugl hs`k`k xsfhj evxgl csx fhf`æ
  - \* Fi j i k l z/l xkgcnxk [ckkcjvc Hgghp` 'zni f Ukh jhl hah  
ejl cgcnxkxk fcdhk` fhf`æ
  - \* Fi j i k l z/l xkgcnxk rxdhl cjvc Hgghp` ocgmcjvc 'znc[c; -  
gcnxkxk fcdhk` fhf`.
- Xl hl Phtxb Usl hk xfkx Scxv Vhncl x (280-[` xgvc mcthj  
evxf) vc zb ; xjh f`k`k fc/bx fzgl cgcnxkvc â{i pcl xddcß rnw\w-  
kwk crxvcgcnxkx ncvv ejl c; i ]i k hahy`vh;` l cjcfcgcnx fcdhk  
evxf...
- \* Hgghp-jhhghk`k Ac/fhk`k unjkh[`g 'i ki den i bi kc ekl csx  
fhf`æ
  - \* Hgghp-jhhghk`k Cnctc 'i ki kvc den i bi kc khbxg ugl hs`  
fhf`æ

---

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx Pi bedl c Lcpcl l cv xfkx Xsphr fzdi ; phtxbgcncvck fxnx, oi gcth  
l c; jcfxkxk xl hl ghn`k`k fha]`s` mc Fwohnx xgc L i sgi l i k pcvxs egl xkvc; x  
wsjhv`v`n. 311-[x px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. Ukwk ; xjh f` 1378-[x px[nx  
xgxkvc Rhpxncvc ]h\ ugwk wf dhd`gl `a, jcn[i l edx-phg` vh pcl xk  
l i rcvxl cvc redv ugwk l wavwn.

\* Rxdhl cjvc Hgghp-jhhghk`k peshf i ]i k l cpacn scpkcsxkc khbxg ugl hs` fhf`æ

\* Hgghp-jhhghk`k fepxaj cpgx i ]i k khbxg ugl hs` fhf`æ

\* Hgghp`k 'zni kl csx fhf`.<sup>1</sup>

Bcpcfx vc zbi ki k âCg-i gi mmi g-hgx gx Cgxddxg-Yctthnß hvğ` ; xjhfh kvh fc/bx hdc mc pcvxsgcnx redv ejl xa mc oi gcth l c; jc-fxkxk hnv[`gghn`k`k ]`ohn`a`kh cshsck Hgghp-jhhghk`k i gi mm ugl hs` vevx; vc l crscvxk l c; hk fho`l `kvhk w[hg`r ugvwyw-kw vel xavxn. U, suknh zbi ki k fw fhncvc; x kcbcnxddcsxkx vcs-jc; gcl c; i ]i k scphfcgcnxk, jhfexkxk, hgxl gcnxk mc l i pcv-vxsgcnxk kcbcnxddcgcnxkx vc hnhav`nl `av`n.<sup>2</sup>

HGGHP-K FC/BX SXT CJGCNX FHNCVC UGHK XOJXGHT-K  
LCKACDX

Dwohn`vh fc/bx l i scgl hkghn`k Hgghp`k sxtcjgcnx fhncsxkvc ughk kcbcnxddcgcnxkx redv ejvx; . L i scgl hkghn`k fc/bxgcnx vc fwkw ncvv ejl c; i ]i k âCk/hl ß swncsxkxk 103-[i hdcxkx xsjxkhv evxngcn...

﴿لَا تُدْرِكُهُ الْأَبْصَارُ وَهُوَ يُدْرِكُ الْأَبْصَارَ﴾

â" zbgn Ukw 'znc fxgl cb, gh; xk U, 'zbgnx 'znif vcn; evxn.ß  
Mc vedxngcn...

وَجُودٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ نَاصِرَةٌ إِلَى رَبِّهَا نَاطِرَةٌ

âU 'ikvc (rxdhl cjvc) fc/bx ibgn semxk[ mc ahvg`r x]xkvcvxn mc zb |cnmcnvx'hngn`kh kcbcn evcngcnß – hdcxkxk l c/khs` fwvwn ; x, ukghn Hgghp`k cl nxkx l i ahpxvc evcngcn, fharh szbgc, Ukwk cl n mc tcnl hkghn`k`k 'cgc[cdxkx 'zbgcdngcn. Fw vh Hgghp-jhhghk`k Dc/rwfwk zmghvghn`k`k szbi ki pe; hdcj ejvxdx âDwsxtß swncsxkxk 82-[x hdcxkx fckbcdxn. Fegc ; x, ukghn hjhghn`kh vevxngcn...

وَأَسْأَلُ الْقَرْيَةَ الَّتِي كُنَّا فِيهَا

âUkvh ugvwywl wb ;ckvvck, rcndcvck swhg ej.ß Dc/kx u rcndckxk cphgxskvck swhg ej. Fw hdcvc âcpğß, dwohn`vh; ` hdcvc xsc âcl nß ; cgl csx jcrvxncv jwjwgwn (tcnb ugwkwn). Fwkvhk cghmc,

<sup>1</sup> Fw ; xjhfh 1960-[` l xghvx xgxkvc Gxvckvc ]h` ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> XI hl Phtxb Acl scvxxk Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cpl cv xfkx Usl hk xfkx Rhdl hb Bcpcfx (748-[x xgv mcthj evxf). Ukwk ; xjhfh 1388-[x px[nx rcl cnx xgxkvc Lcvxkedx-l i kcmmcncvc; x âScgctxddcß ; xjhfh l hyhbhs`kvh x; xk[x ]h`gh kcan evxgl xavxn.

bhpxnvc Hgghp`k [xsxl ugl hs`kh vcghgcj evck shxn hdcgcn vc jc/mxg ugwkwn (bhpxnx l c/khs`kvhk fharh l c/khdh dubwgwn) mc fegc l c/kh menxgn.

Fw dubwl w vedckgcn dwohn`vh redv ugwkhh kbcnxdde shpxfgcnxkx al i [cssxl cß mc al i acffxpcß, dc/kx zb |cnmcnvx`hng`hn`k` [xsxl shdhk, Ukw l cogwrhjh jcafxp evckgcn hvghkv`n`n`ghn. Xl hl Shvyr {c/ten xfkx Lcpcl l cvxk fegc fwdwnvwyw ncmhdcj ugwkwn...

âHgghp`k cnaxk isjikvc ugvywkw 'il hk evck acos pcxrcjvc Hgghp` al cpl wgß (pcl g ugwkhh, vha`khk) fxgl xavxn. Fw [in (dhkg)a] jcscmmi n vc Hgghp` pcl g evck aedk Ukvhk vph 'i [gi ugl hs`k` 'cnc;gx evxn. Hgghp`k fxn aedk x]xkvc, dhowv isjikvc ugvywkw, dhowv Hgghp`k fxn aedvc ugl hv`y`k, dhowv vh fxn aedk Ukw zbikc l caywg ejvxdkx 'il hk evckgcn Ukw l cogwrghn`k sxtjgcnx xgc mcst ejl xagcn. Phgfw;x Lijchg Hgghp` fijik cadhghn`k ohgxrvxn mc pe] fxn aed Ukwkgh l irhdisc evxgc fxgl cb mc xkshkghnh (vh) uoahv`gl hb. Pe] fxn l c;hk Hgghps`b jcscmmi n ugwkx fxgl cb mc pe] fxn l c;hk vh Ukw cphjc evc fxgl cb.<sup>1</sup>

#### CGX™ --K SZBI KC XSJXKHV EVXNGCN

Fw crxvc shpxfgcnx Cgx™ -`k fegc vevxdkx kcrg evcnc; ukh xsjxkhv evxngcn...

âHgghp`k kc fxn denc khbxg ugwn, kc vc fxn denc khbxg ugl hyh epjxdh[` mhnv`n. Fw szbi dhgk`b u ;cs vedcn ;x, Hgghp`k hnjl h mc hbxgl h kxsfcjx menl xa ugswk. }ik;x l ijpcnxx; (pcnc;cjvc ughk) pcn fxn aed ukh pcnc;cj fhy`aghdhk fxn ;csc epjxdh[gv`n ;x, pcl xk aedk mhsjcsxgc pcnc;cjc 'cgsik. Fegc xsc, Hgghp`k hnjl f-hbxgl h, dhowv jcpnx; evxgl c, pcnc;cj ejl c, bhmhgh wynhl h, khbxg ugl h, ujwnwf-vwnl h ;xl x aedgcngc mcst ejl c;vck pcbcn evxk!<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk, vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjx vc kcrg evxf vedxngcn ;x, nhmx Xl hl Cgx xfkx Lwscn-Nxbh™ -h vevx...âFc/bxgcnx fxbxl i ]i k fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, Hgghp`k-jhhgh vkh`al hrgh 'zni kl cdx Lwsh xgc Lcpcl l cv hnhs`kvh fzgi avi nl i avi n.ß Xl hl Nxbh

<sup>1</sup> al swgx : htxß, jumpxv ;xjhF, cna mc ;i nsi fhF, pcvxs 7æ äpcnc;cj mc xkjxrhgß fhF, pcvxs 3 mc 9. âJumpxvx Scvwrß, kctdi g-l c;hk fhF, pcvxs 9, 10, 12, âMc ;hkc cnawpw cgcg-l hxß fhF, pcvxs 11, âCnncpl hkw cgcg-cnaxs-jcmhß hdcxkxk l c/khs` fhF, pcvxs 5-8æ âFxpnhwg-ckmhnb, dekx ]h\, jumpxv ;xjhF, 3-[i [xgv, scp.78, pcvxs 23.

<sup>2</sup> al swgx : htxß, jumpxv ;xjhF, pcnc;cj mc xkjxrhg fhF, pcvxs 1æ âJumpxvx Scvwrß, kctdi g-l c;hk fhF, pcvxs 18æ âFxpnhwg-ckmhnb, 3-[i [xgv, scp.311, pcvxs 25.



™ fwdwnvw...âFcs (hahy`vh;`) fw hdckx xkshkghnh mc [xkgcnc  
;xl ]hjv`nl `av`n...

﴿لَا تُدْرِكُهُ الْأَبْصَارُ وَهُوَ يُدْرِكُ الْأَبْصَارَ﴾

â"zbgcn Ukw 'znc fxgl cb, gh;xk U, fiji k 'zbgcnx 'znin.ß¹  
Pcl ]xkxk,

﴿وَلَا يُحِيطُونَ بِهِ عِلْمًا﴾

âUkghn`k egl x Hgghp` cphjc evc fxgl cb.ß²,

﴿لَيْسَ كَمِثْلِهِ شَيْءٌ﴾

âPe] fxn aed Ukwk l xsgx mc uahn` vedxgvxn.ß³ L c'cn fw hdcgcnc  
]hjv`nhk Pcbncj L cpcl l cv vedxgvxn! x?!ß

Nhmx vevx...âCgfcjjc ;xlß

Xl hl ™ fwdwnvw...âFcs ke[c l i l ; i k ugh fxgcnc ; x, fxn  
kctcn xkshkghn`k hnhs`kh 'cgxf Hgghp jcnctxkvck 'cgvxdxkx  
ukghnh vesxk, ukghn` Hgghph jcnct vc/mcj ejxsk mc âgh  
jwvnx;wpwg-cfshn mc...ß hdcxskx vesxk, hl l h suknh âl ck  
Hgghp` zb 'zbi l gc 'znl i acl ß mc dh âUkh egl x cphjc  
jh\l `ahl , U, fcacn swncjxkvcvxn!ß vesxk?! Pcdh ejl xnsxkxbl x?!  
Pcjjh vxksxbgcnc vc Hgghph fegc aedgcnc kxsfcj menc  
fxgl cl xagcn ; x, Hgghp jcnctxkvck fxn aedx 'cjxnx suknh ukwk  
c; sxkc fxn szb vel xa ugswkghn!ß

Nhmx vevx...âHo` Hgghp`k Zbi fwdwnl wavwn ; x, âmc gcrvc nchpw  
kcbncjck wonhß (Ukw vx'cn fxn vctc vc 'znvi ).⁴

Xl hl ™ fwdwnvw...âVx'cn hdcgcnc vc (mhn ho`)...âLh ;cbxfcg-  
twhvw mc l h nchß – (dc/kx rcgf 'znvidi aedgcnc dhghk peshf ejl cvx)ß⁵, egc[c  
vc âgcrvc nch l xk hdhix Ncfxpxg-;wfnhß, dc/kx u, Hgghp`k fzdi ; hdcgcncxkvck  
fc/bxsxkx 'znvi.⁶ Fw ;xl x hdcgcncv Hgghp-jhhghk`k hdc mc  
kxahkcgcnx Hgghp`k Zbi kvck jhl hl xgc fharhv`n. Hgghp-jhhgh  
fwdwnl wavwn...âUkghn Hgghph egl x cphjc jh\h fxgl cbgcnc.ß⁷ C'cn 'zbgcn

¹ âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.103

² âJhphß swncsx, hdc.110

³ âAwnhß swncsx, hdc.11

⁴ âKc[l ß swncsx, hdc.13

⁵ âKc[l ß swncsx, hdc.11

⁶ âKc[l ß swncsx, hdc.18

⁷ âJhphß swncsx, hdc.110

Ukw 'znc fvgsc, Ukh egl x cphjc vc jh\hn, fw bhl hk Ukwk fhncsxkvc jhl l c/nxtcj phsxg ughn.<sup>β</sup>

Nhmx vevx...âSxb fw ncmhdcjgcnx jc; bxf evxnsxkxbl x?β

Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âPcn mhoj fw ncmhdcjgcnx Rwn/hkgh l i ohgxt ugsh, ukw jc; bxf evxncl .<sup>β1</sup>

Fcgx, Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`Φ Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkx l cpb fegc jctsn mc fcdhk ejl xagcn. Si kki pcvxsgcnxkvc Hgghp i ]i k vedxgck hdhr, cg, cna mc s., pcl ]xkxk, Rwn/hkvh fcdhk ugwkxk aedgcnxk bhpnn l c/khghn`kvh mc fc/bx ncmhdcjgcncv vedxgck âHgghp Hvcl x Zb swncjxkvc dnhjv`β – pcvxskvc vc jcpnxtc dug menxgvxdxkx hdv`kghav`nv`r. Fxb ukghn`k phl `s`kh jwjwghk xnhvghnh [hmhf menl c; cbl xkvc vedxg; , dhgk`b Hgg`p`k sxtcj-gcnx fhncsxkvc x; x l c; jcfvc (Cpgx-fedj mc oi gcth l c; jcfvc) l zm[wv ughk xojxghtghn` fcdhk ejvx; mc 'zsjcnvx; ; x, pcn fxn l c; jcf Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkx zbgcnxkx oi swsx nc/dgcnx cshs`kvh l c/khghkv`n`ngn. Hgghp`k sxtcjgcnx fhncsxkvc xojxghtghn vh l cpb fw duggd dnhk`n.<sup>2</sup>

#### 4-|EDYCLFCNGCNXK SXTJGCNX FHNC SXKVC UGHK

##### XOJXGHTGHN MC UKWK LCKACDX

Fc/bx l i scgl hkghn \edycl fcngcnxk sxtcjgcnx fhncsxkvc fegc vedxngcn...â|edycl fcngcnxk cscngcnxkc jcfenni ; ejl c; , ukghn`k rcfnxkxk ugvwyw denx xfhvcj`hp rcnln menl c; axn; vxn, ukghn`k rcfngcnxkx jc/l xn ejl c; xsc axn; pcvvxkvcvx. Ukghn`k mc shxn Hgghp zmgxdhghn`k`k jcmggi v `i kgcnxkx fhdnhi ; e]xnl c; `i khp, phnhi mc fxv/cjvx. Fxn szbgc, Hgghpvhk fharh aedgcnxk mhsjcsxgc Ukwk vcn`hp`kh jmcssi g ejl c; axn; pcvvxkvcvx, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk mthj`kvk sukn ukw mcsxgc rcnln menl c; Xsghl acncjxkc l i ohgxtvx.<sup>β</sup>

Fw crxvckxk l i ohgxtgcnx ukghn`k [hmhf`kvh fegc vedxngcn...

h) |edycl fcngcnxk cscngcnxkc jcfenni ; ejl c;

Fi ji k pcvxs ; xjhfgghn`kvh l i jcmhjxn ac; xgvc redv ugwkwn ; x, |edycl fcnc scphfcgcnx u Pcbncjxk pcdhj`kvh mc egc u

<sup>1</sup> âJumpvx Scvwrβ, scp.111-112. Fxb ukw xojxshngh redv ejvx; . âFxpnhwgckmhnb, 3-[i [xgv, scp.31. pcvxs 14â al swgx : htxβ, jumpvx ; xjh`f, xfhgwn-nz/dcj fhf, pcvxs 2.

<sup>2</sup> Hgghp`k sxtcjgcnx fhncsxkvc l cnpwl : wgedkxkx â: htxβ, Aedo Scvwrwk âJumpvxβ mc âl dwkx cofhnb ; xjhfgghn`kh l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnsxkxb.

Pcbncjxk zbi ki k fxfnfah xsjcdx xgc ukwk cscngcnxkc jcfcnni ;  
evxn, fw ck/ckckx ukwk mcthj`kvhk suknh vh vhmhl  
ejvxnI xagcn. Ukwk vcgxcgcnxkvck fc/bxgcnxkx redv evxnx; ...

|EDYCLFCN ; -XK HY-B SWDWKH JCFCNNI : EJLC:

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc Scpg xfkx Scpg xfkx Sc/vvck ncmhdcj ugw-  
kwn ; x, u fegc vedxn...â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl ;

âOedfcñß rcbmcxkvc fwdwnvw..!

âFw fhdnh` shfhp egc fñ ; csxk cgxkc menc[cdcl ; x, Hgghp âOedfcñß ukwk  
cgx xgc tcjp evc[c; vxñ. U, Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgwkw semxn, Hgghp mc Ncswgw vh  
ukw semxngcn.ß

Nhmx vedxn... {hl hhj pcl xk 'e[ckx kx'hnhk]`g`rgh fhah  
mwnvwghn, phl `tx; xngcaxnvx ; x, 'zncsck, fhdnhr shfhp ; xl c  
menxgc[c; vxñ. Shfhp phl `g`rgh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ; -xk  
dhk`kh 'cgvxgn, pcn ; cs hnbw evxnvx ; x, fhdnhr ukh menxgsxk.  
Suknh |edycl fcn ; fwdwnvw...âCgx phnhvhv`n?ß Vevxgn  
; x, âdh Ncswgcgghp, ukwk 'zbi hyn`d`n, hyn`k`k axvvcjxkvck  
khgc evxn.ß |edycl fcn ; ukwk hnv`k[h fñ hvhl  
'zkvcnvx. Pcbncj Cgx 'cgvx; vck suknh |edycl fcn zb hyb`k`k  
swdwkvhk 'zji ni f ukwk 'zbgcnxkc ]c; vx. Ukwk 'zbgcnx egc  
shyhg`v ; x, shk; x i l wl xddcjc ukvh hyn` ugl hd`fv`n...ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw ncmhdcj âScpxpx Li sgi l ßvc Scgl cj xfkx C; mc/kxk  
vxgxkvck fegc kcrq ugwkwn...âCgxkxk dhk`kh 'cgvxl , 'znvi l ; x,  
u, axvvcjgx 'zb hyn`s`kh jwjwgf. Ukw |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh  
'cjxnvxl . Pcbncj |edycl fcn hyb`k`k swdwkw ukwk 'zbgcnxkc  
]c; vx mc fhdnh` ukwk cgxkc menvx.ß<sup>3</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -XK VCSJCLHB SWDWKH  
JCFCNNI :

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc Ckcs xfkx L hgx; vck kcrqck fegc ncmhdcj  
ugwkwn...âCsn khl hb`k`k mhoj` 'cgxf ]hjv`, [hl hhj vcsjcl hb  
i ]i k sw hojhnv`ghn, hl l h jh`h fxgl cvxgn. |edycl fcnx-

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, l cyhbx ; xjh`f, 3-[i [xgv, scp.35, : xjhfwg-[xphv, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.109, 111, 115, tcbxgw csphfxk-Kcfx ; xjh`f, l ckhrxfw Cgxddxfkx Cfx  
Jhgxf fh`f, 2-[x [xgv, scp.199, âScpxpx Li sgi l ß, tcbxgws-scpfhc ; xjh`f, tcbgw  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf fh`f, pcvxs 32 mc 34, rcbmcjw bx rxncv fh`f mc shxn  
fhfghn, 132-[x pcvxs. âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, l ckhrxf ; xjh`f, 13-[i [xgv, scp.172.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, vwhwk-Kcfx xgcg-xsghl fh`f, 2-[x [xgv, scp.107.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Li sgi l ß, [xphv mc sxdcn ; xjh`f, pcvxs, 123.

C; ncl i zbi ki k vcsjcl hb rhf` xgc fxngx; vc 'cgvx, zb cgxkx ukwk x]xkc rudvw mc [hl hhjh fwdwnvw...âVcsjcl hb hg`k!ß Fxnvck 'znvi l ;x, sw u pcbncjxk fhnl hrghn`k`k w[wkvhk ]eal c ;xl x tcmhnc mwnwn. {hl hhj vh ho`n`k[` kctcnc rcvcn ukvkh vcsjcl hb hgv`ghn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc {hfxn xfkx Cfvi ggghp`k fegc vevxdx kcrq ugwkwn... |edycl fcn i -gc fxngx; vc xvxl . Csn khl hb`k`k mhoj` ]hjv`, fxbxl swdwl wb hb vx. Ukw fxn rhfh jz; i f pcbncjxk dhk`kh 'cjxnvxcn. |edycl fcn zb cgxkx u rhfvh;` swdh shgv` mc fhnl hrghn`k` h]`f fwdwnvw... âVcsjcl hb hghkghn jcgssxkgn ;x, Hghp fcnc; cjh nj`n`n.ß Fxnvck u pcbncjxk fhnl hrghn`k`k hnhs`kvkh sw rhdkhl hyh fhaghv` mc phl `l `b pcl vcsjcl hb hgv`r, pcl vc ukvkh x]vx; . Fw l z/[i bc l ckvc u rcvcn jc/sxn rudvw ;x, fwkvkh suknh fxn vph ac; ; -ai fpcvc ugl hv`l mc fxgvxl ;x, fw edkxgc oedxn-fcnc; cjvxn.ß {hfxnvck sunwavwghn... âU 'i k sxb ke]c kctcn xvxb?ß Vevx... âL xk vzv di b kctcn vx; .ß (Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc âvzv di b kctcn vx; .ß - vedc [hmhf menvxdx redv ugwkwn.)<sup>2</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL i -XK JI : I KC JCFCNNI :  
EJLC:

L i sgi l zbi ki k âScpxpß ; xjhfkvh fegc kcrq evxn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i L xkhdh 'cgvx, rwnfhk ; csvx; vck mc ncl dx-[cl cnc cl cgxkx denxkc dejxnv; vck suknh zb fha`k` r`nov`nv` mc sh]`k`k ji ; gcnxkx [hl hhjh menvx.ß<sup>3</sup>/

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc kcrq evxn... âU pcbncj vcggcdx ]hy`nv` mc fha`k` r`nov`nv`. R`no`gl `a ji ; gcnxkx Cfw Jcgpdc menxf fwdwnvw...âFwkghn` [hl hhj hnhs`kvh fzgi avi n.ß<sup>4</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk Ckcs xfkx L hgx; vck fegc kcrq ugwkwn... â|edycl -

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ; xjhfwg-mi bw, 1-[x [xgv, scp.31

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ; xjhfwg-canxfc, 3-[i ]h\, scp.219æ âSi kckx Kcshxß, ; xjhfwj-jcphncj, 1-[x [xgv, scp.25æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.402æ âSi kckx Vhncl xß, Cfvi ggghp xfkx Zl cnvck kcrqck, 1-[x [xgv, scp.15

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, ; xjhfwg-pc[[, pcvxs, 323, 326æ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, l ckhsx; ; xjhfk, pcvxs, 1981æ âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 1-[x [xgv, scp.125æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.111, 137, 146, 208, 214, 239, 256, 287 mc 4-[i [xgv, scp.42æ âL cyhbß (Mhrxvx), scp.429

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhv

fcnx-C; ncl i fha`k` r`nov`n`nv`. Scphfcgc u pcbncjxk  
cjnht`k` jwj l wavwghn ; x, ukwk fha`kvhk vi ack pcn fxn ji ;  
ukghnvhk fxnxkxk cgxkc ]hjs`k.β<sup>1</sup>

âWsvwg-yhfcß ; xjh`kvh Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvxk jcn[i l edx-phg`  
redv ugwkhn; ck dhh`g`n... Xnhkg`ghn mc nwl gwghngh l i phnxfvcv  
oi swsx mc fcdckxgck nug xth evck Ohgxv Vcl carxk tcjpxkvc  
vzdi acn; ck |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk sh]`k`k ji ; i kvck  
fxn vckcsxkx zbi ki k 'e[c \h\hy`k`k x]xkc rudl wavw. L cpb  
fwkh 'znc vc pcl xac tcjp mc bctcngc rhd`v`nv`.β

Egc[c vc âWsvwg-yhfcß, âCg-xshfcß mc âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl β  
; xjhfgghn`kvh ukwk (Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvxk) jcn[i l edx-phg` acnp  
evxgc; ck fegc redv ugwkwn... âOhgxv xfkx Mcgxv âDcnl w; β  
l i phnxfcsxkvc zb vcfxgrcsxkx xjxnvx mc 'zsjcnxa menvx ; x, ukw  
hojhns`kghn. Cmmcg[c ukw jh`h fxgl cvxgc, gh; xk dekvck  
hojhnv`rvh, ukw jh`v`ghn mc 'znvi gc; x, ukwk x]xkvc  
; zpkcgl xa mc kxl vha fxn 'e[c \h\hy` mhnv`n. Ohgxv vevx..  
Ncswgx-C; ncl fxn xg i l nc cl cgxkx denxkc dejxnvx. Fha`k`  
r`nohk bhl hk [hl hhj u pcbncjxk fha`k`k ji ; gcnxkx d`yl hyh  
fhaghv`ghn. L ck u pcbncjxk hg`k ji ; gcnxkx 'zjini c; vc  
fharhghn`kvhk xncgx ; e]vxl mc zb \h\hy`l`k x]xkc rudvwl .  
Xkvx egc fxn l i phnxfvcv xajxnh; ejl xncl ; x, u \h`hr l ckxl gc  
ugvwrvh, rcgcfcdc khxg ugl hd`l .β<sup>2</sup>

Fwohnx fegc ncmhdcj evxn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk  
sh]`k`k ji ; gcnxkvck fxn ke]csx ukwk bzm[csx l l l i Scgc-  
l ckxk dhk`kvh vxv. Pcn mhoj fxn ; csc 'zb vcdxnvxsc, fxn rhf  
swdw ukwk (l l l i Scgcl ckxk) dhk`kh 'zkvcnvnv ; x, u ji ; gcnx  
swvh xsghjs`k mc 'zbi kc ocshncj vcdl xa acos acth jh`s`k.β<sup>3</sup>

l fedvc vedxn... âC`cn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk sh]`k`k fxn ji ; i  
l ckxl dhk`l vh ugshdv`, l ckxl i]i k vi kdh mc ukvh ughk  
pcn fxn aedvck vhph semxl gx ughnv`.β<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l β, ; xjhfwg-tcbhxg, scp.1812, pcvxs, 74

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl β, 3-[i [xgv, scp.299â Wsvwg-yhfcß mc âCg-xshfcß  
; xjhfgghn`kvh Ohgxvxk jcn[i l edx-phg`. Fw ncmhdcj oi ghsc ac; xgvc â: ckbi g-  
i l l hgß`k âL i skcvx Cpl cvßc ughk phaxdcxkvc, 5-[x [xgv, scp.178-vc mc  
Xfkx : csxnkx âJhnxoß ; xjh`kvh vh redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.27. (Fxb fwkw oi ghsc ac; xgvc redv ejvx; .)

<sup>4</sup> âJcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 6-[` [xgv, 63. âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.31.

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL ; -XK UOWKH JCFCNNI : EJLC:  
 Fwohnx âPi vedfxddcß si gpi fhncsxkvc ncmhdcj evcnc; fegc  
 vedxn... âNcswgx-C; ncl zb unvsw xgc fxngx; vc Pi vedfxddcckxk  
 ho`n jcnctgcxkvc, hb swdw ughk rwdwghn`k cjhnt`kvh vi acn`c  
 shgv`. {hl hhj rwdwghnh vuynw rh]v`ghn mc ukwk swdwkw jeb  
 fxn bhl hkvh ]c; xf rwnjhmv`ghn. Fxn hbvhk suknh swswbgwrvhk  
 |edycl fcnc ax; hdcj ejvxgc. |edycl fcn zb pedfcsxkvc fxn uo  
 ]`ohnjv` mc fwdwnvw ; x, ukw rwdwkwk x]xkc hjs`kghn. Hgghph  
 hkv ugsww ; x, rwdw vcnphg rhdkhl hyh fhaghv` mc unhvhk ; z]  
 evckc rcvcn ukghn`k phl `s`k` swswbgwrvhk rwnjhmv`.ß¹

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL ; -XK CGXKXK DENXKC JCFCNNI :  
 EJLC:  
 âCg-xshfcß mc âLi skcvx Cpl cvß ; xjhfgghn`kvh Pckbcgckxk  
 jcn[i l edx-phg` acnp evxgck fzgl cvc Pckbcgckxk fegc vevxdx  
 ncmhdcj ugwkwn... âFhfhl l ckx |edycl fcxk dhk`kh h`hn`f  
 vevx... Lckxl pcl fzdi ; , pcl vc ; x]x; uyghkghn`l mhnv`n, fw  
 ukghn`k ck ; x]xdvxn, ukwk i ]i k vwh evxk. |edycl fcn cgxkx  
 l ckxl fha`l h ]c; cnc; âHgghp sckc fcnc; cj mensxk!ß, dhowv âu  
 fcnc; cjgxvxn!ß vedc fwdwnvw.ß  
 Nhmx vedxn... Zb `zbgnxl gc `znvi l ; x, i bi axal xa hvhl ` ,  
 dhowv vzagcnx axal xa pedmhk` Pckbcgckxk dhk`kh `cjxnxvxgc,  
 u vh hyb`k`k swdwkw cgxkc si nji f âfxsl xgghpß vedxn mc ukw  
 zb fha`kh rudnhhr vedxnvx... âFw |edycl fcx-C; ncl ; -xk  
 cgxkxk denxvx.ß Suknh cgxkx axal xa denc ]c; xnvx mc axa vcnphg  
 ]c; xgxf `evxnvx.ß² âCg-xshfcßvc fegc redv ugwkwn... âU, (Pckbcgc)  
 âfxsl xgghpß vedxf zb cgxkx |edycl fcxk cgxkx denxkc  
 rudwnvw, unh l csp evxf suknh cgxkx axal xa denc ]c; xnvx mc  
 ukwk axax vcnphg ]c; xgxnvx.ß  
 Fcgx, u pcbncjxk oedxn-fcnc; cjx `i kca kwnwkh fckbcdxnvx,  
 cjxngx ]x]c; gcxkx xdgcnx ; xl x cjhth dhd`g`nv`, wahrg`rvh mc  
 fzdi ; gi ; vc, sctcnvc mc rednx-sctcnvc, `e[cvc mc `i kvi bvc (fw

¹ âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ; xjhfwai-nwj, 2-[x [xgv, scp.81æ l cyhbx ; xjhF, Pi vedfxddc rcbmcx fhF, âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, scp.29 mc 1-[x [xgvxk 1-[x pxsscsx, scp.188æ âL cyhbxß (Mhrxvx), scp-247.

² âLi skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.68. Fwkwx cjhthg`xbhp` âCg-xshfcßvc Pckbcgc xfkx Pi bedl Pi kedtc Jcl xl xkxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

cjxn) pe] mhoj u pcbncjvck hdn`gl `nv`. Xsjcn ukwk si v hkhs`  
Pcgxl c Sc/vxddckxk oedl csxkvc ughkvh, xsjcn jx[hncj  
l crscvxcg Ahl sctcnxkc 'evckvc, xsjcn px[ncj evcn; ck l l l i  
Lc/fcvxk oedl csxkvck ;e]ckvc, xsjcnc vc Lcvxkvc  
ph; xl xddcj ; i nsi si kvc cdgcackvc.

Hdv`kv`n ; x, fxbxl fwnhvh redv ejvx; gcxl xb shvc[c ki -  
l wkc i ]i k 'cjxnxgxf, c; s phgvh ukghn`k phl `s`k` shvhghd`f  
rwnjnhn fxgl cnx; . } i k; x fi ji k fw l z/[i bcgcnxk phl `s`k`k  
fxn-fxn shvhghk`f rwnjhn`gl hs` pe] ; csxk xl ; hk` vhoxgxkvc  
vedxgvxn. Redv ugwkhhkghn vh shyghl mc fcsxncjgx rcgfc, eavvck  
rwghyh l hgx; ughkghn i ]i k ; xthdcjvxn.

Suknh;` fcpsxl xbvc |edycl fcx-C; ncl i -vck acthcj  
xsjcl cdxk mc ukw Hgghp vcn'hp`kvh mhsxjc rcnln menl cdxk  
rhkwkx fxn xa ugl hs`k` fcdhk evc[c; , suknH Hgghp`k ; zl cdx  
xgc |edycl fcx-C; ncl i -xk shxn xkshkghn ughk i sji k-  
gi ; mc xl jxdhbghn`kvhk fc/bxgcnxkxk fhncsxkvc ughk xojxght`k  
l ckacdxxk hnhav`nh[hy`r.

f) |edycl fcx i -x Hgghp vcn'hp`kvh acthcj]x rcnln menl c;

|edycl fcx-C; ncl i -c jcmcssi g ejl c; , ukw Hgghp  
vcn'hp`kvh mhsxjc rcnln menl cdxk [hxbgxdxkc mc acn/x fxn xa  
ugvwywkh xkhkhkghn fi ji k vzmngcnvc fegc vel xagcn... Fw ; xl x  
jcmcssi ggcx pcl |edycl fcx-C; ncl i -xk oxgrcjxkvck  
cmmcg, pcl ukwk pcdhj`kvh, pcl vc mthj`kvhk suknH  
Hgghp`k nhb`g`y` xgc denxkc dejxnxgx. Rxdhl cj 'i ki kc rcvxn vc  
hahy`vh;` vcgxggcnc 'znc vhmhl evc[c; vxn...

1- |edycl fcxk oxgrcjxkvck cmmcg ukh jcmcssi g evxgl csx

Pcvxs nhmxgcnxkvck fxn rnw`w, u [i l gcvck Ph; xl zbi ki k  
âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh`f`kvh Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhfvhk fegc kcr g evxn...  
âHvcl <sup>TM</sup> sh\l hghnh l c/nwb rhghk bhl hk cnb ejvx... â|cnmcn-  
vx'hnh! Sckvck xsjcdxn mc Sckx L i pcl l cv mc Hgx-L i pcl -  
l cvxk phrr`kh hkv menxncl ; x, l ckx fhy`aghdhshk.ß Hgghp-  
jhhgh fwdwnvw... âEd Hvcl ! Sck L i pcl l cvx ke[c jhk`v`k,  
phgfw; x Lck pcgc ukw dnhhl hl `ahl ?ß Hvcl cnb ejvx...  
â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckx dnhhv`f Zb nwpwkvhk l ck c menvdxk  
bhl hk fha`l ` rhgv`n`f 'znv l ; x, cnaxk si jwkghn`kvh fegc  
dhb`g`f... âGh xghpc xggcgghp, L wpcl l cvwk Ncswgwgghp.ß Fw  
bhl hk fxgvxl ; x, Sck Zb fckvcgcnxk x]xkvc ck ]uo

semvxdxkvck fharhs`k`k hv`k` Zb hv`k`k dhk`kvh rcnbn  
menl cbsck.β Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnvw... âVi b vevxk, ed Hvcl ! U,  
Lckxl dnhhjv`rghn`l`k x]cnxsxkvc ck semxl gx fckvcl vxn.  
Lckx ukwk phrr`kh hkv menxf ]hy`n ; x, sckx fhy`aghv`l . C`cn  
Lwpcl l cv ugl hshdv`, sckx dnhhj l hbv`l .β Fw pcvxsx Jcfc-  
nhkx vc zb ; xjh`kvh redv evcnc; fegc fxn [i l gckx vc cghmc  
ejl xavxn... âU, sckxk kcsgxkvck ughk ho`n`k[` \edycl fcn ugh-  
[hr.β<sup>1</sup>

Li pcvvsxgc n mc l i tcssxngcn âFcrncβ swncsxkxk 89-[w  
hdcsxkxk...

﴿وَلَمَّا جَاءَهُمْ كِتَابٌ مِّنْ عِندِ اللَّهِ مُصَدِّقٌ لِّمَا مَعَهُمْ وَكَانُوا مِن قَبْلُ يَسْتَفْتِحُونَ عَلَى الَّذِينَ

كَفَرُوا فَلَمَّا جَاءَهُمْ مَا عَرَفُوا كَفَرُوا بِهِ فَلَعْنَةُ اللَّهِ عَلَى الْكَافِرِينَ﴾

jctsnxkvc fegc ncmhdcl ejl xagcn.2 âLcvxkc mc Oedfcn  
dcpwvxgcnx fe/scjvck rhfhr pcn mhoj zbgcnxkxk cncf mc  
l i anx; rukawghn` xgc, Ums, Ocbnc[ mc shxn ; xl x rcfxgcgcngc  
vzdi ascdvxgc, cghl cj mc kxahkcgcnxkx Jzmnhjv`h uowvwrghn`  
|edycl fcnxk hv` xgc ukghnh rcgcfc ]hgh[hrghn`k` vedxn mc  
rcgcfc vc ]hg`nv`ghn, suknh ; htxngcnc rhny`a evcnc; vedxnvxgc...  
â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Xkvx |edycl fcnxk phrr`kh hkv menxf Sckvck  
xsjcdxnx; ; x, fxbx ukghnh rhgxf evcsck.β Dhowv fegc vedxnvxgc...  
â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Sckxk |edycl fcnxkxk xsl xkc hkv menxnx; , fxbx  
ukghnh rhgxf ejl!β<sup>3</sup>

Gh; xk Hgghp`k : xjh`f ughk Rwn/hkx-: cnxl , fharh szbgc, Jzm-  
nhj` mc Xk[xgx jcsvxrgcdck ; xjh`f 'zbcg ac; xgvc jhk`v`rghn` mc  
csg h ac; ; -ai fpc ejl cvx; gcnx fxn acosxk, dc/kx pcbncj Li pcl -  
l cvxk jcnctxkvck ukghnh 'cgvxdx bhl hk ukh rhna` ; htxn ugwf  
jc; bxf ejvxgc. } i k; x u \edycl fcn Fckx-Xsnhxgvck vedxgvx!<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âLi sjcvnc; x Ph; xl β, 2-[x [xgv, scp.615â âLc[l ci b-bcmhxvβ, 8-[x [xgv,  
scp.253, âCk-ki bncjβ ; xjh`f`k`k jcprrhj]]`s` Lcnhyxkxk ; xjh`f kvh (816-[` xgvc  
mcthj evxf), scp.113-114, Jcfcnhkxvck kcrgek.

<sup>2</sup> âMc Hgghp jcnctxkvck ukghnh fxn ; xjh`f 'cgvx, phgfw;x ukghn`k zbgcnxkvc ughk kxahkcgngc  
l imhtxr vxv, fwkvhk cmncg vc zbgcnxk tcjp fhncvc l i qvc menxnvxgc (;x, ukwk ; zl cdx xgc  
vial ckgcnc rhgxf 'cgsxkcn). Hl l h cmncg[cvck jhk`v`rghn` ; xjh`f mc |edycl fcn ukghnh vuyrv  
'cgvx; vc ukghnh rhna` ; htxn ugvwghn. Hgghp`k gc/kcix ; htxngcnc ugswk!β

<sup>3</sup> Ncmhdcljgcncvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, ukghn fw ; xl x vwhghngh Hgghp-jhhghvhk  
xsjcdxn mc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -c jcmcssi g evxnvxgc.

<sup>4</sup> Fw ncmhdcljgcnc redv ejvxdxl xb l cbl wk cshs`kvh l i jcmhxnvx n mc fw  
; xjh`fghnv redv ugwk l wavwn... âVcgxgw-k-ki fi mmcjβ (Fedpcrx), scp.342-343-



2-Pcdhj` vzmnikvc |edycl fcnc jmcssig ejl c;

Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcg, Jxnl xbx, Xfkx Lh[c mc Fedpcrx Usl hk xfkx Pi kedtvck fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... : un fxn ;xax |edycl - fcnxk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx... âHgghpvhk xsjc, l ckc acth mensxk.ß |edycl fcnc fwdwnvw...âC'cn xsjcsck vwh evcncl , xsjcsck vc sc-fxn evcnscck ;x, fw sckxk i ]i k vhph dhoe`v`n.ß U vevx... âVwh evxk.ß |edycl fcnc fwdwnvw... âVcsjcl hb hg, vcsjcl hb` dhoe` ac; xgvc hg`f fw vwhk` uow...

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْأَلُكَ وَأَتَوَجَّهُ بِنَبِيِّكَ مُحَمَّدٍ نَبِيِّ الرَّحْمَةِ يَا مُحَمَّدُ إِنِّي تَوَجَّهْتُ بِكَ إِلَى رَبِّي فِي حَاجَتِي لِتُقْضَى لِي اللَّهُمَّ شَفْعَةً فِيَّ

Fw ncmhdcjx Fedpcrx mc Jxnl xbx scpxp sckcvgx pcvxsgcnvck peshf ejl xagcn.<sup>1</sup>

3-|edycl fcnxk mthj`kvkh suknh ukh jmcssig ejl c;

Jcfcnhxx âLz/[cl i g;- cfxnß ; xjhfkvh Usl hk xfkx Pi kedtvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âFxn kctcn zb ph[cjx i ]i k Usl hk xfkx Ctthk`k dhk`kh 'cgxf-'evxnvx, hl l h Usl hk ukwk xsjc; gcnxkc e/jxkh ejl xnvx. U ;xax Usl hk xfkx Pi kedtx 'znvi mc l zm[wv mcbxddcjvck ax; hdcj ejvx. Usl hk ukh vevx... âVcsjcl hbohkhdh 'evxf vcsjcl hb hg, suknh l cs[xvc 'cgxf x; x nc; /cj khl hb r`g mc fw vwhk` uow...

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْأَلُكَ وَأَتَوَجَّهُ إِلَيْكَ بِنَبِيِّنَا مُحَمَّدٍ نَبِيِّ الرَّحْمَةِ يَا مُحَمَّدُ إِنِّي أَتَوَجَّهُ بِكَ إِلَى رَبِّي لِتُقْضَى حَاجَتِي

Fw bhl hk ph[cjxk ncmh ugwkhn.ß

U ;xax Usl hk xfkx Pi kedtxk vevx; gcnxkc cl cg ejvx; vck suknh ocgxtc Usl hk`k emxkc 'cgvx. : eax; ]x ukwk cgxkvck jwjnhnr Usl hk`k l c[gsxkc h`hmv`. Usl hk ukw fxn vzacdxk i sji kvc ujwnvwf vevx... âKc xsjcdxnsck?ß U, l crscvxxk fcdhk

345â âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, pcl xk hdcxk jctsnxkvc, âJctsnx Kxah`wnxß, Jcfcnxkx phaxdcxkvc, 1-[x [xgv, scp.233, âLi sjevnc; x Ph; xl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.263, âJctsnx Si dwjxß, Cfw Kcxl xk âVcghxgw-k-i fi mmcjß ; xjhfkvhk kcrqck, Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfvx Pcl xvxx âJctsnxß, Cfv i n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfx Phjcl xfkx Xvnxs Nhbxxk âJctsnxß, Lcpcl l cv xfkx Xfnhpxl xfkx Li kbcn Kxah`wnxkxk âJctsnxß (531-[x xgvc mthj ejl xavxn).

<sup>1</sup> Vwhk`k jcn[i l csx fegcvxn... â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Lck Sckxk ncpl cj |edycl fcnxk Lipcl l cvxk mhsxjcsxgc vcn`hp`kh 'cgxf Sckvck xsjcdxnccl . Ed Lipcl l cv! Lck zb ph[cjxl xk Hgghp jcnctxkvck ncmh evxgl csx i ]i k sckxk dhk`kh 'cgl xacl mc sckx mhsxjc rcnbn menl xacl ;x, ph[cjxl ncmh ugswk. |cnmcnvx`hnh, ukw l ckl acthcj]xl mc mcsxgc rcnbn menlß

ejvx. Usl hk vh ukwk ph[cjxkx denxkc dejxnvx mc vevx...âCghmc pcn kc epjxdh[<sup>1</sup>k ugsh, ve.β<sup>1</sup>

4-|edycl fcn ; -xk cl xsx Hffhsh jcmcssi g

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc fegc kcrq ugwkwn... Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf pcn mhoj rcpcjgxdc vi ]hn ugwnvwsh, Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jcgxfx (Hggp vcn'hp'kvh) acthcj]x rcnln mencnc; vedxnvx... â|cnmcn-vx'hnh! Fxb cmmcgcn Sckxk |edycl fcnxkx mhsjc rcnln mencnc; Sckxk vcn'hp'kh 'cgxnvx; , Sck vc fxbc dhy`a khbxg evcnc; fxb sxnhf fwdwnvwk. Xkvx |edycl fcnx xbxk cl xsxkc jcmcssi g evcnc; Sckxk vcn'hp'kh 'cgxnx; . Sck vc fxbc dhy`a khbxg evxf fxb sxnhf ej.β Nhm x vedx...âFwkvhk sukn dhy`a dhy`nv`β<sup>2</sup>

Hdv`kv`n ; x, |edycl fcnxk cl xsx fharh [cpcjgcnc 'znc vedxg, l cpb u pcbncjxk cl xsx ugvywkh 'znc acthcj]x rcnln menxgxnvx.

|edycl fcnx C;ncl ; -xk si kkcsxkvc fw ; xl x pcvxs-gcnxk mhg`y` xgc fegc, shxn \edycl fcngcnxk, oi swsxc Ohjcl i g-Ckfxdh pcbncj L i pcl l cv ; -xk sxtcjcgnx, ukghn`k shn xkshkghn ughk i sji kgi ; mc l cbxddcjcgnx fhncsxkvc xojxght ejl c; ghdxr vedxgvxn. Hl l h âkc i ]i k fw fhncvc xojxght ug-l wavwnß swhg`kh 'cgvx; vc xsc, 'cgck fcpsgcnc fwkwk scfcf-gcnxkx mc fw l cscgcvc 'i vi gck cshs l crscvcgnx fcdhk evc-[cdx; .

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL ; -XK SXTCJGCNX XGC CGHRCVHN  
XOJXGHT-K LCKACDX

|edycl fcngcnxk sxtc mc oi swsxddcjcgnxgc cghrcvhn kcrq ugwkxk l i jcmhjxn pcvsgcnxk ha; hn fcdhk` xgc dhkha`, fegc fxn swhg dhnk`n ; x, 'zncsck, ukghn`k fhncsxkvc ughk xojxghtghn`k l ckacdx kcvxn?

{hmhf fwvwn ; x, fxb \edycl fcngcnxk di ; sc; l crhl mc l ckbxgcjcgnxkx, pcjjh hvx [hl hhjvhk vh hahy` scmddcdc 'cjxnl c; i ]i k vi bcgvxgxf dhd`ghk shojh pcvsgcnc vcnxkvck vxrrcj dejxnvx; vc, l c/gwl ugwn ; x, fw ; xl x ncmhdcjcgn, ukghn rcgfck e/jxrhv fcsgcdckgcnc oi swsx fxn e/jxrhv dhnv`n ; x, ;e]l xa ncmhdcjcgnxk l cbl wkw xgc fxnfah bxvvxddcj jca; xg

<sup>1</sup> âJcprxri k-ki bncjß, scp.114-115, Jcfcnhkxkxk âL z/[cl i g-; cfxnß ; xjh`kvhk kcrqck.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ; xjhfwg-xsjxsrh mc ; xjhfw tcbxgw csphfwk-Kcfx, 1-[x [xgv, scp.124 mc 2-[x [xgv, scp.200 âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.352

evxn. Fxb szbi wbjl hl hr i ]i k ukghn`k x]cnxsxkvck |eycl -  
fcnx-C; ncl i -xk fhncsxkvc ughk dhgk`b fxn ke]c ncmh-  
dcjx redv ejl c; gc ; xthdcjgckxnx; . Fegc ; x, pcl xk l xrvhn`k  
i bcnxkvc vc vcnxkvck vi ai ki gl csx fcsxncj shpxfgcnx i ]i k  
; xthdcjvx.

Fwohnx mc Cpl cvk ncmhdcjx

Ukghn (Fwohnx mc Cpl cv) vedxngcn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
i , ukh mcpd khbxg ugl hbvkh rhfhr fxn 'i k Bedv xfkx  
Cl n xfkx Kwtedgxk rhfhy`kh si tnc shgv`. Pcl xk si tncvc cj vc  
mhn xv. Bedv ukw del c; vck xl jxkh evcnc; vevx... âL ck Hggh-  
p`k hv` ]c; xgl cvck ; csxgck pedmhkghn`k cjxkvck del cncl !<sup>1</sup>

Fwnhvhk fegc ]`o`n ; x, Bedv [hpxgddcj vzmni kvc |edycl -  
fcnx-C; ncl i -vck i sji k xl xaæ ]i k; x u, [hpxgddcj vzm-  
ni kc l cosws ughk hvcjgcnvck ]c; xkxn, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xsc  
]c; xkl xnvx!

Fwohnxkx mc L i sgi l i k ncmhdcjx

Ukghn kcrj evxnvxgc ; x, pcbncj { cfnhxg <sup>TM</sup>

﴿أَفِرُّ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ الْإِنْسَانَ مِنْ عَلَقٍ ۚ اقْرَأْ وَرَبُّكَ الْأَكْرَمُ الَّذِي عَلَّمَ بِالْقَلَمِ﴾

hdcgcnxkx |edycl fcnc khbxg evck bhl hk |edycl fcnxk  
]xdxkgcnx jxjnci cdc fhaghv`, egc fw phgvh emc rhd`v`f Ocvx-  
[cdc vevx... âL ck zb [hk`l vkh runownhl !<sup>2</sup> Ocvx[c ukh vevx...  
âFegc vedxgl Sckc l i qvc ugsww, Hgghph hkv ugsww, U sckx pe]  
mhoj ohn ejl cb.ß Ukw Mcncrcj xfkx Kutcgxk dhk`kh h`hvn`. (U,  
[hpxgddcj vzmni kvc l csxpx vxkxkvc xv.) |edycl fcn zb  
'znvi ; gcnxkx ukh vevx; vc, Mcncrcj vevx... âFw, L wshdh khbxg  
ughk pcl xk âkhl wsßvwn.<sup>2</sup>

Fwkvhk vh fegc ]`o`n ; x, l csxpx vxkxkvc ughk Mcncrcj xfkx

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, bcfhdep ; xjh`f, 3-[i [xgv, scp.207â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß,  
2-[x [xgv, scp.69 mc 86, Bedv xfkx Cl n xfkx Ki tedg ocgxtc Zl cnxk cl xsx  
uygw mc ukwk rhd`khjhs` xv. Ukwk uygw Scxvxk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjd/hfß  
; xjh`f kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, fcv/i g-mcpd fh`f, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3, âXrnc/ß swncsxkxk  
jctsnxæ âScpxpx L i sgi l i ß, xl hk ; xjh`f, pcvxs, 253â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[`  
[xgv, scp.223 mc 233. Fwnhvh ukwk oi ghscsxkx redv ejvx; . Fxb |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl i -xk fe/scjx xgc cghrcvhn ughk ncmhdcjgcnx (ukghn pcvxs mc jct-  
sx; xjh`fghn`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn) âXl hl ghn`k vxkxk vxn]cgvxl csxkvc  
ughk nuggn`ß ; xjh`f`k`k vznavi k[i pxsscsxkvc hnhav`nl `a mc vi b`i k  
ncmhdcjgcnx redv ejl xax; .

Kutcg mcpd mc {cfnhxg xgc cghrcvhn l cscgcgcncvc mcpdxk  
fxnfah vxkgcdx[xsx ughk |edycl fcnc kxsfcjck vph h'hpv`n  
mc |edycl fcn Mcncrcjxk szbgcnxkvck jc/sxngckcnc; zbi kvc fxn  
kzm hnohd`kg`r pxss ejvx. Fegc ;x, c'cn Mcncrcjxk fw szbgcnx  
ugl hshdv`, XfKx Sc/vxk âJcfcrrhjßvh ncmhdcj ejvxdxkc 'znc,  
|edycl fcn zbi ki vhyvhk hjh[hrv`! Jcfcnxkxk dnbv`y`kh 'znc  
xsc |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âFw l cpm ughk (u, zbi ki kcbcnvc  
jwjwnvw) dh ahxnvxn, dh vh l c[kwkvwne l ckxl fw phgcjxl  
pe] mhoj Ri nedaxk vxggcnxkc vi al cl cgxvxn!ß¹

Fwohnx mc Lisgilik ncmhdcjx

Ukghn vedxngcn ;x, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl j densxb rc-  
bcfgckxn, gc/kcj evxn mc szdi a szdi nvi, ghdxrx ugl hv`y` acos-  
gcnc cbhf-cbxddcj menxnvx. U, Hgghpvhk xsjcl xavx ;x, ukw, fw  
xagcnc pcvct ughk acosgcnc i ]i k bc; hj mc \h; xbcgx; rcnbn men-  
sxk.²

UKGHN FEGC NCMHDCJ EJLXAGCN...

âDcpwvxgcncvck fc/bxgcnc |edycl fcnc egc sepn ejl xavxgcnc ;x,  
fxn xax 'znl cvxdx phgvh pcl xk xax 'znvi di ki jcscmmi n evxn-  
vx.ß³

Lisgilik ncmhdcjx

U, fegc vedxn... â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl j ownl h hyh[ghn`-  
k` jubghkv`nl hyh l caywg ughk fxn rzml i k dhk`kvhk ;e]ckvc  
vevx... âC'cn ukghn` jubghkv`nl hshk`b, vphh dhoo` ugh[hrghn.ß  
Ukghn jubghkv`nl h cl cgxddhj`k` vhdhkv`nv`ghn mc ukghn`k  
ownl hghn`kh fcgh 'cgvx. |edycl fcn vevx... âSxb zb vi kdh  
xagcnxkxbx vphh dhoo` fxgxnsxkxb.ß⁴

Pcl ]xkxk, fegc ncmhdcj ejl xagcn...

â|edycl fcn ckshnvhk ughk r`bghn`k hmhb scsxkc rwghr

¹ âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1150.

² âScpxpx Fwohnxß, vc/mcj ;xjhF, |edycl fcnc szbgcnx fhF, âl ck  
hbcjwpxß pxsscsxæ âScpxpx Lisgilik, cg-fxnnw mcs-sxgc ;xjhF, l ck gcckcpwk-  
Kcfxdd mc gedsc gcpw cpgck fhF.

³ âScpxpx Fwohnxß, fcv/wg-ocgr ;xjhF, sxtcjw Xfgxs mc [i kwvwp fhF,  
cjxxff ;xjhF, pcg dcsjconx[w sepnck fhF, cvcf ;xjhF, âxkkcgghpc dc/l wnw  
fxg-cvg fhF, vccmhj ;xjhF, jc; nxnvw-vwh fhFæ âScpxpx Lisgilik, sepn fhF.

⁴ âScpxpx Lisgilik, tcbhxg ;xjhFæ âSi kckx xfkx Lh[cß, jcgrxpwk-kcog  
fhF.

hs`nv`, Cfw Fc;n ukghn` rumvw.ß<sup>1</sup>

L i sgi l fegc ncmhdcj evxn...

â|edycl fcn Hdxackx zb ]dxkxc l xkvxnl xavx ;x, l cs[xvvc  
ki l hdx 'zsjcnck pcfcaxcnc jhl hah ejxk. Zl cn ukghn` rum-  
vw.ß<sup>2</sup>

Jxnl xbx fegc vedxn...

â"zbgckxgl cvck Zl cn bhpvn ugvw mc [hl hhj vcnphg vhy`-  
g`av`. |edycl fcn vevx...â"zni ncl ;x, xkshkghnvhk mc [xkgcnvck  
ughk aedjhkghn Zl cnvck rhj`n.ß<sup>3</sup>

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc dxb`n...â|edycl fcn rcbmcgcnxk  
fxnxkvck rhd`vhkv rhnh vcnxgx fxn ;ckxb vct ]hg`f uowdwnvw.  
Zl cn vhoxg ugwf pcl xk vctx hgv`, zb hgj`kh rudwf i sji kvc  
ujwnvw. |edycl fcn vevx...âZl cn! Pcrxrcjck, Aedjhk sckvck  
runown!ß<sup>4</sup>

FWOHNX MC L I SGI L HDXACVCK FEGC NCMHDCJ EVXNGCN...

â|edycl fcn l cs[xvvc fxn ;xaxkxk rxnhcjxkx eavxf vevx...  
âHghp fw ;xaxdc ncpl cj ejxk! Lck txghk swncxk txghk hdc-  
gcnxkx wkwj l wavwl , fw ;xax l ckxl dhv`l h shgv`!ß<sup>5</sup>

Redv ugwkhkghnvhk fegc ]`o`n ;x...

Ocgxtc Zl cnxk cl x ugwsw Bedv xfkx Cl n xfkx Ki tedg  
Hghpvhk, |edycl fcnvck vc hnj`r runownvwæ u, fi jcn i ]i k  
rwnfhkg`r evxgck cjgcnx del c;vck xl jxkh evxnvx, phgfw; x  
|edycl fcn ukghnvhk dedxnv!

L csxpx vxkxk rcfwg ejl xa Mcncrcj xfkx Kutcg |edycl fcnxk  
dhk`kh 'cgck acosk {cfnhxg ugvwykw vcn; evxnvx, gh;xk  
|edycl fcn ukw jhk`l hl `a mc [xk ugh[hy`kvhk runol wavw.  
Pcl ]xkxk, fegc jcscmmi n ejl xavx ;x, âXrnc/ß swncsxkxk xg;

---

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnß, tcbxgw csphfxk-Kcfxdd ;xjh`f mc edvedk ;xjh`fæ  
âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, scghjwg-edvedk ;xjh`f, fhfwn-nwoscjx tx gc/fx duml xg-edv.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, scghjwg-edvedk ;xjh`f, cn-ni oscjw tx gc/f fhf, 18-22-  
[x pcvxsgcn

<sup>3</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, cfmhfwg-l ckhrxf, l ckhrxfw Zl cn fhf.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvhæ pcl ]xkxk âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.252. Fxb fw  
ncmhdcjgcnx âXl hl ghn`k vxkxk vxn]cgvxgl csxkvc;x nugwß ;xjh`f k`k 2-5-[x  
pxsscgcgnxkvc 'cjxncnc; ukghnvhl zm[wv ughk xnhvghn` hnhav`nl `a`r.

<sup>5</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnß, acphvcj ;xjh`fæ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, tcbxgw Rwn/hk  
;xjh`f, pcvxs, 224æ âSi kckxk Cfx Vhmwvß, jcjcmmz/ ;xjh`f, 1331-[x pcvxs,  
;xjhfwg-pi nwt, pcvxs 3970

hdcgcnx [xkgcnxk rhtxdcgcnxkvck ugh fxcgn.

Dcpwvxgcnxk sepnx |edycl fcnc u rcvcn jc/sxn evxn ;x, pe] fcn xa 'znl cvxdx phgvh fcn xa 'znvi di ki jcscmmi n evxn.

|edycl fcnc-C; ncl j Rwn/hk`k fc/bx hdcgcnxkx wkw-vwn, scphfcgcnvck fcnx ukghn` uowdhk bhl hk ukw ohj`nghd`n.

|edycl fcnc 'wdh 'zsjcnxa menxn ;x, ownl h hyh[ghn`k` jubghk-v`nl hs`kghn, zbgcnx fhngkhs`k. Hl l h ocshncj vcdck bhl hk ukghnh vedxn ;x, sxb vi kdh xagcnxkxhc l ckvck vc h'hps`k`b.

L csxpx r`bghn`k`k l hpk` scsgcnxkc rwghr hs`n, phgfw; x Cfw Fc; n fw xax ouaghl `næ pcl vc Zl cnc vedxn ;x, aedjkh (l ckvck vedxg) sckvck tcnhnxvxn!

Fw mc fw ;xl x shxn pcvxsgcnvck fegc ]`o`n ;x, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl j [hpxgddcj vzmni kvc Bedvck l crhl `kvhk vh hahy` fcn l crhl vh ugl wa, Xsghl `rcfwg ejvx; vck suknh vh l csxpx vxkxkvc ughk Mcncrcj mcpd mc {cfnhxg ;xl x l csc-gcgnc |edycl fcncvck vhph hnj`r h'hp xl xa! Cfw Fc; ngc Zl cn |edycl fcnc kxsfcjck gcpm-gcxfvck, cfcs aedgcnvck vhph juo wbhr ugwnl wa. |edycl fcncx wkwjvwyw fcn hdckx jxghmcj evck scphfckxk phtxhc ri mmsx |edycl fcncvck vhph 'i [gi xl xa. Ukghn vel c; xsjcdxngcn ;x, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl j vc shxn xkshkghn ;xl xvxn... Hgghp ukw dcpwvxgcnxk udwk-udwk[hrghn`k-vhk, sepngcnxkvck hl hkvh shoghl hl `av`n! U, rcbcfgckxf gc/kc-jc ghdxr ugl hdhk acosgcnx gc/kcjgcdxn mc ukghn` szdi n!!

Hdv`kv`n ;x, pcn ;cs fw pcvxsgcnxk vi b'i kgi di kc xl hk 'c]xnsc, ukwk nwpwkvh dnhkhk dhkg`a jcscmmi n pcbncj Ohjc-l i g-Ckfxdh L i pcl l cv Lwscjhth j -xk zbi kcl cosws sxtc]gcnx fhncsxkvc cmmcgvc redv ugwkhh ncmhdc]gcnxk l cbl wkw xgc jhl jcbhv jca; xg evc[c; vxn. Phgfw; x u pcbncj zbi ki k l hgx; ugvwyyw sukswb hgx-xkshkx tcbxgc]gcngc shxn xkshkghnvhk se]xgx. Fwkh 'znc vc cmmcgvc redv ejvxdxl (mc bhpncx

---

<sup>11</sup> Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk pcvxsgcnx egc fcn 'zni a dnhv`n ;x, xkshk |edycl -fcnc-C; ncl j -xk xghpx l crhl mc l ckbxgc]xkx hvx xkshkghn`k l crhl l `kvhk vh hahy` jcscmmi n evxn. Oiswsxgc, shojh pcvxsgcnvck âYcnhkxrß ctshkcsxkx redv ejl c; ughn ;x, fxb ukwk fhjxg ugl hs`k` âXl hl ghn`k vxkxk vxn]cgvxgl csxkvc; x nugwß ;xjh`k`k 4-[i pxssc]xkvc fcdhk ejl xax; . Fw ;xl x shojh pcvxsgcnvck mcpdvc mc Rwn/hkvh ai fpc jcgrxk ugwk l hs`k`k l i l - ;i kgi di xncgx 'cgxn. Acnrai khs rcnfgxgcnc vc zbgcnxkxk xsghl x jcprxrhj-ghn`kvh oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk pcvxsgcnxkc xsjxkhv evxngcn, Cpgx-fedj ☼ l c; jcfxkxk pcvxsgcnxkc xsc, i l wl xddcjgc, e/jxkh ejl xngcn.

zbi ki hgxl peshf evck) u scwvxddcgx ; xaxkxk (fegc pcvxsgcnxk cshs`kvh) åL i pcl l cv vc l ckxl ; xl x fxn xkshk xv x mc zgi f 'evxfß – vel cdc phrr` mhnv`n!

Fwkx vh redv evc; ; x, u tcbxgcjgcngc bxv vxddcgx 'zni a x[hv evck fegc pcvxsgcn ocgxtc Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k 'znvi di xagcnvxn. Fegc ; x, u, zbi ki k acosx nc/dx mc x[jxphv` xgc Pi ved-fxddcvc; x hyh[` ; z; i kvck ]`ohnv`f hjl `av`, phgfw; x, u hyh[`k hgj`kvh |edycl fcnge fed/cj ugwkl wavw.<sup>1</sup>

Vx'cn jcnctvck vc, xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k åRhsxcß oi jfcx |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk l crhl mc l ckbxgcjxkx hahy` 'cjxn-l c; l crscvx 'i vck fegc pcvxsgcnx l cpm ejl xavxn. Fegc ; x, pcbncj pcl xk oi jfcvc fegc fwdwnwn...

وَلَقَدْ قَرَأَ اللَّهُ بِهِ مِنْ لَدُنْ إِنْ كَانَ فَطِيمًا أَعْظَمَ مَلَكٍ مِنْ مَلَائِكَتِهِ يَسْأَلُكَ بِهِ طَرِيقَ الْمَكَارِمِ وَمَحَاسِنِ أَخْلَاقِ الْعَالَمِ لَيْلَهُ وَنَهَارُهُ وَلَقَدْ كُنْتُ أَتَّبِعُهُ أَتِّبَاعَ الْفَصِيلِ أَثَرُ أُمِّهِ يَرْفَعُ لِي فِي كُلِّ يَوْمٍ مِنْ أَخْلَاقِهِ عَلَمًا وَيَأْمُرُنِي بِالْإِقْدَاءِ بِهِ وَلَقَدْ كَانَ يُجَاوِرُ فِي كُلِّ سَنَةٍ بِحَرَاءٍ قَارَاهُ وَلَا يَرَاهُ غَيْرِي وَلَمْ يَجْمَعْ يَوْمَئِذٍ بَيْتٌ فِي الْإِسْلَامِ غَيْرَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ وَخَدِيجَةَ وَأَنَا ثَالِثُهُمَا أَرَى نُورَ الْوَحْيِ وَالرِّسَالَةِ وَأَشْمُ رِيحَ التُّبُوءِ وَلَقَدْ سَمِعْتُ رَنَّةَ الشَّيْطَانِ حِينَ نَزَلَ الْوَحْيُ عَلَيْهِ فَقُلْتُ : يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ مَا هَذِهِ الرَّنَّةُ ؟ قَالَ : هَذَا الشَّيْطَانُ آيَسَ مِنْ عِبَادَتِهِ

åHggp-jhhgh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -x sivcl cngr; vzmni kvck suknh Zbikik ck fzdi; l cgc; gcnxkvck fxnx xgc dhkha` ejl xavx ; x, 'e[c-'ikvi b cnbik-vc 'zbcg coghrghn` rhbhl hr i]ik ukh dug 'zsjcnxk. Lck vc hkhs`k'k vhgk[h 'evck fxn wahr ; xl x ukwk vhgk[h viainvil . U, pcn 'ik zb ohsxddcgjcnxkvck fxnxkx l ckc ha; hn evxn mc l ckc 'zsjcnx menxvx ; x, ukh xjhcv evxl . U, pcn xgvc fxn l ivvcj åPcnhß l hyhnhs`kh s'y'khnhr unvhv xfhvcjgc l caywg ugwnvw. Lck-vck fharh fxn ; cs ukw 'zn l invi. U bhl hkvh Xsghl kwnw i]ik[isi l ck ugwywl |edycl fcn mc Ocvi[ckxk hqcsxkvck fharh pe] fxn ; csxk emxkc sh]l hl `av`. Lck ki fimmcj cjnxkx idgcdxn, mcpdxk u pcbncjc khbxg ugvvwyw bhl hk Aedjhk`k khgcsxkx eavxvnxl . Lck vevxl ... åDh Ncswgcgghp! Fw kc khgcvx?ß Fwdwnvw... åFw, Aedjhk`k khgcsxvxn ; x, ukh xjhcv evxgl csxkvck il xvsxb ugl wavwn.ß

Lck fhah vi ac fxgl xncl ... ke[c ugwn ; x, (Mcncrcjxk phvxsc-

<sup>1</sup> åActhws-si vwnß, scp.27å Fw phvxckxk cjnhtg` xbhv` Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk åKcp[i g-fcgghycßdc dnbv`y` acnpxk 1-[x [xgvxkxk 49-[w scpxtcsxkvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

sxkvc redv ugwkvwyyw ;xl x) |edycl fcn zbi ki jhk`dh fxgl xn?<sup>1</sup>  
Phgfw;x ukwk ;i ncdxkvc ki fi mmcj l zpi ni mhn vxv, pcjjh  
;xjhfcpgxkvck pcn ;cs ukw 'zni nvi sc, vcnphg jhk`d`nv`.

Fw ;xl x shojh ncmhdcjgcn u pcbncjxk fe/scjxkvck rhfhr fha  
menck ohnxri g/hvc xagcnx mc ki fi mmcj vcgvgcnxkx 'zsjcnck  
ncmhdcjgcnjc jhl hl xgc bxvvxn. Fegc ;x, u pcbncj cl xsx Cfw  
Jhgxfgc fxngx;vc Ahl h 'ejvxdx fxnxk[x sctcnxkvc mc Ocvx[c  
i ]i k jx[hncj ejl cdc 'ejvxdx x; xk[x sctcnxkvc fw l z/[i bcgc  
l i ahpxvc ugwk l wavw. Fw sctcngcnvc dcpwvx mc l csxpx hgxl -  
gcnx fe/scj l cscgcsxkvck ukh ocfcn menxnvxgc. Fw x; x sctcnvc  
fwgwwvhk ughk ;zg'cgckc[cdxk u pcbncjxk fha` i sji kvc  
pcnc; cj ejl csx mc u pcbncjvck 'zni kck shxn rcnxfc xagcnxk  
phl `s` sxnc mc pcvxs ;xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.<sup>2</sup> Fe/scj-  
vck rhfhr cpgx-; xjhfc hgxl gcnxkxk u pcbncjxk \edycl fcngxdc  
se]xgc[cdx fhncsxkvc menvxdx ocfcngcn mc Jzmnhjvh 'cgck ncmh-  
dcjgcn vc l i vvchl `b`k vi bgi di kc fxn si fwjvwn.<sup>3</sup> Egc[c vc  
vha`k mc hyh[`k u pcbncjc shghl menl csxkx redv ejl c; ughn.<sup>4</sup>

Fegc l z/[i bcgc mc ohnxri g/hvc xagcn shpxfx ughk fxn acos  
zbi ki ke[c jhk`l hdh fxgc, phgfw;x Xsh xfkx Lcndcl £  
ukwk 'cgaxkx ocfcn menl xavxn?! Fegc ;x, âScttß swncsxkxk 6-  
hdcsxkvc fwdwnwgn...

﴿وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدُ﴾

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, l ckhrxfwg-l cnbh mcg-cvcf ; xjhfc âScpxpx L i sgi l ß,  
tcbhxg ; xjhfc âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, gxfhs ; xjhfc âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, l ckhrxf  
; xjhfc, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.223, 3-[i [xgv, scp.436 mc 442, 4-[i  
[xgv, scp.195, 5-[x [xgv, scp.35, 77, 82, 83, 90, 95, 98, 104, 340, 341, 354, 438, 442, 443,  
6-[- [xgv, scp.329.

<sup>2</sup> âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x pxssc, scp.73, 76, 83, 98-101, 109,  
3-[i [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.153â âScpxpx Fwohnxß, fcv/i g-mcpd ; xjhfc k`k ho`n`,  
âCofhnx Penregß fzgl csxâ âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, l ckhrxf ; xjhfc, 13-[i [xgv,  
scp.106â Xfkx Pxahl `k âSxncß ; xjhfc, 1-[x [xgv, 194, 203, 231, 239 mc 251.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, fi dw/ ; xjhfc, 2-[x [xgv, scp.10, âCj-jctsxß ; xjhfc,  
âPc[ß swncsxkxk jctsx, âTcbhxgwg-Rwn/hkß ; xjhfc, 1-[x pxsscâ âCj-Jcfcrhjß  
(Xfkx Sc/v), Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.123â âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, l ckhrxf ; xjhfc,  
1-[x fhfâ âSi kckx Vhnc l xß, ; xjhfc k l i rcvvl csx, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x  
fhf, 2-[x [xgv, scp.174, 3-[i [xgv, scp.467.

<sup>4</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, tcbhxg ; xjhfc, scp.1782, pcvxs, 2. âL i skcvx Cpl cvß,  
5-[x [xgv, scp.89, 95, 105, âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsß, pcvxs, 781, âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx  
Sc/v), 8-[x [xgv, scp.179



åLck zbil vck suknh 'cgck mc hv` Cpl cv ughk fxn ncswgw l i qvc menc-  
kcl .B

Ke[c l i l ; i k ugh fxcn ; x, u pcbncj zbi ki jhk`l hs`k, phg-  
fw; x ; xjhfcpgx phrr`kvh Rwn/hkvh vedxgx...

﴿الَّذِينَ آتَيْنَاهُمُ الْكِتَابَ يَعْرِفُونَهُ كَمَا يَعْرِفُونَ آبْنَاءَهُمْ﴾

åUkw zb zmghvghn`k` jhk`v`rghn` ; xl x jhk`d`nv`ghn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, ukghn fw |edycl fcnx – i l l x Ncswgw ]uo 'zbcg ac; xg-  
vc jhk`d`nv`ghn...

﴿الَّذِينَ يَتَّبِعُونَ الرَّسُولَ النَّبِيَّ الْأُمِّيَّ الَّذِي يَجِدُونَهُ مَكْتُوبًا عِنْدَهُمْ فِي التَّوْرَةِ وَالْإِنْجِيلِ﴾

åU ;cs ;x, ukwk hv`k` Jzmnjhvh mc Xk[xgvc zb dhkghn`kvh dhh`gl`a` 'znl ia-  
vigcn.B<sup>2</sup>

Jebgx; gc, fw ; xjhfk`k` åxsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnxß fzgl csxkvc  
redv evc[cdx; ; x, Xsghl hgcl xkc ph; xl ughk bhg`l ghn vhl  
oxghtcj l crhl`k` l i scgl hkghn`k` kcbcnxkvc ki fi mmcj l crh-  
l`kvhk vph di ; sc; mc dhoe` rcgcl c menl cdc ]hg`a`nv`ghn.  
Ki l wkc ughnhr fwkw redv evxn; ... Pc[[h[ xfkx Dwsxt Scrctx,  
Cfvi g-l cgx; L cnmhk`k` jcncxkvck Xnhr`k` mhgxsc ughk bhl hk  
: wtcvc fxn oi jfc uowvw mc L cvxkvc |edycl fcn j -xk  
rcfnxkxk bxdhncjxkc 'evckgcnc i b jwjhnhr vevx... åZgi l ugsww u  
; csgcnc ; x, ]i ni l i a si l i ; gcnxk mc uvwkgghn`k` cjnht`kvh jcmht  
evxngcn?! Kc i ]i k l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx Cfvi g-l cgx; xk rcsnxkxk  
cjnht`kvh jcmht ejl xngcn?! L c'cn fxgl xngcn ; x, fxn acosxk  
[hxxaxkx ukwk 'zkvcnvxdx hvhl vhl vph dhoe`v`n?!B<sup>3</sup>

Fcgx, suk di bxgx; gcncv fc/bx l i scgl hkghnvhl 'zni kck  
cl cggcn – |edycl fcnx C; ncl j -xk l crhl`k` di k'i g  
shdl hr [cpvgcnx – jhnxo fudw fw sc/dgcnxk kcjx[csxkvck fharh  
fxn aed vedxgvxn. Ukghn dh fegc shojh ncmhdcjgcnc dugw xgc u  
pcbncjxk di ; sc; mc cbcl cjgx l crhl`k` hbgjl hr xsjcdxngcn,  
dh vh Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkx jc/mxg ejl c; mc shxn ; xl x dugghnghæ mc  
fw dnhhl hb xagcnxkc vc xsjcvx; gcnc ; xl x fcnhcj rhbhkv`n`ngghn.  
Vx'cn ki l wkgcncvck fxnx vc ukghn`k` |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
j -xk l xghv 'i ki ki k fhdnhl ; e]xnxgl csx xgc cghrcvhn  
kcbcnvxvn ; x, kzmfcjx fcpsvc ukghn` hnhav`nh[hy`r.

<sup>1</sup> åFcrncß swncsx, hdc.146, åCk/hl B swncsx, hdc.20

<sup>2</sup> åC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.157

<sup>3</sup> Fw fcpsx cjnhtg` ac; xgvc ; xjhfk`k` 3-[i [xgvxkvc redv evc[cdx; .

5-HGGHP-K SHGEP FCKVCGCNXKXK MC |EDYCLFCNGCNXK  
 OHJXNCSXKXK CBXB JWJWGLHS- FHNC SXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT  
 |edycl fcngcnxk ohjxncgcnxkxk cbxb jwjwgl hs` xgc cghrcvhn  
 l c[gsxgcnxk jca;xg ugwkl hs`, oi swsxc |edycl fcnc-C;ncl  
 j -xk l xghv` l i khsxfcjxgc fhdnhl ackgx; gcnxkxk ;e]xnsg-  
 l csx fhncvc l i ohgxtgcnxk kcbcnxddcgcnxkxk fcdhk`kvh jc; [c  
 Scwvxddc Cncfxsjhk`k`k l i tjxsx mc xsghl x xnahv mc jcfgyhj  
 xvhncsxkxk ncxsx Cfvi g-cbxb Fekfhbb`k tcjmhs`k` redv ejl c; gc  
 ; xthdcjgckxnx; . U vedxn... â|edycl fcncxk mc fharh zmgxdhghn`k  
 l xghv` l i khsxfcjxgc fhdnhl l c[gsx jca;xg ejl c; [hxb vedxg-  
 vxnx]i k; x fw xa vxkvc (suknhvhk) dhnvh`gl `a fxv/cjgcnvckvx.ß<sup>1</sup>  
 Hl l h`edycl fcngcnxk mc vx`cn xghpx zmgxdhghn`k l xghvgh-  
 n`k`k fhdnhl ;e]xnsgl csxkxk 'zbcg mc fcdckxgck fxn xa ugl h-  
 s`kh e/jxrhv fcsgcdckgcn vcgxg 'cjxncnc; vedxngcn ; x, pc[[ l cnh-  
 sxl xkxk c; scn pxsscsx csgxkvc`edycl fcngcnxk mc xghpx zmgx-  
 dhghn`k ohjxncsxkxk [hkghkv`n`gl hs`v`n. Ukghnvkh fc/bxgcnxkx  
 redv evxnx; ...

h) Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k l crhl` (Lcrhl x Xfnhpxl )

L i jchg Hgghp âFcrcncß swncsxkxk 125-[x hdcxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَاتَّخِذُوا مِنْ مَّقَامِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ مُصَلًّى﴾

âXfnhpxl xk l crhl`kvhk zbiki b i]ik khl hb denx se]xk.ß

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc fw hdc xgc cghrcvhn fxn ncmhdcj kcrg  
 ugwkl wavwn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn... âXsl hxg mc Xfnhpxl  
 £ : c/fc emxkx jx; vx; gcnx bhl hk Xsl hxg vha 'cjxnxn, Xfnhpxl  
 xsc pzni nvi . Kcphdcj, ukwk vxmhngn` w[hgv` mc Xsl hxg fw  
 vha` – dc/kx Lcrhl x-Xfnhpxl vha`k` 'cjxnvx. Xfnhpxl ukwk  
 i sji kc ]`ov` mc jx; xkjxkx vhmhl ejvxnvx. Xsl hxg dekc vhaghn`  
 ukh menxnvx.ß

Suknh;` ncmhdcjvc vedxgx... âVxmhn w[hgv` mc Xfnhpxl vha-  
 ghn` denfcden ejl cdc rhvxn ugl hv`. Fwkh 'znc vc l crhl vh  
 ughk vha`k i sji kc ]`ov`. Xsl hxg vc vhaghn` pcl xk denvck ukh  
 menl cdc fhaghv`.ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCa-acnrwg-umscjß rcbejxkvc (1984-[i xgxk ve; hfn hd`k`k 3-vc) |ed-  
 ycl fcnc-C;ncl j mc fharh xghpx zmgxdhghghn`k l xghv`k`k fhdnhl  
 ;e]xnsgl csxkxk pz;l i fhncsxkvc l crhg menxgl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ckfxdh ; xjh f, 2-[x [xgv, scp.158 mc 159.

Dwohn`vh;` hdcvck 'znvi di l i b ;xl x, L i jchg Hgghp l i -  
scgl hkghnh tcnl hk menxn ;x, Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k Fedji g-pcnhl -  
vh;` hdhr denxkc jcfenni ; ejsexkgn, unhvh zbgcnx i ]i k khl hb  
dengcnx se]sxkgn ;x, Xfnhpxl xk ohjxncsx pcl xac [hkg` rhgs`k.  
Hdv`kv`n ;x, fw xavc Hgghp-jhhghdh acnx; ruawgl hs`kvhk pe]  
fxn cscn-cghl cj duovwn.

f) Scth mc Lcnmc

L i jchg Hgghp âFercncß swncsxkxk 158-[x hdcxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿إِنَّ الصَّافَا وَالْمَرْوَةَ مِنْ شَعَائِرِ اللَّهِ فَمَنْ حَجَّ الْبَيْتَ أَوَاعْتَمَرَ فَلَا جُنَاحَ عَلَيْهِ أَنْ يَطَّوَّفَ بِهِمَا﴾

âScth mc Lcnmc xghpx ai hngnhvkv`n. Pcn ;cs pc[[ ejsc, dhowv i l nc cl cgkx  
denxkc dejxnc, ukghn`k hnhs`kvh jcmht ejl csxkxk pe] fxn edfx duovwn...ß

Fwohnxkxk zb ;xjhfkvh kerg ejvxdx fxn ncmhdcjxk oi ghscsx  
fegcvxn...âXfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> L c ; ;cvc Ph[cn mc Xsl hxgvck hdn`gv`r-  
vhk suknh ukghn`k del c; -x]l c; gcnx rwnjhvn`, axvvcjgc swswb-  
gwyh vi ]hn ugvwghn. Fw bhl hk Xsl hxg swswbgwywk axvvcjxkvck  
r`mn`g`f-h]`g`nv`. Ph[cn Scthdh vuynw 'ejvx ;x, ukwk fw mcbxd-  
dcjxkx l i ahpxvc ejl csxk. Suknh vhy`k i sji kc ]`ov` mc cjnth  
kcbcn shgv` ;x, fcg;c fxn ;csx 'znc. Hl l h pe] ;csx 'znl c-  
vxdxkvck Scthvkh ekvx mc vi bckgxdc ]hjv`. Edkxgc xa'i bhn fxn  
xkshk ;xl x âsc/dß ejl cdc fhaghv`, kcpdcdj 'cgxf Lcnmc vhy`kh  
]`ov`. Cjnth fhov` ;x, fcg;c fxn ;csx 'znc. Hl l h pe] ;csx  
'znl cvx. Fw 'evxa-'cgxa devvx vctc jc;nhn ugwkvw.B

Xfkx Hffhs vedxn... |edycl fcx-C; ncl i fwdwnvw ;x,  
âfw vh xkshkghn`k Scth mc Lcnmc vhyghn` hnhs`kvh ejvx; gcnx sc/d cl cgvxin.B<sup>1</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh Ph[cnxk Scth mc Lcnmc hnhs`kvh;` sc/d cl cgxkx  
pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk fxn rxsl x ejl xavxn ;x, Ph[cnxk ejvxdx sc/d-  
gcnx ohj`nghjs`k, u fzdi ; acosxddcjgx xkshk`k ohjxncsxkx [hkghk-  
v`ns`k. Ph[`ghn`k Scth mc Lcnmc vhyghn` hnhs`kvh ejvxdx âpcn-  
mcgcb cl cgxkxk (fw l cshtckx r`sh hvv`l ghng, jeb-jeb 'ejl cgc-  
nxkxk) l i sjcpcf ugl hs` Ph[cnxk unhvh sw hojhnl hr i ]i k jeb-  
jeb pcnc; cj ejl csxkx ohj`nghv`n.

m) Ncl dx-[cl cnc

Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcg mc Jcdhgxsx zbgcnxkxk âL i skcvß ;xjhfk-  
ghn`kvh |edycl fcx C; ncl i -xk fegc fwdwnvwywk

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.158, âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, âbcl -bcl ß l hvvcxæ âJhnxox  
Jcfcnxß, âJhnxox Xfkx Csxnb

ncmhdcj ejl xagcn...â{cfnhxg Xfnhpxl x â{cl cnedx-crcfcdcß (ho`n`k[ vha hjghk denc) jcnct h\hmv mc Aedjhk`ukh 'zsjcnvx. Xfnhpxl devvx cvcv vhagh ukw 'zbvck xjxk[cdc rcvcn rumvw. Suknh ukw â{cl cnedx-mwsjhdhß (unjhk[ig {cl cncdc) h\hmv Aedjhk`ukh 'zsjcnvx, Xfnhpxl dekc vc ukw devvx vhagh 'zbvck xjckc rcvcn rumvw. Suknh ukw â{cl cnedx-rwsmhßdh (dho`k {cl cncdc) h\hmv mc Aedjhk`ukh 'zsjcnvx. Xfnhpxl dekc vc devvx vhagh ukw 'zbvck xjxk[cdvc; rumvw.ß<sup>1</sup> rumvw.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fegcgx; gc vc, Lijchg Hgghp Aedjhk`k Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> jcnctxkvck rumwgl hs` cl cgkx cbxbgcvx, ukwk ohjxncsxkx cfcvx shoghl hr i]i k ânci dx-[cl cncßkx pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk fxn rxsl x rcnhn menvx.

r) Txvh, dhowv rwnfhkg`r

Lijchg Hgghp Xfnhpxl mc Xsl hxg £ fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿لَمَّا بَلَغَ مَعَهُ السَّعْيَ قَالَ يَا بُنَيَّ إِنِّي أَرَىٰ فِي الْمَنَامِ أَنِّي أَذْبُحُكَ فَانظُرْ مَاذَا تَرَىٰ قَالَ يَا أَبَتِ افْعَلْ مَا تُؤْمَرُ سَتَجِدُنِي إِن شَاءَ اللَّهُ مِنَ الصَّابِرِينَ فَلَمَّا أَسْلَمَا وَتَلَّهُ لِلْجَبِينِ وَنَادَيْنَاهُ أَنْ يَا إِبْرَاهِيمُ قَدْ صَدَّقْتَ الرُّؤْيَا إِنَّا كَذَبُكَ تَجْرِي الْمُحْسِنِينَ إِنَّ هَذَا لَهُوَ الْبَلَاءُ الْمُئِمُّنُ وَفَدَيْنَاهُ بِذَبْحٍ عَظِيمٍ﴾

âMc ukh (Xfnhpxl c) scfxngx fxn uyghk` l i qvc menvx;. U, pcvxx-figwy dha`kh [hjv`rvh, hjhs`ukh vevx...âUygl ! Lck dwowvh 'znv i l ;x, scx rwnfhk evxncl . "zn fw fhncvc kcbcnxk kcvxn?ß Xsl hxg vevx...âHjh[hk! Pcn kcdc cl n ugwk l w-shksh (ukw vh denxkc dejn), c'cn Hgghp xsjcsc, l ckxl scfxn evckgcncvck ugvyw- l w 'zncnsck.ß Ukghn jcsxl ugvrvh mc Xfnhpxl uygwkw i bi isjc denc d'ov`y bhl hk kvvh ejvx;...âEd Xfnhpxl ! Pcrxrcjk, scx u dwowkw jcsvix evxf 'en]c;gca-vxnvx.ß Fxb dhoa`cl cg shpxfgcnxkc fegc[c l i;hthj mencnx;. Fw, pcl xk fcgh mc ha;hn xl jhphkv`n. Ukw cbcl cjgx bxfp xgc txvh (rwnfhkg`r) ejvx;.ß

Hgghp-jhhgh fw rwnfhkg`y`k ohjxncsxkx cbxbgcl c; , ukw vhl [hkg` shoghl hr i]i k fw cl cgx pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk fxn rxsl x rcnhn menl xa mc ph[`ghnh cl n ejl xavxn ;x, âLxkhßvh pcl xac rwnfhkg`r ejsxkcn, fw rwnfhkg`rgh Xfnhpxl mc Xsl hxgxk Hgghp`k cl n mc tcnl hkghn` rhna`s`kvh redvsxb-acnjsxb jcsxl ugi hghn`k`k ohjxncsxkx cbxb shoghs`kghn.

v) Oedxn-fcnc; cjxk pcl xk denvck dhd`gl hs`

<sup>1</sup> âLiskcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.306æ Edkxgc fw l cbl wkh dho`k l cjgcfx Jcdhgxsx zb ;xjhfk`k 27-[x scpxtcsxkx 2697-[x pcvxsxkvc redv ejl xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk, âLz/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, â: c/fcß l hvvcxs, âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, âJhnnox xfkx Csxß ;xjhfgnh`kvh Pcbncj Xfnhpxl xk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

Xfnhpxl l crhl `kvh ughk oedxn-fcnc; cj l cpb u pcbncjxk  
rcvcl gcnxkvck sxnhdcj ejl xavxn. Hgghp-jhhgh cl n ejl xavxn ; x,  
Fedjwgghpxg-pcnhl `k pcl xk denxkx khl hb denx rcnln mensxk-  
gcn. Hgghp unhvh r`g`khk khl hb` pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk fxn rxsl x  
rcnln menvx ; x, fw phvxscx ohjxncgcnvc fcvx [hkghkv`n`gl  
Hahy`vh;` fcpsgcnvc pcl oedxn-fcnc; cjxk, pcl vc l i sxfcj mc  
fcvfcoj]xgx; gcnxk fxn denvck fharh dengcnc dhd`gl hs`k`  
hnhav`n`n`r...

Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> -vhk fcnc; cjxk dhd`gl hs` mc ukwk ohjxncsxxk [hkghkv`n`gl hs`  
Fc/bx ncmhdcjgcncv redv ugwkwn ; x, L i jchg Hgghp Hvcl x,  
bxg-pc[[c hd`k`k 9-vh bzpnvck suknh âCncthjßvh fhy`aghv` mc  
{cfnhxg ri nwf bhl hk` âL ca/cni g-pcnhl ßvh ukwk dhk`kh`cgvx.  
Hvcl bxg-pc[[ckxk 10-[w `e[csxkx unhvh ; e]xnvx, `e[ckx scpcnc  
; xl x udhr rhgv`, vwh evxf dhgmhnv`, Hgghp pcl v-sck ejvx  
mc jzmfcsxkxk rcfwg ugwkl hs`k` xsjcvx. Si fp h]`ghkvh âL x-  
khßdh vuynw pcnc; cj ejvx. Bxg-pc[[ckxk 10-vh zb fha`k`  
r`nov`nv` ; x, jzmfcsxkxk rcfwg ugwkl hs` mc `i khpghnvkh oxghs  
ugwkl hs`kh fxn cghl cj ugswk. Hgghp-jhhgh fw `i ki Hvcl  
<sup>TM</sup> -`k zbi mc ukwk zmghvghn` i ]i k fhdnhi rcnln menvx mc  
Hvcl xk ejvxdx cl cggcnxk phl `s`k` jhnxo fudw, fcvxddcjc  
rcvcl pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk fxn pxsscsx rcnln menvx. Fegc ; x, Hgghp-  
jhhgh bxg-pc[[ckxk 9-[w `i ki, hoahl ]hy` âCncthjßvh ukghn`k  
jzmfcsxkx rcfwg evxn, ukghn bxg-pc[[ckxk 10-h ; e]ck `e[cvc  
âL ca/cni g-pcnhl ßvh Hgghpgh nhb-kxdhb evxngcn mc 10-[w `i k  
âL xkhßvh zb fhaghn`k` r`nov`n`ngn. Fwkvhk suknh Xfnhpxl ,  
Xsl hxg mc Ph[cnxk denxkc dejxnvx; gcnx pcl xk cl cggcnx zb  
cl cggcnxkc cghmc evxngcn, fwkwkgh vh pc[[ cl cggcnx ; hl xggcaxn.

Fwkh cshsck, pc[[ cl cggcnxkxk pcn fxnx Hgghp`k shgep fck-  
vcgcnxkxk dhahv`y` bhl hk mc l c; hkghnvkh oedxn-fcnc; cj wl -  
l hr l c/khs`k` vha`d`n ; x, fw cl cggcnxk vc phl `s` jhnxo fudw  
ukghn`k hv mc dhvghn`k`k ohjxncgcnvc [hkghkv`n`gl hs` i ]i k-  
vi n.

OCSHNCJ MC FCVF COJ}XGDXK FXN LC: HKVHK FHARH  
LC: HKH SXNHDCJ EJLCSX

Fwohnx, L i sgi l mc Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcg ncmhdcj ejl xagcn  
; x, |edycl fcx-C; ncl i âJcfw; ß rcbmcsxkc `evcn; ck  
âPx[nß hvg` fxn l ckjcrcvc, âScl wvß rzml i ki k emgcnxkxk dh-

o`kg`y`kvh l xkx; vck ekvx. U pcbncjxk ruawkwkvh; `ghn  
 âScl wvß rzml i ki k sw x]vxdx rwdwghnvhk sw ]c; vxgc, ]znc;  
 fxaxl c; i ]i k ocl xn duywnvwghn mc oznc; rhbhkgghn`k` sw xgc  
 vugvwnvwghn. Fw bhl hk |edycl fcn ; 'zsjcnxa menvx ; x,  
 oznc; rhbhkgghn`k` fuahgjs`kghn, ocl xngcnx vcmcgcn devxnj-  
 sxkgcn. Suknh ukghnh pcnc; cj cl nx menvx. Shgep `edycl fcnxk  
 khrcsxkxk sw x]vxdx rwdwkwk dhk`kvh vi acn`c shgv`. U pcbncj  
 zb ; zl c; ]xgcnxkxk cbhf ugwkxhk rzml i k vi acn`c shgv`y` denvc  
 vi al c; vck ]c; xkvxnvx mc fwdwnvw... âLck sxbxk fhckxvvc fwkvhk  
 runownhl ; x, ukghnh ]hjkh fcgghn sxb vc ]hjs`k. Suknh sxb ukghn`k mhnv  
 ugvwrghn` denc vhoxg ughns`k`b.ß

âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc xsc u pcbncjxk fegc fwdwnvwyw redv  
 ugwkwn... âZbgcnkxk bi gl evck xkshkgghn`k emgcnxk mhnv ugl hd`kæ dhgk`b hyghn  
 phgvh vhoxg ugh fxgcnsxkxk ; x, ukghnh ]hjkh aedgcncvck (cbhfghnvhk) hl hkvh rhgh-  
 s`k`b.ß Suknh zb ruawkw xgc si n/cjgc pcnc; cj evxf unhvkh ; e]vx.

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc xsc fegc vedxgx... â|edycl fcn fwkvkh  
 suknh zb fha`k` znjvi mc u mhvxvck ]`ohkh rcvcn zb si n/cjxkx  
 hnj`nv`.ß<sup>1</sup>

âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc kcrq ugwkxhk fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc fegc  
 vedxgx... â|edycl fcn vcmcdc l xkl xa phgvh, zb fha`k` cfhs` xgc  
 znjvi .ß<sup>2</sup>

# LC: HKGHNH OEDXN-FCNC: CJXK MC DH OCSHNCJ MC FCVFCOJ}XGDXK LCKACDX

âScl wvß rzml i ki k zg; csx mc ukghn`k rwdwghn`k` kcps  
 ugl hs` l cpb ukghn`k dhnhl hb cl cggcnxkxk kc]x[csx xv ; x,  
 ukghn`k zg; cgcnxkc mc swghn`kh vh sxnhdcj ejl xavx. Fw kcpsgx;  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ; -xk csnxkc rcvcn vhmhl ejl xa,  
 Hgghp`k xsjcvxdx fi ji k mhojghnh rcvcn vc vhl rhgh[hrv`n.  
 Pcl ]xkxk, Shgepxk khrcsxkxk sw x]vxdx denxk oedxn-fcnc; cjx vc  
 dhgk`b Shgepxk vcmcsxkxk ukvkh sw x]vxdxkc 'znc xv mc fw  
 tcbxgcj mc oedxn-fcnc; cj vc u rwdwdh sxnhdcj ejl xavx. Fw vh  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk vzmni kc rcvcn vhmhl ejl xa mc Hgghp`k

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âl cyhbß ; xjhf, âki bwgwk-Kcfx cg-Px[ncß fhfæ  
 âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, âbzpvß ; xjhf mc âncrhxrß ; xjhf, pcvxs, 40 (fxb ukw  
 xojxshngh redv ejvx; )æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.117æ âJhnnox Jcfcnß,  
 Hmnu\h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.250.

<sup>2</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.66.

xsjcvvdx pcn fxn bhl hkh rcvvn fegc[c rhgh[hrv`n.

Hdv`kv`n ;x, Shgep \edycl fcnxk vcmcsx mc ukwk sw x]vxdx  
den Hgghp dhk`kvh Xsl hxgvck mc ukwk âBcl -bcl ß rwdswkw-  
vhk hnj`r vedxgvxn. C;sxkc, Hgghp-jhhgh âBcl -bcl ß rwdswkw  
l cpb Xsl hxgxk fcnc; cjkxvck jhnxcvc pcl xacgx; ughnhr oedxn-  
fcnc; cj l hdhs` rcnhr menl xavxn. Oedxn-fcnc; cjkx l i cddck  
xagcnvck mc cadhghnvkh fharh aedgcnc sxnhdcj ejl csx vc edkxgc  
fegcvxn... Hgghp-jhhgh Zbi kik shgep mc ghdxrgx fckvcgcnxkc  
oi swsx bhl hkghnvh, u [i l gcvck â{i l cß 'i ki kvc, âNhl hbhkß  
hd`kvh mc s. fw oedxn-fcnc; cjkx cjh ejl xavxn.

{i l c 'i kikik oedxn-fcnc; cjkx

âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc fegc redv ugwkwn... âHgghp-jhhgh Hvel x [i l c  
'iki ocgr ejvx mc egc [i l c 'i kikvc vc ukw {ckkcjc vhoxg ejvx.ß¹

L i fhnc; Nhl hbhk hd`k`k oedxn-fcnc; cjkx

âNhl hbhkß hd`k`k oedxn-fcnc; cjkx vc edkxgc fegcvxn. Hgghp-  
jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿شَهْرُ رَمَضَانَ الَّذِي أُنْزِلَ فِيهِ الْقُرْآنُ هُدًى لِّلنَّاسِ وَبَيِّنَاتٍ مِّنَ الْهُدَىٰ وَالْفُرْقَانِ﴾

âNhl hbhk hd` egc fxn hdv`n ;x, Rwn/hk ukvh khbxg ugl wavwn ;x, [h hhj  
i] jk dug 'zsjcnck, pxvhdcj mc phrr` fhjxgvck se]ck fxn mhsxjc ugswk.ß²  
Fharh hdcvc fwdwnvgwn...

﴿إِنَّا أَنْزَلْنَاهُ فِي لَيْلَةِ الْقَدْرِ وَمَا أَدْرَاكَ مَا لَيْلَةُ الْقَدْرِ لَيْلَةُ الْقَدْرِ خَيْرٌ مِّنْ أَلْفِ شَهْرٍ﴾

âFxb ukw (Rwn/hk) Rcvn 'e[csxkvc khbxg ejvx; . Sck kc fixgnsck ;x, Rcvn  
'e[csx kcvxn?! Rcvn 'e[csx l xk hdvhk isjik ughk fxn 'e[cvxn.ß³

Fcgx, Rwn/hk`k |edycl fcnx-C; ncl c khbxg ugvywyw 'e[ckxk –  
âRcvnß 'e[csxkxk oedxn-fcnc; cjkx l i fhnc; Nhl hbhk hd`k`k  
fi jk 'e[c-'i kvi bgcnxkc sxnhdcj ejl xa mc fw hd`k oedxn-  
fcnc; cjkx jhnxo fudw cfcvx ughnhr rhgl `av`n.

Vel cgx, oedxn-fcnc; cj l i fhnc; bhl hk mc l c; hkghnvkh –  
Hgghp-jhhghk`k Zb se]xgl xa fckvcgcnxkc cjh ejvxdx bhl hk mc  
l c; hkghnvkh – fhaghdhnh 'ekxagckxf dhg`gl `av`n. Hgghp-jhhgh  
fxbc cl n evxf fwdwnl wavwn ;x, Ukwk zmgxdhghn`k`k mc  
\edycl fcngcnxkxk jwjvwyw dugggh 'evc; , ukghn`k pcl xk bhl hk

¹ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, â[i l cß ;xjh` , âtcggi g-[i l cß fh` , scp.17 mc 18.

² âFcrcncß swncsx, hdc.185

³ âRcvnß swncsx, hdc.1-3

mc l c; hkghnv h ejvxdx cl cggcnx zbil i bc znkc; 'zjinc; ; x,  
 hvghn` mc ohjncgcgnx jhnxo fudw cfcvx rhgs`k mc ukghn`k 'ekxa  
 scmddcgx oedxn-fcnc; cjcgnx vc fxbc ahl xg ugswk. Vuynwsu,  
 phks` fxn acn/x l hkec fegc xsghl x l c[gsxgc n mc l i khsxfcjgcgnxk  
 fcncrcn h n ugwkl hs`k`k rhna`s`k` hgh fxgc n?! |edycl fcnc-C; ncl  
 i -xk l xghv`k`k fhdnhl ;e]xnagl csx, ukwk l e/nh[`k`k  
 jckjckcgx swncjvc redv evxgl csx, ukwk Lcs[xvi g-pcnhl vkh  
 Lcs[xvi g-crshdh h`hn`gv`y` l e/nh[ 'e[csxkx mc Hgghp`k  
 ancpl cjck gxg-hgcl xkß hvghkv`nv`y` fe/scj 'e[csxkx cbxbgcdxf  
 fhdnhl ;e]xnl cdxk kc edfx mhnv`n?!

Fwkx vh redv evc; ; x, âHgghp zmgxdhghn`k`k mc \edycl fc-  
 ncgnxk ohjncgcgnxkx cbxbgcl c;ß vevx; vc, l crscvxl xb |edycl fc-  
 nxk jcmcggi v 'e[csxkvc u pcbncjxk jcpnxt ugwkl hl `a mc vi b-  
 'i k hvcl-ck/ckcgcnxkxk ohj`nghv`gl hs`v`n ; x, u 'e[cvc tcrxngcnc  
 Hgghp dugwkv h jchl menl cdxk mc fxn ; csc pcvddc ejl cdxk  
 shmhf` vh |edycl fcnc menxgn. Fw acnjgc ; x, fc/bx swtxgcgnxk  
 zbgcnxkvck xojxnh ejvx; gcnx, acncj rhkwkghn`kh oxght ughk  
 fxv/cj dzkgi jcvfxngcnvck ]c; xkl xa ughr.

Kzmfclj fcpsxl xbvc Hgghp \edycl fcngcnxkxk, xghpx zmgxdh-  
 ghn`k rcfxngcnxkx jc/l xn mc ukghnv h xfhvcj ejl cdxk pz; l i kvc  
 dhnhkhk xojxght fhncsxkvc szpfcj evc[cdx; .

6-HGGHP ZMGXDHGHN-K-K MC |EDYCLFCNGCNXK  
 RCFXNGCNXKX JC/LXN EJLCDXK MC ÉKGHNVH XFHVCL EJLCDXK  
 FHNC SXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT

L i scgl hkghnv h k fc/bxgc n xghpx acosddcjgcgnxk rcfxngcnxkx  
 jc/l xn ejl cdxk rhvhyhk ugwkl hs`k` vedcn; ck fc/bx ncmhdcj-  
 gcnc xsjxkhv evxngcn ; x, ukghn`k ck l i pi l gc n hahy`vh; `ghnv`n...

h) Ukghn xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk fegc fxn ncmhdcj kcr g evxngcn...  
 |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i fxn [ckhbckx vctk ejl cdc h`nhk-  
 vh fwdwnvw... âSxbgc n vck phks` fxnxkxb Lcvxkc dc 'evxf unhk`k  
 fi jgc n xkx phl `s`k` s`kv`nhn, unhk`k rcfxngcnxkx phl `s`k`  
 dengc de; shk evcn mc ukghn`k (rwnwgwawkw) jhl hl xgc vcdx-  
 vxncn?ß Fxn kctcn vevx... âL ck 'evcncl , dh Ncswgcggghp!ß U 'ejvx,  
 hl l h Lcvxkc cphgxskvck runowf rhd`jv`. Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vevx... âDh  
 Ncswgcggghp! L ck 'evxl l x?ß Fwdwnvw... â"ej.ß U 'evxf rhd`jv`r-  
 vkh sukn h vevx... âDh Ncswgcggghp! Fi ji k fi jgc n s`kv`nv`l , fi -  
 ji k rcfxngcnx dengc de; shk ejvxl mc tunl hghn`k` vcdxavxn-



vxl .ß

Fw ncmhdcj pcvxs ; xjhfgñkvh ]uo jc; nhn ugwkl wavwn. Fxb ukwk ck ; hl xgxkx redv ejvx;.<sup>1</sup>

FW PCVXS FHNCVC JCKRXV MC LI GHPXBCGCN

Fxnk[<sup>xsx...</sup> Jebgx; gc redv ugwk[h<sup>hrv`n</sup> ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
j zb hkhs`k`k rcfnxkx bxdhncj evxf hyghv` mc  
cjhnt`kvh; `ghn` vh hyghjv`. Phgfw; x, u pcbncj hgj` dh`kvh  
ughkvh zb hkhs`k`k Lcvxkvc cvck menl xavx. Fwkh cshsck,  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j r`no xgvck sukh Lcvxkdc px[ncj  
evcn; ck hkhs`k`k rcfnxkx bxdhncj ejvx. Pcl xk mhojh rcvnc  
rcfnxk oi swsx cscn mc kxahkcgcnx ha; hn ac; xgvc rhgl `av`. C; s  
phgvh, ukwk rcfnx jhk`kl hdh[<sup>hrv`</sup>. C'cn Xsghl `k pz; l i kc  
cshsck, fi ji k rcfxngcn vhy`v`g`f dengc de; shk evxgl cgxvxncs,  
ukvh kc i ]i k |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j u vzmncv hkhs`k`k  
rcfnxkxk vhy`v`gl hs`kh vhn pz; l menl cvx?

X; xk[<sup>xsx...</sup> Lcvxkc cphgxskxk fc/bxgcnx Xsghl ` rcfwg ejvx; vck  
sukh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j pcn aedvck zk[c Xsghl `  
jcbc rcfwg evckgcnc 'i kvcgx; pz; l gcnx zdncj l c; i ]i k  
L i s/cf xfkx l l ednx ukghn`k dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx. } i k; x Lcvxkc  
cphgxskxk dhgk`b hb fxn rxsl x pc[[c 'ejvx; gcnx bhl hk  
âCrcfcßvc d'y`a`f |edycl fcnx-C; ncl gc l cotx ac; xgvc fed/cj  
ejl xavxgc. Xsghl ` vh ukghn`k hnhs`kvh dhgk`b |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl j -xk Lcvxkdc ; z] l csxkvck sukh 'ekxa ac; xgvc  
dhd`gv` mc ukghn jcvnx[x ughnhr Xsghl ` rcfwg ejvxgc. Xl hl Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> vh u pcbncjxk Lcvxkdc 'cgxaxkvck i ]-vznv 'i k sukh  
ukwk hnv`k[h dugh vi avi .

Pcl ]xkxk, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j Fckx-Ri nedbc, Fckx-  
Kcbxn, Fckx-Rcdki rh dcpwvxgcnx xgc cpv-`edl hk fhyghv`rvhk  
sukh zb pz; wl cjxkx jcvnx[gc Lcvxkvc 'ekxagckvxnl cdc  
fhaghv`. Xsghl `k Lcvxkvc l cpb fw mcbxddc jvc 'ekxagckxf  
dhd`gl hs` l c/gwl ugvwyyw phgvh, fegc fxn swhg dhnhk`n ; x,  
'zncsck |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j kc mhoj, phnhvh mc phks`  
[ckhbckx vctk ejl cdc h`hnhkvh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` Lcvxkdc 'zkvcnxn  
; x, fi jgcnx s`kv`ns`k, rcfxngcnx vhy`v`f dengc de; shk ejsxk mc  
ukghn`k tunl hghn`k` vcdxavxnsxk?! Zbi vc ri vncj

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.87, 89, 96, 110, 111, 128, 138, 139, 145, 150æ  
âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsß, pcvxs, 96 mc 155.

I zmredxkvck xsjxthvc evck, pz;I gcnx rhna`s'kvh xl jxkh evxgl csx I i l ; i k ugl hdhk fxn ph;xl ;xl x! Jcc[[i fgi vi n ;x, fxxk[x vctc 'zkvcnxgck acos 'ejvx;vck suknh runowf rhd`v`n, pcl xk I i vvcj cnbxkvc |edycl fcn ; mc fharhghn` vh pcl xk [ckhbckxk vctk I cnhsxl xkvc ugwngnh! Suknh |edycl fcn XI hl Cgxkx 'zkvcnxn mc ukwk 'evxf-rhd`jv`y` I i vvcj cnbxkvc ukghn dekc vc pcl xk [ckhbckxk vctk I cnhsxl xkvc ugwngnh. Fw xa ke[c I i l ; i k ugh fxgcn?!

I]ik[isi... Fw ncmhdcjxk hnv`k[h redv ugwkwn ;x, XI hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> Cfwg-Pcddh[ Cscvxdc vevx...âL ck sckx fxn xac se]xncl ;x, |edycl fcn ; ukw denxkc dejxnl cdx I ckc cl n ejl xavxn. U I ckc cl n ejl xavxn ;x, fi ji k rcfxngcnx dengc de;shk evxl mc fi ji k fi jgcnx s`kv`n`l .ß<sup>1</sup>

Hdv`kv`n ;x, XI hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> Cfwg-Pcddh[ Cscvxdc dhgk`b zb ph;xl xddcjx vzmni kvc I c/I wxddcj menl xavxn. Fwkh cshsck, dekc vc fegc fxn swhg dnhk`n...XI hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -`k Cfwg-Pcddh[h menvxdx I c/I wxddcj phnhvh mc kc mhoj ugl wavwn, u pcbncj Cfwg-Pcddh[` Xsghl zg;cgcnxkvck phks` fxxkx 'zkvcnl xavxn ;x, rcfxngcnx vhy`v`f fi jgcnx s`kv`ns`k?!

Fxn szbgc, c`cn fw x;x ncmhdcjvc |edycl fcn ; -xk mc XI hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -`k menvxdx tcnl hk`k pcn x;xsx vi b ugsh vh fw xa axn; zg;csxkvc I i anx;gcnxk rcfxngcnxkxk vhy`v`g`f mxnhk evxgl csx xgc cghrcvhnv`n. Fw pz;I i k cphjc vhxncsxxk 'ekxagck-vxnx`f I i scgl hkghnh vh hxv evxgl csx mc ukghn`k vh rcfxngcnx-kxk vhy`v`gl hs`k`k mh[xfgxdx fw ncmhdcjxk phnhs`kvhk fhah vi ai gc fxgcn?!

f) Ukghn |edycl fcnxk fegc vwh ejvxdxkx ncmhdcj evxngcn...â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl rcfnxl x fi j ejl c! Hgghp gc/kcj ejxk u xkshkghnh ;x, zb \edycl fcngcnxkxk rcfxngcnxkx I cs[xv se]-I xagcn!ß<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc zb \edycl fcngcnxkxk rcfxngcnxkx I cs[xv se]ckgcnx gc/kcjgcdnc; fwdwnwn...âHgghp zgvi nsi k dc-pwv rzml i ki! Ukghn zb \edycl fcngcnxkxk rcfxngcnxkx I cs[xv se]I xavxgc.ß<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.89 mc 96.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhhv, 2-[x [xgv, scp.246.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhhv, scp.285.

Fw pcvxs fhncvc jckrxv mc l i ghpxbcgn

Fckx-Xsnhxg rzml i Lxsnvck ]`o`f, vcn dhvhk ;e]vx; vck, åJxdcß mhvxskx hnohvh rudvwrvhk, Tcgcsjxkc ]hj`f unhvh vi - acn`c shgv`rvhk suknh Si gedl hk \edycl fcn ukghn i ]i k åPcf;cgx Si gedl hkß hvg` oi swsx xfhvcj`hp jx; vx ;x, åxfhvcj oedl csxßkx mc åcpv jhfwjßkw unhvh dengcavxnsxkgn. Fegc sw- hg dhnhk`n ;x, 'zncsck ukghn`k \edycl fcngcnxkxk rcfxngcnx ph- nhvh ugl wavwn ;x, ukw l cs[xv se]l xavxgc? Oi swsxgc, Fedji g- l i rcvvc acpcnx Xsghl vkh rhfhr pcl xac l i scgl hkghn`k mc cncfgcnxk 'zbgcnx zki kvc ugl wavwn. Hl l h ukghn`k \edycl fcngcnxkxk, u [i l gcvck Xfnhpxl Ocgxg, Lwsh xfkx Xl nhk £ ;xl x fzdi ; acosxddcjgcnxk rcfxngcnx rhgl `av`n. Phks` ;x, dcpwvxgcnxk ukghn` zbgcnxkc fij se]l csxkx kc fxn ;cs 'znl ia, kc eaxl xa, kc vc fxn ;cs fw fhncvc fxn aed dhbl `av`n. Phks`sh fxn rcfnxk fij se]xgl csxkx rcfwg ejsc; fegc, fxn aedx fij se]l c;gc rcfxngcnx bxdhncj ejl c; mc ukghnh epjxnhl 'zsjcnl c; hnhs`kvh kc rcvcn vc tcnr mhnv`n! } i k; x fxn rcfnxk fij se]xgl csxkx l c/khs` pcl xk rcfnx : c/fc ;xl x rxfgc`hp rcnhn menl c;vxn. Hl l h 'zncsck fw l cscgcckxk dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghgh kc cghrcsx mhnv`n?!

Hdv`kv`n ;x, fxbxl swhg mc jcnvxvxl xb pe] fxn mc[pgc |edycl fcncvck kerg ugwkhhk pcvxsgcnc dzkcg l xn. Fxb fegc aedgcncvck Hgghph \ckhp h\hn`n`r. C;sxkc, fxbxl fcpsxl xb mc xnhv`l `b dhgk`b u nhmxgcncvx n ;x, Hgghp ukghn` ocjh, wkwjrhkg`r mc sh\l hghnvkh hl hkvh shoghl hl `av`n.

Fw redv ugwkhhkghn rcfxngcnxk i bcnxkvc fxkh jx;l c; mc ukghn` jc/l xn ejl cdxk l i rcvvc acncjgc l i ohgxt ugl hs`k` vedckgcnxk vcgxggcnx xv. Fw l cscgc xgc l i mhtxr ughkghn`k vcgxggcnx xsc hahy`vh; `ghnv`n...

|EDYCLFCNGCNXK RCFXNGCNX I BCNXKVC XFHV CJ"HP

JX: XGL CSXKXK {HXB UGVWYWKW VEDCKGCNXX VCGXGGCNX

|edycl fcngcnxk acnxt rcfxngcnx ughk denvc xfhvcjxk scpxpgx- dxkc xkhkhkghn fegc vcgxg 'cjxnxngcn... å: c/fc emxkxk cjnht`kvh jcmht evckgc åPx[nx-Xsl hxgßx vc jcmht evxn mc ukwk vxmhngghn`- kh cg si njingcn. Fi j i k Xsghl hgxl gcnxkxk l i jjctxr tx;nxkc cshsck, Xsl hxg mc ukwk hkhs` Ph[cnxk rcfnx åPx[nßvc

dengcaxn.β

XfKx Pxahl (218-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn) zbi ki k āSxncβ ; xjh<sup>f</sup>kvh, Jcfcnx (310-[w xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn), XfKx Csx<sup>n</sup> (630-[w xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn) mc XfKx : csxn (774-[i xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn) zbgcnxkxk āJhnxoβ ; xjh<sup>f</sup>ghn<sup>n</sup>kvh fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... āXsl hxg zb hkhs<sup>n</sup> Ph[cngc fxngx; vc āPx[nβvc vctk ugwkl wavwn.β XfKx Csx-nxk xfhncsxkvc fegc vedxgx<sup>n</sup>... āXsl hxg mcsxddcj ejl xavx ; x, ukw hkhs<sup>n</sup>k<sup>n</sup> rcfnxkxk dhk<sup>n</sup>kvh – āPx[nβvc vctk ejsxkgcn.β<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc vedxgx<sup>n</sup>... āXsl hxgxk rcfnx Ni ; k xgc L crhl hnhs<sup>n</sup>kvh, kumvhk<sup>n</sup>k hgj<sup>n</sup>kvhv<sup>n</sup>.β<sup>2</sup>

: cghxkxk āCg-x; jxthβ ; xjh<sup>f</sup>kvh fxn ncmhdcj kcrj ugwkl wavwn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn... āPh[cn, Xsl hxg mc ukwk ugw Khfcj āPx[nβvc vctk ugwkl wagh<sup>n</sup>.β<sup>3</sup>

XfKx {i fedn zb sctcnkhl csxkvc Xsl hxg mc ukwk hkhs<sup>n</sup> Ph[cnxk rcfnxkxk denxkx jc/dxk evcnc; dhn<sup>n</sup>... āXsl hxgxk rcfnx Px[n scpkxkvc; x khmvhk<sup>n</sup>k hgj<sup>n</sup>kvh, Fedji ggpxg-pcnhl<sup>n</sup> k vxmh-n<sup>n</sup>kh dho<sup>n</sup>k denvc dengcaxn. Ukwk cghl cjx vc dha<sup>n</sup>g nck<sup>n</sup>gx l cn-l cn vhav<sup>n</sup> ; x, fxn kzm l epnhfh fckbcdxn, fharh fxn l cnl cn vha vh ukh fxngcal xavxn. Pcn x; x vha 'znl cgx mc edkx bhl hkvh pedncjgxvxn. Ukwk i bcnxkvc hbh[<sup>n</sup>r shn<sup>n</sup>dh ]hghk [xb'xgc<sup>n</sup> mc kzrjcgcn mhnv<sup>n</sup>, shk; x ukwk i sji kvc dhn<sup>n</sup>r ugvwykw jcscomi n evxnsck. Cnxvxl xa r<sup>n</sup>b<sup>n</sup>g<sup>n</sup>k i bcnxkvc ughk ; x]x; bcnnccgcn fckbcdxn. Ukwk dhk<sup>n</sup>kvh – xnhrx ni ; ki k dho<sup>n</sup>kg<sup>n</sup>y<sup>n</sup>kvh hkhs<sup>n</sup> Ph[cnxk rcfnx dengcaxn. Ukwk cghl cjx vc 1,5 rhn<sup>n</sup>a wbwkgwykw-vh ughk dha<sup>n</sup>g vhav<sup>n</sup>. {hl hhj fw x; x denvc khl hb r<sup>n</sup>ghnhr ukghnh jcfncni ; evxngcn. Fw xa ukghn i ]i k ncmhv<sup>n</sup> ([hxbvxn)æ ]i k; x fw x; x rcfnx Fedjx-Cjxrvck peshf ugwkwn mc unhv<sup>n</sup> x; x cbxb mc l i rcvcs [cscv dengcaxn. Hgghp ukghn<sup>n</sup> kwnh<sup>n</sup>kx ejl xavxn mc ukghn<sup>n</sup>k fcnc; cjxkc ohjxn unhv<sup>n</sup> khl hb r<sup>n</sup>ghkghnh, vvh evckgcnc shmhf menxn. Fw x; x rcfnxk hnhs<sup>n</sup>kvh devvx rhn<sup>n</sup>a

<sup>1</sup> āSxnedx xfKx Pxahl β, L xsxn ]h<sup>n</sup>, 1-[ [xgv, scp.6, āJhnxoβ Jcfcnxβ, Hmnu<sup>n</sup>h ]h<sup>n</sup>, 1-[x [xgv, scp.352æ āXfKx Csxnxk jhnxoβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.89æ āXfKx : csxnk jhnxoβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.193æ āL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhβ, āpc[cnβ l hvvcsx.

<sup>2</sup> āCj-Jcfcrtjβ (XfKx Sc/v), 1-[x [xgv, scp.25.

<sup>3</sup> āCg-x; jxthw tx l cyhbxg-L i sjcth mcs-scghscjxg-oi gcthβ, scp.119, Peknx L hsekxk jcspxp, {zmg : nxkeg ]h<sup>n</sup>, Cg[cbhxn, 1931-[x xg. : cghx Si gedl hk xfKx L wsh, zb ; xjh<sup>f</sup>k<sup>n</sup>k l i rcvxl csxkvc redv ugwkvwyyw ; xl x, 565-[x px[nx xgxkvc vuywgl wa, 634-[i xgvc xsc mcthj ejl xavxn.

I cshtc mhnv`n.<sup>1</sup>

Redv ugwkxk fw ncmhdcjgcn oi gcth I c; jcfxkxk ; xjhfgnh`kvh  
I zm[wvvn. Cpgx-fedj ☼ I c; jcfxkxk ; xjhfgnh`kvh xsc  
hahy`vh;` ncmhdcjgcnx redv ejl c; ughn... L cnpwl : wgedkxkxk  
(329-[w p.r xgxkvc mcthj evxf) â: htxß ; xjhfv`kvh, Aedo Scvwrwk  
(281-[x p.r xgxkvc mcthj evxf) âL ck gh dcpbwnwpwg-terxpß mc  
âXgcgi a-acnhdeß ; xjhfgnh`kvh, Tedb : hahkxkxk (1098-[x p.r xgxkvc  
mcthj evxf) âMhtxß ; xjhfv`kvh, Cgghl c L c[gxsxkxk (1111-[x p.r  
xgxkvc mcthj evxf) âFxpnhwg-ckmhnß ; xjhfv`kvh fegc fxn ncmhdcj  
kcrq ugwkwn...âPh[cn mc Xsl hxgk rcfnx Px[nvc dengcaxn.<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn denvc vedxgn...â|edycl fcngcnxk rcfngcnx Px[nvc dengcaxn.<sup>3</sup>

â: htxß, âMhtxß mc âFxpnhwg-ckmhnß ; xjhfgnh`kvh fegc kcrq  
ugwkwn...âPx[nvc, x; xk[x Ni; kik pi vvwghn`kvh Xsl hxgk r'bgghn` vctk ugwkI wa-  
vvn.<sup>4</sup>

Cfw Fc; n Cpl cv xfkx Tcrxp Pcl vhkx |edycl fcnxk fegc  
fwdwnvwykw kcrq evxn...

âZb rzml ikvck rh]hk egc fxn \edycl fcn ugl hd'f ; x, L c; ;cdc vuynw  
'cgl csxk mc vi kdhvhk 'evckc rcvcn Hgghph xfhvcj ejl cl xa ugswk. Pwv, Ai edf  
mc Shgcpk rcfngcnx Bcl -bcl gc L crhl x-Xfnhpxl hnhs`kvh dengcaxn. Xghpx \ed-  
ycl fcngcnvck i] dib kctcnxkxk rcfnx : c/fcvcvvn. Ni; ki Dcl hka xgc Ni; ki

---

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx { i fedn L cpcl I cv xfkx Cpl cv xfkx { i fedn : ck/hkx Ckvcgwsx.  
539, dhowv 540-[` px[nx xgxkxk ncfxi g-cmmcg hd`k`k 10-vh ackfc 'e[csx  
vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc 616-[` px[nx xgxkxk ac/fhk hd`k`k 27, dhowv 29-vh  
]cnackfc 'e[csx Xs; ckvcnxdccvc mcthj ejl xavxn. U, I hpxn cvxf, I capwn ahxn,  
fzdi ; acosddcjgx mc hgxl[ckhf xkshk ugl wa mc Ckvcgwsxk (xkvx; x  
Xs\hkdhk`k) txrp mc pcvxs hgxl gcnxkvck shd'g`nv`. Ukwk âSctcnkhl cßsx  
pc[[ sctcnxkc hxv I c/gwl hjghn` cphjc evck fxn ; xjhfv`n ; x, fw sctcn 578-[x  
xgxk acmmhg hd`k`k 19-w fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki kvck fhaghkl `a mc 581-[x xgxk  
I cpcnncl hd`k`k 22-x [i I c hoahl ` 'i ki kc rcvcn vhmhl ejl xavxn. L xsxn,  
cncl zg; cgcnx, Xnhr, Ahl mc shxn zg; cgcnc sctcn ejl xa, ; e]vxdx mc vi acn`c  
shgv`y` acpcngcnx fw âSctcnkhl cßvc redvc hgl `av`n.

<sup>2</sup> âTi nwv : htxß, pc[[ ; xjhfv, pc[[i Xfnhpxl mc Xsl hxg fhfv, pcvxs, 14æ 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.210æ âL ck gh dcpbwnwpwg-terxpß, pc[[ ; xjhfv, 2-[x [xgv, scp.125æ  
âMhtxß, pc[[ ; xjhfv, 8-[x [xgv, scp.28æ âFxpnhwg-ckmhnß, ki fi mmcj ; xjhfv, 5-[x  
[xgv, scp.143-144, pcvxs, 41, 54

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvh

Csmcv hnhs`kvh dejl xa \edycl fcn vctk ugwkl wavwn.<sup>1</sup>

Rcfxngcnxk jc/l xn evxgl csxkxk vi b'i k fxn xa mc [hxb ugl hs`kh xkhkhkghn dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghnvhk cghmc, fegc fxn vcgxg vc 'cjxnxngcn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk, Cfw Fc; nxk mc Zl cnxk rcfnx vc mcthj ejvx; gcnx jhnxovck xkvxdc rcvcn i sji znji gi fxxkhv ugl wavwn.<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vedxngcn... L i jchg Hgghp fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿وَاتَّخِذُوا مِنْ مَّقَامِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ مُصَلًّى﴾

âXfnhpxl xk l crhl `kvhk xfhvcj'hp se]xk.B  
Dekc fwdwnwn...

﴿إِذْ يَتَنَزَّعُونَ بَيْنَهُمْ أَمْرَهُمْ فَقَالُوا ابْنُوا عَلَيْهِم بُيُوتًا﴾

âUkghn`k (Csphfx : cptxk) phgkh h'hp ughkghn âUkghn`k fw denxkvc fxn l cs[xv jx; cnx; .B – vevxgc.B<sup>2</sup>

Fcgx, mcpphfxgc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk, scphfcgcnxk mc xl hl ghn`k ☼ rcfxngcnxk bxdhncj evckgcx rcfnc \cncsjxa evckgcx peshf evxn. Xkvx redv ugwkhhkghn` kcbnc hgl hrgh 'zncsck, ghdxrvxn x ; x, ukghn Ohjcl i g-Ckfxdhk` mc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxk, egc[c vc ukvhk cmmcg; x \edycl fcngcnx ârcfnc \cncsjxa evckgcx peshf ejsxkgcn?! } i k; x ukghn`k phl `s` Px[nx Xsl hxgxk cjnht`kh jcmht evxnvxgc, phgfw; x, Px[nx Xsl hxg Ph[cn, Xsl hxg mc ukwk zmghvghn`k`k mc ukghnvhk cmmcg; x \edycl fcngcnxk vctk ugwkvwyyw denvxn!!!

7-LEDDXJC HYGHLHR FHNC SXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT MC UKWK  
LCKACDX

L eddxjc, oi swsxc acpxvc hyghl hr |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk si kkcxsxkx hdn`gl hb fxn pxsscsxvxn. Fwohnz zbi -ki k âScpxpß ; xjh`kvh fegc ncmhdcj evxn...âBedv, { c/tcn mc Xfkx Ncmhpckxk acphvcj ocfcx 'cgxf ]hjl hl `a, |edycl fcn ukghn`k ke[c acpxv ugl hghn`k` [hl hhjh fegc mcst ejvx...âBedv fhdny` cgxkc hg`f acpxv ugvw. Suknh { c/tcn ukw cgxkc hg`f acpxv ugvw...ß Pcl xk phgvh |edycl fcnxk x; x 'zbgcnxkvck dha

<sup>1</sup> âL i ojcsni ; xjhfxg-fi gvhkß, (Cfw Fc; n xfkx Tcrxp Pcl vhxk, 340-[' xgvc mcthj evxfvxn.) Fnxg ]h\, Gxvek, 1302-[x px[nx rcl cnx xg, scp.17.

<sup>2</sup> â: cptß swncsx, hdc.21

hol hyh fhaghv`β<sup>1</sup>

âXsjxd/hfß, âWsvwg-yhfcß mc âCg-xshfcß ;xjhfgahn`kvh {c/tcnxk jcn[i l edx-phg` fzgl csxkvc, âJhnnox Jcfcnxß mc fharh ;xjhfgahnvh âLujcß rcbmcsx fzgl csxkvc fxn ncmhdcj redv ugwk l wavwn ;x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn...

â{c/tcn mc ukwk ;zl c;]xgcnx acpxv ughkvh |edycl fcnx-C;- ncl j ukwk emxkc 'evxf zmghvghn`k` ]hy`nv` mc ukghn` (hywawkh hg`f) xdgcvx, suknh hyghv`. {c/tcnxk bzm[csx Csl h vevx... âHjhl -hkhl sckc tcvh ugswk, kc i ]i k hyghd`ns`k`b? {c/tcn mc ukwk ;zl c;]xgcnxkvck fxn ocfcn ]hj`fl `?ß Fwdwnvw... âFw `i k acpxv ugvwghn...ß

Csl h vedxn...âLck hdhyh rhgov`l , hp-khgc evcnc; rhv`kghn` zb cjhnt`l h d`yv`l . Suknh Thjxl ckxk dhk`kh 'evxf 'znvi l ;x, u vh âMhd cl x [hkß - vedxf hyghd`n. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j fw l ckbcnckx l i ahpxvc ejvx;vc, fwdwnvw... âPcrxrcjck, hyghdhkghn `cnc; {c/tcn ;xl xgcnc hyghs`kghnß

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL j -XK ZB UYGW XFNHPXLC  
HYGHLHS-

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc mc fharh ;xjhfgahnvh Ckcsvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... |edycl fcngc fxngx;vc ujhyh vhoxx ugvr... " znvi ;x, Xfnhpxl [hk i sji kvcvxn. |edycl fcnxk 'zbgcnx dhagh vugvw. Cfvi nncpl hk xfkx Umt jcc[[i fgc vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Sxbvcl x?ß Fwdwnvw...

يَا ابْنَ عَوْفٍ إِنَّهَا رَحْمَةٌ ثُمَّ اتَّبَعَهَا بِأُخْرَى فَقَالَ : إِنَّ الْعَيْنَ تَدْمَعُ وَالْقَلْبَ يَحْزَنُ وَلَا تَقُولُ  
إِلَّا مَا يَرْضَى رَبُّنَا وَأَنَا بِفِرَاقِكَ يَا إِبْرَاهِيمَ لَمَحْزُونُونَ .

âEd Umtwk ugw! Fw, ncpl cjvxnß Suknh szbi kc vhmhl evcnc; fwdwnvw... âFcgx, fxbxl 'zbgcnxl xb hyghn, rcgfxl xb rcl gxvxn. Gh; xk pe] mhoj Hgghp`k nhb` ugvwyyw szbgcnvck fharh fxn aedx vxgxl xbc 'cjxnl cnx;. Ed Xfnhpxl ! Fxb sckxk hdn`g`y`kh ;cvcngxdx;ß Xfkx Lh[ckxk âSi kckß ;xjhfkvh xsc fegc redv ugwkwn...â|edycl fcn ukwk dhk`kvh vhdhk`f hyghv`β<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, tcbhxgw csphfxk-Kcfxdd ;xjh`f, l ckhrxfw Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxv fh`f, 2-[x [xgv, scp.204, L xsxn ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.158, âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, 4-[i [xgv. scp.1808, âSi kckx xfkx Lh[cß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.473, pcvxs, 1475, âCj-Jcferhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 1-[x [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.88, Hmnu`h ]h` , âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.194.

# |EDYCLFCNXK ZB KCMCSXKC HYGHLHS-

âScpxpx Fwohnxß mc fharh ;xjhfgnhv redv ugwkwn ;x, fxn  
 'i k |edycl fcnxk r`b` u pcbncj i ]i k fegc fxn ocfcn 'zkvcnvx...  
 âFxbxl dhk`l `bh 'cg, uygwl epjxbhn ([hk menl c) phg`kvhv`n.ß  
 |edycl fcn ; hdhyh rhgo`f Sc/v xfkx l fhvc mc fxn ke]c  
 scphfc xgc fxngx; vc ukghn`k dhk`kh 'cgvx. Suk kctcsgcnxkx ]c; ck  
 wahy` u pcbncjxk dhk`kh 'c]xnvxcn. |edycl fcnxk 'zb dhaghn`  
 hol hyh fhaghv`. Sc/v vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Kc 'zni ncl ?!ß |ed-  
 ycl fcn fwdwnvw...

هَذِهِ رَحْمَةٌ جَعَلَهَا اللَّهُ فِي قُلُوبِ عِبَادِهِ وَإِنَّمَا يَرْحَمُ اللَّهُ مَنِ عِبَادِهِ الرَّحْمَاءَ

âFw, ncpl cj mc l cpcffcjvxn ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh fckvcgcnxkxk rcgfixkvc rudl wa-  
 vwn. Hgghp-jhhgh Zbikik dhgk`b ncpxl gx mc l epnxfhk fckvcgcnxkx ncpl cjc ahl xg  
 evxf fhy`aghdhn.ß<sup>1</sup>

## |EDYCLFCN ; -XK ZB CLXSX PCLBCDC HYGHLHS-

Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß, Mhrxvxkxk âLcyhbxß mc shxn  
 ;xjhfgnhv ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ;  
 âl pi vß rcbmcsxkvck suknh ckshn hxgcgcnxkxk zb zgckgcnxkc  
 hyghl hr scsxkx eaxvckvc, 'zbgcnx dhagh vugvw, hyghv` mc fw-  
 dwnvw... âGh;xk Pcl bcde hyghdhk duovwn!ß Sc/v xfkx L chb fwkw  
 eaxjvx; vc Fckx Cfvi g-Capcg rhv`kghn`k`k dhk`kh 'ejvx mc  
 ukghn` |edycl fcnxk emxkc 'zkvcnvx ;x, Pcl bcde vc  
 hyghs`kghn. |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; ukghn`k scsxkx  
 eaxjvx; vc, vwh evcnc; emgcnxkc rhdjhnv`. Fw phvxscvck suknh  
 rhv`kghn`k phl`s` fxn zgi dc hyghl hr xsjcdckvc, cmmcg[c  
 Pcl bcde, suknh xsc zb zgi gcnxkc hyghd`nv`ghn.ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, [ckhxb ;xjhF, 4-[i [xgv, scp.3 mc 191, jumpxv ;xjhF, axkkc ncpl cjcggphx rcnxfwk l xkcg-l wpsxkxkß fhFæ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, [ckhxb ;xjhF, 2-[x [xgv, scp.636, pcvxs 11æ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, [ckhxb ;xjhF, 3-[i [xgv, scp.193. pcvxs. 3125æ âSi kckx Kcshxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.22æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.204, 206, 207.

<sup>2</sup> âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, scp.11æ âLcyhbxß (Mhrxvx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.315, 317æ âCl jhwg-csl hß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.163æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.40æ âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, 532æ âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.50æ âXsjxd/hfß mc âWsvwg-yhfcbvc ukw Pcl bckxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh r`sh ac; xg-vc redv ejl xagcn.



|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; ZB HKHS-K-K LCBHN-  
I SJI KVC HYGHD-N MC FHARHGHN-K- VH HYGHV-N

âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß mc vx'cn ; xjhfgnhv  
fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl zb hkhs`k`k rcfnxkx  
bxdhncj evxf hyghv` mc ukwkgf fxngx; vc 'cgckgcnx vc hyghjv`.ß<sup>1</sup>

|EDYCLFCN ; LI SXFCJ "ZNCKGCNC DELC:  
"ZKVCNVX

âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß mc fharh ; xjhfgnhv fegc kcrj ugwkwn...  
â{c/tnxk acphvcj ocfcnx ]hjhkvh, |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... â{c-  
tnxk hxgcsx i ]i k del c; phb`nghd`kæ ]i k; x ukghnh l i sxfcj mh-  
nxv ugl wavwn mc fw l i sxfcj ukghn` zbgcnxkc l caywg ejl xa-  
vxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; L HJCL LCNHSLX I } I K  
PCVV-PI VWV JC/DXK EVXN

âScpxpx Fwohnxß mc fharh ; xjhfgnhv kcrj ugwkxh l i jcmhxn  
ncmhdcjgcnvc fegc vedxgn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl rhv`k`k zb  
cnxkvck fharhs` mcthj ejvx; vc i ] 'i k, zb cnx mcthj ejvx; vc xsc  
Hghp-jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw vznv hd uk 'i k l hjcl jc/dxk  
ejl xavxn.ß<sup>3</sup>

L EDDXJC HYGHL HR FHNC SXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT-K L CKACDX

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxh ncmhdcjvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, |edycl -  
fcnx-C; ncl i mcthj evck acosc, pcl ukwk [hk

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.671, pcvxs, 108æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.441æ âSi kckx Kcshxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.90æ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.501, pcvxs, 1572æ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.218, pcvxs, 3234

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.515, pcvxs, 1610 mc 1611æ âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.219 mc fwnhvh vedxgn ; x, fw pcvxs pcsc pcvxs-gcnvckvxæ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.195, pcvxs, 3132æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.205, 6-[` [xgv, scp.370.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, [ckhxb ; xjh<sup>f</sup>, 1-[x [xgv, scp.154, jcghr ; xjh<sup>f</sup>, 3-[i [xgv, scp.189, 190æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, jcghr ; xjh<sup>f</sup>, pcvxs, 1486, 1487, 1490, 1491, 1124-1128æ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, jcghr ; xjh<sup>f</sup>, 2-[x [xgv, scp.290, 291, pcvxs, 2990 mc 2302æ âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.171-174æ âSi kckx Kcshxß, jcghr ; xjh<sup>f</sup>æ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.374, pcvxs, 285-287æ âSi kckx Vhnc l xß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.167, âCg-L i mcjjccß (L hgx;), pcvxs, 101 mc 105æ âJcferhjß (Xfkx Scv), 4-[i [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.27 mc 28, 8-[x [xgv, scp.70æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.8 mc 6-[` [xgv, scp.37, 184, 249, 281, 287, 324, 325, 326, 369, 408, 426æ âL i skcvx Jcdhgxß, scp.1587, 589 mc 1591.

menl csxkvck cmmcg, pcl vc suknh (oi swsxc acpxvc) hyghl `a  
 mc 'zsjcnxa menl xavxn ;x, acpxvc vc hyghs`kghn. U pcbncj  
 hkhs`k`k rcfnx i sjc hyghl `a, fharhghn`k` vh hyghjl `av`n. Suknh  
 fwdwnl wavwn ;x, l i sxfcj 'znck acosgcnc del c; 'zkcnsxkgcn  
 mc rhv`kghn zb cngcnxkvck fharhghn` i ]i k i ] 'i k l hjcl jwj-  
 swkghn. Vel cgx, l eddxjc hyghl hr mc ukh shoghkhk l hjcl xk  
 pcvvxkx-pi vvvvkw jc/dxk ejl c; , phfegc l i sxfcj 'znckgcnc  
 del c; phb`nghd`f 'zkvcnl c; |edycl fcn si kkcxsxvn. Xkvx fegc  
 swhg dnhhk`n ;x, fwnhvh;` xojxght`k – l eddxjc hyghl hy`k  
 rhvhyhk ugwkl hs`k`k l ckacdx kcvxn? Fw swhg`k vh [hmf`k`  
 âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc, âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc 'znl c; ughn. Fegc ;x,  
 l eddxjc hyghl hr Zl cn jcnctxkvck rhvhyhk evxgl xavxn.

Zl cn ncmhdcj evxn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl l eddxjc hi gh-  
 l hy` rhvhyhk ejl xavxn, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac ukwk scp-  
 mxkx fcn`h evxn.

âScpxpx Fwohnxß mc âScpxpx L i sgi l ß ;xjhfgghn`kvh Xfkx  
 Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx kcrj ugwkwn... Zl cn bcncfcjgckck bhl hk  
 Si pedf hyghdhnhr vedxnvx... âEd rhnvha`l mhd! Mhd rhnvha`l  
 mhdß Suknh ukwk fha` i sji kc 'cgvx, Zl cn vevx... âSi pedf!  
 Lckc hyghd`nshk?! Phgfw;x |edycl fcn âL eddxj rupwl -  
 crncfhs`k`k ukh hyghv`y`kh 'znc cbhfh vi ]hn ugwnß - vedc  
 fwdwnl wavwn. Xfkx Hffhs vedxnvx... Zl cn vi kdhvhk 'evckvck  
 suknh fw xax Hdxacdc vevxl , U vevx... Hgghp Zl cnx fhy`aghs`k!  
 Hgghp hkx ugswk ;x, |edycl fcn âHgghp l z/l xkc, rupwl -cr-  
 ncfs`k`k ukh hyghv`y`kh 'znc cbhf menxnß vedc fwdwnl hd`f,  
 c; sxkc u, fegc fwdwnl wavwn... âHgghp ;htxnx, rupwl -crncfhs`k`k  
 ukh hyghv`y`kh 'znc cbhfh vi ]hn evcnß Suknh vevx... âSxbxk  
 Rwn/hk`k`b ;xthdcjvxn, unvhv fwdwnwgvwn... âMc gh jcbxw mhbxncjwk  
 mxnc wonhß – pe] ;cs fharhs`k`k 'ikh p di ;iki zpvcsxkc ]c;l cbß Xfkx  
 Hffhs fwnh ]hjhkvh vevx... âHyghvhk vh, 'i gvinck vc Hgghp`n.ß¹

âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc vedxgvx... Hdxackxk dhk`kvh vedxgvx ;x,  
 Zl cnxk uvgw |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk âL eddxj zb rcfnxkv  
 dho`k hvhl ghn`k`k ukh hyghv`y`kh 'znc cbhfh vi ]hn ugwnß –  
 fwdwnvwywk vedxnv. Hdxac vevx... U scpm evxf. |edycl fcn  
 dhgk`b fegc fwdwnv... âU, dhgk`b 'i khpgghn` mc fcv cl cggcnx

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, [ckhxb ;xjh`f, 1-[x [xgv, scp.155, 156æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß,  
 [ckhxb ;xjh`f, scp.641, pcvxs, 22.

scfcfxkc cbhf ugwkwn, dho`k hvhl ghn` xsc ukh hyghd`nghn.ß

Ukvhk cmmcg;x ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxgx... Hdxackxk dhk`kvh Xfkx ZI cnxk vevxdx ál eddxj rupwl -crncfhs`k`k ukh hyghv`y`kh 'znc cbhfh vi ]hn ugwnß - szbi kvck szpfcj h]`gv`, Hdxac vevx... Hgghp ukw fhy`aghs`k! Fxn aedx eavvxf, gh;xk dhv`kvh dhoa` shoghdh fxgl cdx. Lcscgc fegc ugl wavw... Dcpwvx fxn acosxk [ckhbcxkx – rupwl ghn` ukh hyghv`y` phgvh – |edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh ;e]xnvxnvgcn. U pcbncj fwdwnvw... åSxb hyghd`ns`k`b, ukh xsc cbhf menxgx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xl hl Ki mcmx (676-[` xgvc mthj evxf) åScpxpx Li sgi I ß ;xjh`k` acnp evcn;ck |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck zgi dc hyghl hy`k rhvhyhk ugwkli hs` fhncsxkvc ncmhdcjgc cghrcvhn fegc vedx... Fw ncmhdcjgcxk phl `s` ZI cnc mc ukwk ugw Cfvi gghph ]hj`n ;x, Hdxac ukw xk;hn ejl xa, |edycl fcnc kxsfcj menxgl csxkxk scfcfxkx u x;x kctcnxk scpm mc wkwjrhkg`y` fxgvxnl xavxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Hahy`vh;` pcvxsvck hdv`k ugwn ;x, xojxght`k I ckacdx ocgxtc ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k zb acosx nc/dx mc x]xphv` ugl wavwn... u, zgi dc hyghl hy`, |edycl fcnxk si kkcscx ugvwyw phgvh, rhvhyhk ejl xavxn. }ik;x fxn ncmhdcjvc vedxgvxdx ;xl x, |edycl fcnxk dho`k rupwl ghn`kvhk fxn kctcn mthj ejvx;vc rhv`kghn ukwk fha`k`k i sji kc 'cgnc; hyghd`f khgc ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn. ZI cn hdhyh rhgo`f ukghn` fw xavck ]c;xkvxnvx mc ukghn` vhy`jv`. |edycl fcn j fwdwnvw...åZI cn! Ukghngh xaxk ugl hs`k! "zb dhagh vugw, rcgf I isxfcgx mc vhy jcbcvxn.ß<sup>3</sup>

åScpxpx Fwohnxßvc fegc redv ugwkwn...åZI cn (l eddxjc) hi gh-dhkghn` csh xgc mwnwn, vhagh rumwn mc jun\hr 'zji ni f ukghn`k i sji kc jwggghd`nv`.ß<sup>4</sup>

L eddxjc hyghl hrgh cghrcvhn xojxght`k I ckacdx fw I cscgc

<sup>1</sup> åScpxpx Li sgi I ß, [ckhxb ;xjh`f, scp.642, 643, pcvxs, 25, 26, 27. Pcl ]xkxk fwkwk uoahn` åSi kckx Jxnl xbxßkxk [ckhxb ;xjh`f kvh 4-[i [xgv, scp.225-vc, åSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvßwk, [ckhxb ;xjh`f kvh, 3-[i [xgv, scp.194 mc pcvxs, 3129-vh redv ugwkli wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> åAcnpix Ki mcmxß, åScpxpx Li sgi I Bi k phaxdcxkvc, åCg-l cjcfcji g-L xsnxddcß ]h`, 1349-[w px[nx xg, 6-[` [xgv, scp.228.

<sup>3</sup> åSi kckx Kcshxß, [ckhxb ;xjh`f, cn-nwoscjw txg-fw;hx cgcg-l cddxj fhf`æ åSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, [ckhxb ;xjh`f, scp.505, pcvxs, 1587æ åLi skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.110, 273, 333, 408, 444.

<sup>4</sup> åScpxpx Fwohnxß, [ckhxb ;xjh`f, 1-[x [xgv, scp.258.

fhnscxkvc fxn-fxnxc bxvxdcdjgx ncmhdcjgcnxk kerg evxgl csxvxn.  
"i [gi epjxl hgh 'znc zgi dc hyghl hy`k rhvhyhk evxgl csx  
ocgxte ZI cnxk acosx nc/dx ugl wavwn. Fw vh pcl xk rcfxgvck  
ughk ncmhdcjgcnxk dnhhkl hs`kh fxn scfcfvxn. }i k;x fxbxl  
redv ejvx; gcxl xbvck cghmc, ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k acosx nc/d mc  
tx; xngcnxkx jcsvxrgcdck fharh ncmhdcjgcx vc kerg ugwkl wavwn  
;x, fwnhvh ukghn`k hnhav`n`ghnhr jckrxv evxgl csxkc xl ;hk  
duovwn. Dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghn zgi dc hyghl hrgh cghrcvhn  
xojxghtghn`k fcdhk evxgl csxkvc mc xbgcl c; xsjcvxdxl xb  
l cscgcckxk pcggxkvc ;xthdcj even.

Xojxghtghn`k`k l ckacdx pcvxsgcnvc;x xojxghth rhd`vhk  
l cscgcgcnxk fc/bx kil wkcgcnxkx redv ejvx;. Hgghp`k pzmj mc  
rimmcx xgc suknh;` fzgl cvc l c/khghn`k`k jc/mxg mc  
dubwl wkvh xojxght dnhhkhk fc/bx Rwn/hk hdcgcx fcdhk  
evxgc[c; vxn.

8-JC/MXG MC LC/KHGHN-KVH XOJXGHT UGWKHK RWN/HK  
HDCGCNX

Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkxk jc/mxg mc l c/khghn`kvh;` xojxght`k fc/bx  
ki l wkcgcnxkx fwnhvh redv evxn; ...

h) Hgghpvhk fharhs`k` ]hy`nl hr

Mcpphfx l cbpcfxxk fhkxsx Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi g-  
Mcpphf zbi ki k âCg-i swgws-scghscjw mc cvxggcjwphß ;xjh`f`k`k  
4-[i scpxtcsxkvc fegc vedxn... âFxxg ;x, - Hgghp`k ncpl cjx sckc  
ugswk! - pcn fxn l i scgl hk ;xax mc rhv`kh mh[xfvxn ;x, redv  
ejvxdxl fw i ] l cscgckx zdncksxk mc ukghnh cl cg ejsxk...  
Fxnk[xx... Fwkw fxgsxk ;x, fxbx Hgghp dhnhjl `av`n. X; xk[xx... Hgghp,  
Ukh xfhvcjvc fxn ;csxk - xsjcn l i rcnncf l cgc; ugswwk, xsjcn  
l i nscg `edycl fcn - Ukh acnx; ruawgl hs`kh nhb` ugl hv`y`k`  
fxgsxkæ fwkwk vcgxx vc Hgghp-jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw fw hdcvxn...

﴿وَأَنَّ الْمَسَاجِدَ لِلَّهِ فَلَا تَدْعُوا مَعَ اللَّهِ أَحَدًا﴾

âPcrrcjck, l cs[xvgcn Hgghp l coswvwn, Hgghpgh fxng;vc fharhs`k` ]hy`n-  
l hd`k.ß<sup>1</sup>

Pcl xk ;xjh`f`k 5-[x scpxtcsxkvc fegc dhh`n...âXfnhpxl xk pckxt  
hdxkx uvwn ;x, dhgk`b mhpvx Hgghp xfhvcj evcsck mc zb vx-  
kxkx Ukwk i ]i k ohgxscavxncsck, ]i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh fi ji k  
xkshkghn` l cpb fwkwk i ]i k dhnhjl `a mc egc ukh cl n evcnc;  
fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿وَمَا خَلَقْتُ الْجِنَّ وَالْإِنسَ إِلَّا لِيَعْبُدُونِ﴾

â{xkgcnx mc xkshkghn`, dhgk`b Lckc xfhvcj ejxkgcn vedc, ocgr ejvxl .ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw hdcvc; x âdc/fwvwkxß [i l gcsx âdwmcppxvwkxß, dc/kx âL c-  
kxl de`hkc ugvwywl phgvh, \cncsjxa ejxkgcnß l c/khs`khv`n.  
Hgghp`k tcnl hk menvxdx ck dhoe` aed jumpxvvn. Jumpxv vc  
mhpvx ughk Hgghp xfhvcj ejl c; l c/khs`kvhv`n. Hgghp`k fck-  
vcgcnx ]c; xkvxnvxdx mc ukghnh rhvhyhk ejvxdx ck l i pi l aed  
vc axn; vxn ;x, fw vh Hgghpvhk fharhs`k` ]hy`nl hyh vedxgn.ß

Kcphdcj, 8-[x scpxtcvc fegc vedxn... âUkwk vcgxx vc Hgghp-

<sup>1</sup> â{xkß swncsx, hdc.56 âCg-i swgws-scghscjwß nxshgcsx, Rhpnc ]h`\, 1380-[x  
px[nx xg, âCv-vxkw mc ai nwjwphß nxshgcsx, pcl xk ]h`. Pcl ]xkxk, âXsnhß swnc-  
sxkxk 56-[` hdcx mc ukh uoahn hdcgcnc xsjxkhv ejl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âBhnxdhjß swncsx, hdc.56

jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw âXkkg-l csh[xvc gghpß ; cghl `v`n.ß

46-[` scpxtcsxkvc fegc dhb`n...âVznvik[i... Fxg ; x, fxbxl bcl hkc-  
l xbxk l i anx; gcnx cmmcg; xgcnvck rhj-rhj hnj`r l i anx; vxngcn.  
} i k; x cmmcg; x l i anx; gcn txnhmhk`r phg`kvh axn; evxn, ]cjkxgx;  
phg`kvh xsc l i ogxs mc xoghsq` ugwnvwghn. Gh; xk fxbxl bcl h-  
kckxk l i anx; gcnx pcl ]cjkxgx; vc, pcl vc nxthp mc txnhmhk`r  
phg`kvh l i anx; vxngcn. Ukwk vcgxx vc Hgghp-jhhghk`k fwdwn-  
vwyw fw ; cghl v`n...

﴿فَإِذَا رَكِبُوا فِي الْفُلْكَ دَعَوْا اللَّهَ مُخْلِصِينَ لَهُ الدِّينَ فَلَمَّا نَجَّاهُمْ إِلَى الْبَرِّ إِذَا هُمْ يُشْرِكُونَ﴾

â"cl xdc l xkvx; gcnx bhl hk Hgghp` xoghsq` ]hy`n`nv`ghn, gh; xk Hgghp ukghnh  
kx[hj menxf rwnwgyh ]`ohnjv`y bhl hk, dekvck l i anx; ugwnvwghn.ß<sup>1</sup>

U, âCv-vxkw mc ai nwjws-scghjß ; xjhfk`k 8-[x scpxtcsxkvc  
fc/bx l cjgfcgcnx redv evxn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn...âXfhvcjxk  
]uogw kzmgnx mhnv`n, ukghnvhk fxnx vc vwh ejl c; vxn. Fwkwx  
vh vcgxx Hgghp-jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw âXkkg-l csh[xvc gghpß hdcx-  
vxn.ß

âAsthws-si vwnß ; xjhfk`k 3-[i scpxtcsxkvc fegc dhb`n (fw  
; xjhfk`k âCg-[cmhfwg-l ca; wnß ; xjhfk`k ncvv ejl c; i ] i k âVhnw  
xtjhxg-hl l cjxß jcnctxkvck kcan ugwkl wavwn)...âUkghn jumpxv  
kxvh]`ghn`k`k [hxxaxkxkc mc ocgxcsxkca axn; rhnhkg`rghn`k`k fw  
zg; cgvnck (L c; ; c mc L cvxkvck) hnhvhk h`hnhk, ukwk hgwwc-  
gx; gcnxkx jcl xbgcdck mc cscngcnxkx l cpm evckgcxk [hxxaxkxkc  
ax; hdcj ejvxgn...ß<sup>2</sup>

Licgxt vedn...âHgghpvhk fharhs`k`k ]hy`nl hrß, dhowv âfxn ; csx  
Hgghpgh fxngx; vc ]hy`nl hrß vevx; vc, fwkw kcbnvc jwjwngn  
; x, l xshg i ] i k fxn l iscg l hk ]edycl fcx Hgghp dhk`kvh  
mhsxjc rcnln menxf âDh Ncswgcgghpß vesxk, dhowv Hgghpvhk  
fharh Ukwk shxn zmgxdhghn`k`k vh fegc ]hy`nl `a ugswkghn. Ukgh-  
n`k vcgxxgcxkxk phl `s` vh âgh jcv/w l ccgghp...ß hdcx l epmc-  
nxkvc [cncdhk evxn. Fegc ; x, Hgghp Ukwkgh fxngx; vc fxn ; csx,  
dhowv Ukvhk fharhs`k`k ]hy`nl hy`kcpd mc rhvhyhk ejl xavxn.

f) Hgghpvhk fharhs`k`k pz; l i

âHgghpvhk fharhs`k`k pz; l i ßki k l xshg` vh âHgghpvhk  
fharhs`k`k ]hy`nl hy`kß l xshg` ; xl vxvn. Hl l h ukghn`k

<sup>1</sup> âCk; cfwjß swncsx, hdc.65

<sup>2</sup> âAsthws-si vwnß, 1-[x ]h`, âCk-kwnw gxj-jxfhcjx mcj-jc[gxvß l i cssxscsx.

I i ohgxtgcnx âfwkghn`k 'cjxnvx; gcnx vcgvggcx âSxttedkß I i ph-nxfcsxkvc pc; cl xddcjx rcfwg evck ocmhnx[xk vcgvggcxkx ke[c vc uoahnv`n!ß - vedxngcn. } i k; x, ocmhnx[gcx vc I cpb fw hdcgcnx cshs 'cjxnvnvxgcx...

﴿إِنَّ الْحُكْمَ إِلَّا لِلَّهِ عَلَيْهِ تَوَكَّلْتُ وَعَلَيْهِ فَلْيَتَوَكَّلِ الْمُتَوَكِّلُونَ﴾

â(Pz; I dhgk`b Hgghph I coswsvwn), Ukh jcmc;; ig ejvxl mc fijik jcmc;; ig evckgcx vc 'cnc; Ukh jcmc;; ig ejsxkgcn.ß<sup>1</sup>

﴿أَفَغَيْرَ اللَّهِ أَبْتَغِي حَكَمًا وَهُوَ الَّذِي أَنْزَلَ إِلَيْكُمُ الْكِتَابَ﴾

âDuosh Hgghpvhk fharhs`k ph; xl rcnhdn menc;?! Phgfw; x U, fw ; xjh`f sabc jcnct 'zkvcnI xavxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Ukghn I cpb fw ; xl x hdcgcnx vcgvgx 'cjxnngcn<sup>3</sup> ; x, fwkwk vh cmmcgx âSxttedkß I i phnxfcsxkx rhd`v`n. Fegc ; x, L i hmxdc u mhoj 'zsjcnxa menI xavx ; x, Rwn/hkghn` kxhcgcnxk fha`kh mwnwf Xnhr ruawkkw Hgghp`k pz; I i kc ]hy`ns`kghn. Xnhr unvsw-wkvh;` rhnxcgcnxk ]uow fw xac hgvhkv`ghn mc XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> - I i phnxfckx vcnphg vhdhkv`n`f L i hmxdcxk pc; cl xddcj jc; gtxkx nhb`g`r menI c; I c[fwnxddcjxkvc rudvwghn. Fwkvhk suknh L i hmxdc zb jcnctxkvck Cl n Hs` pc; cl (ph; xl ) se]vx. Xnhr unvsw dekc vc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> - I c[fwn ejvxgcx ; x, Cfw L wsh Ca/cnxkx ph; xl jc/dxk ejsxk. Fw x; x ph; xl I i bh; xnc h\hn-v`rvhk suknh Cl n Hs Cfw L wsh Ca/cnxkx hgvhjv` mc ukh vevx... Cgx xgc L i hmxdcxk pcn x; xsxkx xavck 'zji ni f oxghtcj xaxkx [hl hhjh pcmhgc evxnx; ; x, zbgcnx i ]i k xsjcvx; gcnx fxn ; csx xl hl se]sxkgcn. Cfw L wsh Ca/cnx Cl n Hsvhk cmmcg szbc fhaghd`f vevx... âL ck Cgxkx mc L i hmxdcxk pz; wl cjvck ]`ohnjv`I ; x, I i scgl hkghn zbgcnx i ]i k fxn ; csx xl hl jc/dxk ejsxkgcn.ß Ukvhk suknh Cl n Hs szbc fhaghd`f vevx... â" znvi di ki b ; xl x, u, zb xl hl `k` mc shpxfxkx xavck ]`ohnjv`. L ck xsc zb xl h-l`l` mc shpxfxl x pz; wl cjc jc/dxk evxncl .ß Fwkvhk suknh [xvvx I i khrxac fhaghkv` mc fxn-fxngcnxkx szdcnc; hdn`gv`ghn. L cpb fw phvxscvck suknh Xnhr unvswkvh pc; cl xddcjx rcfwg evckgcx zb scpmgcnxkx fhah vi avigcn mc fwkvhk suknh âgh

<sup>1</sup> âDwsxtß swncsx, hdc.67

<sup>2</sup> âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.114

<sup>3</sup> Fxn vphj jc; nhn evxnx; ; x, fxb x; x jcnctxk vcgvggcxkxk phl `s`k` fxn den-vc ju`ghl hr cbl xkvc vedxgx; , c; sxkc ukghn`k dhgk`b fc/bx ki I wkcgcnxkx redv evxnx; .

pz; l c xggh gxgghpß ai hn`k` menxf vevxgcñ ; x, âfxb pc; cl xddcjx rcfwg ejl c; vc ; htn ugvr, xkvx Hgghp vcn'hp`kvh jzmfc evxn; . Fharhghn`kh vh mh[xfvxn ; x, cmmcg[c zb ; i tngcnxkc e/jxnht ejsxkgn mc fwkvhk suknh fxbxl ; xl x jzmfc ejsxkgn. Fegc ejl cdckgcñ ; htnvxngcn!ß

Fegcgx; gc, ukghn cmmcg[c fw ; xl x phvxscgcñvc xajxnh; evckgcñx, u [i l gcvck Hdxac, Usl hk, Cgx, Jcgpc, Bi fedn, L i hmxdc, Cl n Hs mc ukghn`k hnv`[`gghn`k` ; htn peshf ejvxgcñ. Fwkvhk suknh fi ji kgi ; gc l i scgl hkghn` ; htn peshf evcnc; zbgcnxkx âawnhjß – dc/kx ohnx[xgcñ hvghkv`nv`ghn. Ukghn wbwk csngcn fudw cgc sxghp hg`f l i scgl hkghn` zgvi ni n mc zbgcnx vc rcjgc dejxngxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j ocmhnx[vck ocfcñ menvxdx bh- l hk ke[c vc vi b`i k fwdwnl wavw... âUkghn l i scgl hkghn` zgvi ni n, hl l h fi j\ncsjpgcnc juowkl wngghn. C`cn ukghn` cgxl c ; e]xnscl , âHvß rzml i ; xl x l cpm evcnc! .ß<sup>2</sup> Fharh fxn pcvxs- vc xsc âUkghn` Scl wv rzml i ; xl x l cpm evcnc! ß - vedxgn.<sup>3</sup>

FW X: X L C S C G C V C L I O H G X T G C N X K { H M H F -

Ukghn`k l i ohgxtgcñx [hmhfvh vedxngcn... Rwn/hk`k fc/bx hdcgcñx vx`cn hdcgcñxkx jctsn evxn. Rwn/hkvh;` âxkxg-pw; l w

<sup>1</sup> Jcfcñxkxk, Xfkx Csxnxk, Xfkx : csnxk mc s. ; xl x l i cgxtgcñxk dhbv`y` âJhnxoß ; xjhfgghn`kvh âSxttedkß mc âOcmhnx[ß l i phnxfcsxkxk ocfcngcnxkc fhoh fxgcnxkxb.

<sup>2</sup> Fw u bhl hk fha menl xavx ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Dcl ckvck fxn rhf r`b`g` |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -c`zkcñl xavx. |edycl fcn vc ukw âl i cgxtgcñw rwgwfwpw! ßvhk ughk vnzv kctcnxk hnhs`kvh fzgl i avi. Fw bhl hk Ri neda mc ckshn rcbcfgckvxgcñ mc âukw Kc[vxk fzdi ; gcñxkc menxf fxbx kcbnc hgl hv`ß - vedc e/jxnhb ejvxgcñ. |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âL ck ukghn`k rcg- fgcñxkx cgc hgl hr xsjcdxnc! .ß Fw bhl hk fha` r`no`r fxn kctcn xncgx `cgxf vevx... âDh L i pcl l cv! Hgghpvhk runoß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âC`cn l ck vc Hgghp`k tcñl hk` rhna`s`kvh xjhcsxbgx; ejscl , ukvh ; xl Ukh xjhcy evc- [c; vxñ? L c`cn U, l ckx den i bi ki k cl hkcjvhn` rcñhn menl cvxl x, sxb vc l ckx cl hkcjvhn fxgl cvxkxbl x?ß U acos rhd`jv`rvhk suknh |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âFw vcsjckxk jcnctvhngghn` Rwn/hk uowdhngghn, gh; xk Rwn/hk ukghn`k fuyhbghn`kvhk hahy` ekl cb. : hl hkvhk ]`ohk uo ; xl x Xsghl vxkxkvck ohnx[ ughn mc l i scgl hkghn` zgvi ncngcn.ß

âScpxpx Fwohnxß, jumpxv ; xjhF, 4-[i [xgv, scp.188æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, bc; hj ; xjhF, scp.471, pcvxs...143.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, bc; hj ; xjhF, bx; ni g-ocmhnx[ mc sxthjwpwl fhF, pcvxs, 143-146.



xggh gxgghp – pz; l dhgk`b Hgghph l coswsvwnß hdcxkxk jctsxnx  
vc fw hdcvxn...

﴿فَإِنْ جَاؤُوكَ فَاحْكُم بَيْنَهُمْ أَوْ أَعْرِضْ عَنْهُمْ وَإِنْ تُعْرِضْ عَنْهُمْ فَلَنْ يَضُرُّوكَ شَيْئًا وَإِنْ  
حَكَمْتَ فَاحْكُم بَيْنَهُم بِالْقِسْطِ﴾

âFegc xsc, c'cn scxk dhk`kh 'cgscgc, ukghn`k hnhs`kvh dh pz; l ej, dh vh  
ukghnvhk i b ]emxn. C'cn ukghnvhk i b ]emxnsck, sckc pe] fxn bxdhk ]hjv`nh fxg-  
l cbgc. C'cn ukghn`k hnhs`kvh pz; l ejvksck, cvhgj cshs`kvh pz; l ej...ß<sup>1</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh fw hdcvc Zb ]edycl fcxkc fegc fxn xojxdhn  
menxn ; x, ; xjhfcpgx hnhs`kvh l i ph; xl c di ni jsi k. Fharh fxn  
hdcvc xsc 'zsjcnxa menxn ; x, [hl hhj hnhs`kvhk fxn pc; cl (ph-  
; xl ) se]sxk. Suknh fwdwnwn...

﴿وَإِنْ خِفْتُمْ شِقَاقَ بَيْنِهِمَا فَابْعَثُوا حَكَمًا مِّنْ أَهْلِهِ وَحَكَمًا مِّنْ أَهْلِهَا إِنْ يُرِيدَا إِصْلَاحًا يُوَفِّقِ  
اللَّهُ بَيْنَهُمَا﴾

âC'cn u x; x kctcnxk (cngc hnmhv`k) hnhs`kvh hdn`gr viac[cdxkvck runoshk`b,  
fxn pc; cl x cnxk hxgcsx jcnctxkvck, fxn pc; cl x vc hnmhv`k hxgcsx jcnctxkvck se]xkæ  
c'cn fw x; x kctcn (rhbx, ph; xl ) xsgph l crscvkvvc ugshghn, Hgghp ukghnh jumtxr  
menxn... ß<sup>2</sup>

Vel cgx, fw hdcgcxk hnhs`kvh pe] fxn bxvxdccj duovwn.  
} i k; x âpz; l dhgk`b Hgghph l coswsvwnß – vedc pz; l evck hdc Hggh-  
p` Zb pz; l gcxkvck l cpvww ejl xn ; x, l xshg i ] i k, l i ph; xl c  
di ni vck rhbx dhgk`b ]`ohn`gl `a rhkwkghn ]cn]xmcxkvck pz; l  
ejsxk mc zbi rhbx jc/dxk evc fxgl csxkæ ] i k; x rhbxkxk jc/dxk  
evxgl csx xojxdhn`vh ukvhk dwohn`vh;` l crhl ghn`k cgxkvcvxn.  
Fw rhbx vc âl i jgr ph; xl ß vedxgvxn, dhgk`b [hl hhj`k hnhs`k-  
vh rcbhmcj evc fxgc!

C; sxk, Hgghp-jhhgh pcl xkshkghn`k hnhs`kvh rcbhmcj evc,  
pcl vc rcbhmcj xaxkx fharhghn`kh pcmhgc evc fxgc. Dc/kx, Zb  
l cl gc; cjxkxk pcn fxn kxrjcsxkvck rhbx mc ph; xl jc/dxk evxg-  
l csx Ukwk xojxdhn`kvhv`n mc U, l i jgr ph; xl vxn. Fwkh csh-  
sck, \edycl fcngcn dhgk`b Hgghp`k pz; l i xgc rcbhmcj mc  
pz; l evxnvxcn. Pcl ]xkxk, rhv`kgh ; xax hnhs`kvh (xojxght fha  
menck bhl hk) l i ph; xl c di ni vck u x; x pc; cl fhncsxkvck vc  
pz; l edkvxn. Vel cgx, fw ph; xl gcxk ]`ohnv`y` pz; l Hgghp`k

<sup>1</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.42

<sup>2</sup> âKxshß swncsx, hdc.35

tcnl hk` cshs`kvh ughnsh, ukvh fw xa Hgghpvhk fharhs`k`k, dh-  
ovv vh Ukwkgh dhkha` ughk fxn acosxk pz; l i vedxgvxn. C; sx-  
kc, fw pz; l dhgk`b Hgghp`k 'zsjcnxax mc x[hbcxsgc menxgl xavxn.

Hgghpvhk fharhs`k` ]hy`nl hr fhncsxkvc ukghnh menxgc[c;  
vx'cn [hmfh` vh å|edycl fcnx ]hy`nl hr mc Hgghp vcn'hp`kh dh-  
o`kghal hr i ]i k ukh jmcssi g ejl c; B fzgl csxkvc 'cgc[c; vxn.

Hgghp i ]i k fc/bx oi swsxddcjgcnx, u [i l gcvck l hgx; xddcj  
sxtcjxkx xsfhj evck hdcgn vc edkxgc fegcvxn. Fegc ; x, ukghn vh  
pe] fxn mc[pgc fw sxtcjgcnx Hgghpvh pi vvvghkv`nl `n, c; sxkc  
l i jgcrgrdx xsfhj evxn.

Hgghp`k l hgx; xddcj mc ph; xl xddcjx

L i jchg Hgghp fwdwnwn...

﴿وَلِلَّهِ مُلْكُ السَّمَاوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَا وَإِلَيْهِ الْمَصِيرُ﴾

åHsxl hkghn`k, denxk mc ukghnvh ughkghn`k l hgx; xddcjx dhgk`b Hgghph  
l coswsvwn mc phl `k`k rhd`v`a denx Ukh vuywnvwn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fxn hdcvc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿وَقُلِ الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي لَمْ يَتَّخِذْ وَلَدًا وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ شَرِيكٌ فِي الْمُلْكِ﴾

åVe, pcl v ugsxk u Hgghph ; x, kc vc ph; xl xddcjvc mc l hgx; xddcjvc fxn  
acnx; x mhnv`n.B<sup>2</sup>

Mhng`r hgcl xkvc ph; xl xddcj mc l hgx; xddcjxk dhgk`b Hgghph  
l cosws ugvywkw 'zsjcnck fw hdcgcnxk hahy`vh; ` hdcgcngc pe]  
fxn bxvvxddcjx duovwn...

åDhowv l hgx; x ugvywkwvb ; csgcnvck.B

} i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿قُلِ اللَّهُمَّ مَالِكُ الْمُلْكِ تُؤْتِي الْمُلْكَ مَنْ تَشَاءُ وَتَنْزِعُ الْمُلْكَ مِمَّنْ تَشَاءُ وَتُعْزِزُ مَنْ تَشَاءُ وَتُذِلُّ

مَنْ تَشَاءُ بِيَدِكَ الْخَيْرُ إِنَّكَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ﴾

åVe... |cnmcnvx'hnh! L i g; i k l hgx; x Scksc! xsjcvdxk ; csc l hgx; xddcj menxn,  
xsjcvdxk ; csc l hgx; xddcjx hg`nshk. Xsjcvdxk ; csc xbbcj mc fha`w[hg`r menxn, xsj-  
vdxk ; csx ohn mc bcgq evxnsck. Fijik dhoa`grghn Sckxk cgvkvcvxn mc Sck pcn  
fxn aedc rhvxnscck.B<sup>3</sup>

Vel cgx, l i jchg Hgghp Zb fckvcsxkc l hgx; xddcj mc pz; w-  
l cj menvdx bhl hk, fckvc l hgx; xddcjvc Hgghp`k acnx; x ugl wn

<sup>1</sup> åL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.18

<sup>2</sup> åXsnhß swncsx, hdc.111

<sup>3</sup> åHgX-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.26

mc Hgghpvhk fharhs`k`k I hgx; xddcjx, egc[c vc Hgghp`k xbkx  
 ugl hvhk fxn I hgx; xddcj ;en]c; gcal xnæ c; sxkc fckvckxk zbi mc  
 I hgx; ugvyw pcn fxn aed ukwk Lzmghs`kh I coswsvwnæ  
 fckvckxk pcn phks` fxn aedc I hgx; ugl hs` I cpb Hgghp`k  
 xbkxgcvx n mc âcg-I wg;w ggghpß hdsxkxk ohnx[x ki I wkcsxvx n. Dc/kx  
 Hgghp`k I hgx; xddcj mc ph; xl xddcjx pe] fxn pcvv xgc I cpvww-  
 ghkl `n ; x, Ukwk xsjc; mc x[hbcx xgc I cpvwwghkhk fckvckxk  
 I hgx; xddcjx ; xl x ugswk. L hgx; xddcj phrr`kh I hgx; ughk fxn  
 fckvc, dhgk`b Hgghp-jhhghk`k fw phrr` ukwk xojxdhn`kh  
 menvdx bhl hk, zbi vc I i cddck I c; hk mc ri vncj vhnscxkvc  
 ukvhk xsjxthvc ejl c; phrr`kh I hgx; ugwn.

#### HGGHP-K OHGXRDDCJX MC VXXGJLCSX

Hgghp`k ohgr (ocgr evck) mc I i pdx (vxngxvck) sxtcjcgnx vc  
 edkxgc dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghn ; xl vx n. } i k; x fwdwnwgwn...

﴿ذَلِكُمُ اللَّهُ رَبُّكُمْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ خَالِقُ كُلِّ شَيْءٍ﴾

âHgghp fijik aedgcnxk ohgrvx n.B<sup>1</sup>  
 Suknh fwdwnwgwn...

﴿هَلْ مِنْ خَالِقٍ غَيْرُ اللَّهِ﴾

âHgghpvhk fharh fxn ohgr mhnI`?!B<sup>2</sup>  
 Dekc fwdwnwgwn...

أَلَا لَهُ الْخَلْقُ وَالْأَمْرُ

âH'hp ugwk! Ocgr mc cl n Ukh I coswsvwn.B<sup>3</sup>  
 Fharh fxn hdcvc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَهُوَ الَّذِي يُحْيِي وَيُمِيتُ﴾

âDhgk`b Uvwn ; x, zgvini n mc vxngxvx n.B<sup>4</sup>  
 Dekc fwdwnwn...

﴿قَالَ اللَّهُ هُوَ الْوَلِيُّ وَهُوَ يُحْيِي الْمَوْتَى﴾

âXojxdhn shpxfx mc mcgx dhgk`b Hgghpv`næ zgi gcnx vxngxvck vc dhgk`b Uvwn.B<sup>5</sup>  
 Fwnhvh vh ohgrxddcj mc zgi gcnx vxngxjl c; sxtcjx dhgk`b

<sup>1</sup> âCk/hI ß swncsx, hdc.102

<sup>2</sup> âThjxnß swncsx, hdc.3

<sup>3</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.54

<sup>4</sup> âL z/I xkwkß swncsx, hdc.80

<sup>5</sup> âAwnhß swncsx, hdc.9

l i jchg Hgghp`k xsh xfkx L cndcl c  
 £ zgi gcnx vxnxgj l c; gc cghrcvhn menvx dx x[hbc xgc pe] fxn  
 bxv vxddcj jca; xg ejl xn. Fegc ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -h oxjh f  
 evcnc; fwdwnvw...

﴿وَإِذْ تَخْلُقُ مِنَ الطِّينِ كَهَيْئَةِ الطَّيْرِ يَازِّنِي فَتَفْخُ فِيهَا فَتَكُونُ طَيْرًا يَازِّنِي وَتُبْرِئُ الْأَكْمَةَ  
 وَالْأَبْرَصَ يَازِّنِي وَإِذْ تُخْرِجُ الْمَوْتَى يَازِّنِي﴾

â(Ed Xsh!) Dhvh shg u bhl hk' ; x, L ckl xbkxl gc rwa ac; gkvc fxn ped; cg  
 vi bcgvxf ukh itini nvik, u vh L ckl xbkxl gc rwa ugwnv wæ (pcl jxkxk) hkhvhk-  
 'cgl c ; unh, ounh ocsjcgdxkc jwjwghkghnh L ckl xbkxl gc acth menxn, zgi gcnx L c-  
 kxl xbkxl gc vxnxgvnxvk.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fxn hdcvc dekc Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -`k Fckx-Xsnhxgc fegc fwdwnvw-  
 yw kcr g ugwkwn...

﴿أَنِّي أَخْلُقُ لَكُمْ مِنَ الطِّينِ كَهَيْئَةِ الطَّيْرِ فَأَنْفُخُ فِيهِ فَيَكُونُ طَيْرًا يَازِّنِ اللَّهُ وَأُبْرِئُ الْأَكْمَةَ  
 وَالْأَبْرَصَ وَأُحْيِي الْمَوْتَى يَازِّنِ اللَّهُ﴾

âLck \hgj`rvhk rwa ac; gkvc fxn aed vi bcgvxn, suknh ukh itini ncl , u vh  
 Hgghp`k xbkxgc rwa ugwnæ hkhvhk'cgl c ; unh mc ounh ocsjcgdxkc jwjwghkghnh Hggh-  
 p`k xbkx xgc acth menxncl , zgi gcnx Hgghp`k xbkxgc vxnxgvnxcl .ß<sup>2</sup>

L i jchg Hgghp – kcw bw fxggph! – fxn aedx dhnhvhk bhl hk  
 xnhvcsxb ughk fxn cl c; hgcjx, dhowv rcnhn rcfwg evc fxgl cdck  
 fxn aed mc dh zbi (l i sjcrxg) ri vncjc l hgx; ugl hdhk fcacn ; x-  
 l x vedxgvxn ; x, fharhghn`kh ocgrejl c cl cgxkx fcoa evc fxgl c-  
 sxkæ c; sxkc U, l i jgc ac; xgv rhvxnvxn, xkshkh, pedmhkh mc s.  
 ; xl x mhg`rgnh fc/bck jcfxx jubghkl h mc dh l hdhghkl h dugw  
 xgc, fc/bck vc, pcbncj Hvcl ; xl x, rednx-jcfxx dugghngh mc hjh-  
 hkh ugl hvhk pcdhj fcoa evxn. Hgghp Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -h, Zbi ki k xbk  
 mc x[hbcxsx xgc rwa ac; gkvc fxn aed vi bcgvxf ukh nwp i ti nl c;  
 mc [hkg` phgh shgl hr x[hbcxsx menl cdc rhvxnvxn. Fijik fw  
 xagcnxk phl `s`kvh vh csg ohgx mc dhnhvhk l i jchg Hgghp`v`n.

Vxnxgj l c; l cscgcsx vc edkxgc fegcvxn. Hgghp-jhhgh pcl  
 rxdhl cjvc zgi gcnx pe] fxn mhsxjc ugl hvhk vxnxgj l cdc, pcl vc  
 vxnxgj l c ri mmsxkx (egc fw vi kdhvh) Xsh xfkx L cndcl c men-  
 l cdc rhvxnvxn ; x, u vh Hgghp`k xbkx xgc zgi gcnx vxnxgjsxk. Pcl  
 vc fwkh rhvxnvxn ; x, vxnxgj l cdx âmw n l hrß \nusesxkvc rcnhn

<sup>1</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.110

<sup>2</sup> âHgX-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.49

mensxk ; x, Fckx-Xsnhxgxk shn` nck'gx xkcdxkxk fxn pxsscsxkx rcjgc  
dejxngxgckxk fcvckxkc mwnswkghn mc u acos vxnxgcn; zb  
rhjxgxkxk ; xl ugvywkwk vesxk.<sup>1</sup>

Xsh xfkx Lcndcl xk £ rwa vi bcgjl c, zgi gcnx vxnxgjl c  
; xl x cl cggnx Hgghp`k xbkxgc fha menxn. Vel cgx, Xsh <sup>TM</sup> rwaw  
dnhhjv`y` mc zgi ki vxnxgvxdx bhl hk Hgghp`k acnx; x ugl wn mc  
Ukwkgh edkx scmddcvc rcnbn jh\l `n. U dhgk`b Hgghp`k xbkx  
xgc dnhhv`n mc vxnxgvxnvx.

MCGXDD (RCDDWL) MC ACTX (ACTHCJ}X)

Hgghp-jhhgh Rwnhxx-: cnxl vc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿أَمْ اتَّخَذُوا مِنَ دُونِ اللَّهِ شُفَعَاءَ قُلْ أُولَئِكَ كَانُوا لَّا يَمْلِكُونَ شَيْئًا وَلَا يَعْقِلُونَ قُلْ لِلَّهِ الشَّفَاعَةُ  
جَمِيعًا لَهُ مُلْكُ السَّمَاوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ ثُمَّ إِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ﴾

åDuosh Hgghpvhk fharh acthcj]xgc jwjl wswkw? Ve... Pcjjh c'cn fxn aedk  
l hgx; x, vcn; mc aiwn shpxfx ugl hshghn fegc (dekc vc ukghnvhk acthcj xsjcdc[c;-  
sxkxbl x)? Ve... Acthcj phl `grgh Hgghp l coswsvwn, U, hxl hkghn`k, denxk mc  
ukghnv l zm[ww ughkghn`k (l ijgr) ph;xl vxvn mc sxb phl `grgh Ukh vuynw rhd-  
jhn`gh[hrs`k`b.<sup>2</sup>

Vx'cn hdcvc fwdwnwgn...

﴿مَا لَكُمْ مِّنْ دُونِهِ وَلِيٌّ وَلَا شَفِيعٌ﴾

åUkvhk fharh sxbk i]ik pe] fxn mcgx mc acthcj]x duovwn. Fwkvhk hd'gl hb-  
s`k`bl `?B<sup>3</sup>

Fharh fxn hdcvc fwdwnwgn...

﴿لَيْسَ لَهُمْ مِّنْ دُونِهِ وَلِيٌّ وَلَا شَفِيعٌ﴾

åUkghn i]ik Hgghpvhk fharh pe] fxn mcgx mc acthcj]x ugl hb.B<sup>4</sup>  
Fharh fxn hdcvc xsc...

﴿وَذَكَرْ بِهِ أَن تُبْسِلَ نَفْسٌ بِمَا كَسَبَتْ لَيْسَ لَهَا مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ وَلِيٌّ وَلَا شَفِيعٌ﴾

åUkghnh fw l cscgcgnx ohj`nghj ; x, fxn ; cs zb cgx xgc rhbhkv`y`kh 'xntjhn  
ugl hs`k. }ik;x Hgghpvhk fharh pe] fxn mcgx mc acthcj]x duovwn.B<sup>5</sup>  
Dwohn`vh;` hdcgn vc hahy`vh redv ugwkxh[hr hdcgcngc

<sup>1</sup> åFcrncß swncsxkxk 67-73-[i hdcgcnxk xahncvxn.

<sup>2</sup> åBi l cnß swncsx, hdc.23 mc 44

<sup>3</sup> åSc[vcß swncsx, hdc.4

<sup>4</sup> åCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.51

<sup>5</sup> åCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.70

bxvvxddcj jca; xg ejl xn...

﴿مَا مِنْ شَفِيعٍ إِلَّا مِنْ بَعْدِ إِذْنِهِ﴾

åPe] fñn acthcj evck ugl hbæ dhgk`b Ukwk xbkx xgc (acthcj evc fñgcngcn).B<sup>1</sup>

﴿مَنْ ذَا الَّذِي يَشْفَعُ عِنْدَهُ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِ﴾

åUkwk xbkx ugl hvhk ;xl acthcj evc fñgcn?!B<sup>2</sup>

﴿يَوْمَئِذٍ لَا تَنْفَعُ الشَّفَاعَةُ إِلَّا مَنْ أَذِنَ لَهُ الرَّحْمَنُ وَرَضِيَ لَهُ قَوْلًا﴾

åU `ikvc acthcj pe] ;csc thdvh menl cbæ dhgk`b u ;cs i]ik (thdvh mencl)  
;x, ncpl hk Hgghp ukh x[hbc mensik mc szbiki fcdckl xa ugswk.B<sup>3</sup>

﴿وَلَا تَنْفَعُ الشَّفَاعَةُ عِنْدَهُ إِلَّا لِمَنْ أَذِنَ لَهُ﴾

åActhcjxk pe] fñn thdvhs` ugl hbæ dhgk`b u ;cs i]ik (thdvhs` ughn) ;x, Hgghp  
ukh x[hbc menl xa ugswk.B<sup>4</sup>

﴿لَا يَمْلِكُونَ الشَّفَاعَةَ إِلَّا مَنِ اتَّخَذَ عِنْدَ الرَّحْمَنِ عَهْدًا﴾

åUkghn acthcj I hgx; ugl hbghnæ dhgk`b Hgghp`k dhk`kv cpv fhyghdhkghnvhk  
fharh.B<sup>5</sup>

﴿وَلَا يَشْفَعُونَ إِلَّا لِمَنِ ارْتَضَى﴾

åUkghn acthcj ejl cbgcna dhgk`b Hgghp`k nhb` ugvyw acosgcncvck fharh.B<sup>6</sup>

L i jchg Hgghp Zbi ki k shgcp fckvcgcnxkc (acthcj ejl cdc  
vhxn) x[hbc menckvc, acthcjxk csgx Ukh I cosws ugwn mc ukghn`k  
acthcj ejl cgcnxkc I cpb U x[hbc menl xa ugwn. Vel cgx, fw  
bhl hk pcrxrx acthcj]x vc Hgghpvhk fharh fñn ;cs vedxgvxn.

Mcgxkxk I c/khs` vh edkxgc fegcvxn. Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَهُ مُلْكُ السَّمَاوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ يُحْيِي وَيُمِيتُ وَمَا لَكُمْ مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ مِنْ وَلِيٍّ وَلَا نَصِيرٍ﴾

åPcrxrcjck, hxl hkghn`k mc denxk I ig;xddcjx (pz;wl cjx) Hgghp I coswsvwn,  
vxngxvxn mc zgvinin. Hgghpvhk fharh sxbxk pe] fñn mcgkxb mc ;zl c;]xkxb duo-  
vwn.B<sup>7</sup>

﴿أَلَمْ تَعْلَمْ أَنَّ اللَّهَ لَهُ مُلْكُ السَّمَاوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَمَا لَكُمْ مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ مِنْ وَلِيٍّ وَلَا نَصِيرٍ﴾

<sup>1</sup> åDwkxsß swncsx, hdc.3

<sup>2</sup> åFcrncß swncsx, hdc.255

<sup>3</sup> åJhphß swncsx, hdc.109

<sup>4</sup> åScfhß swncsx, hdc.23

<sup>5</sup> åL cndcl ß swncsx, hdc.87

<sup>6</sup> åCkfxdhß swncsx, hdc.28

<sup>7</sup> åJzmfcß swncsx, hdc.116

âLc'cn fxl xnvk ;x, hsl hkghn'k mc denx ph;xl xddcj Hgghph l coswsvwn?!  
Sxbk i]ik Hgghpvhk fharh pe] fxn mcgx mc ;zl c;]x duovwn.B<sup>1</sup>

﴿أَفَحَسِبَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا أَنْ يَتَّخِذُوا عِبَادِي مِنْ ذُنُوبِي أُولِيَاءَ إِنَّا أَعْتَدْنَا جَهَنَّمَ لِلْكَافِرِينَ﴾ نَزَّلَا

âDuosh ;htxngcn fegc peshf evxngcn ;x, fckvcgcnxl x Lckxl cmcbxl c zbgcnxkc  
mcgx jwjswkghn?! Fxb [cpckkcl x ;htxngcnxk vhoxg ugl hs' i]ik phb'n ejl xax;.B<sup>2</sup>

Dwohn'vh redv ugwkxhk hdcgcnxk hahy'vh;` hdcgcnxc pe] fxn  
bxvvddcjx duovwn...

إِنَّمَا وَلِيُّكُمُ اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ وَالَّذِينَ آمَنُوا الَّذِينَ يُقِيمُونَ الصَّلَاةَ وَيُؤْتُونَ الزَّكَاةَ وَهُمْ رَاكِعُونَ

âSxbk mcgx mc ncpfcnxkxb dhgk'b Hgghp, Ukwk |edycl fcnx mc xl hk 'c]xnx  
khl hb r'ghk mc ni ;w phg'kvh bc;hj menckgcnvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

Fcgx, fw x; x rxsl hdcgcn hnhs'kvh pe] fxn bxvvddcj duovwn.  
C'cn fxb âHgghp, Ukwk |edycl fcnx mc khl hb r'ghkghn mc  
ni ;w phg'kvh bc;hj menckgcn fxbxl mcgx xbvxnß - vesc; , pe]  
mhoj axn; c l i njc; xf ugl hn'r. } i k; x pcrxr mxghdcj Hgghph  
l coswsvwn mc fw mxghdcjx ukghnh l cpb U cjh ejl xavxn. Fw vh  
edkxgc hjhk'k zb zmghv'kh mxghdcj phrr` menl csxkc uoahd'n.

Vel cgx, redv ugwkxhk fi j i k fw sxtcjcncvc pcl âph;xl , l h-  
gx; , acthcj]x, mcgx mc s. ; xl x sxtcjcncxk phl `s` Hgghph l cosw-  
svwnß vel cdxl xb, pcl vc âHgghp`k fw sxtcjcncx cjh ejvxdx acos  
vc l hgx; , ph;xl , actx mc mcgx hvghkv'n`g'nß - vel cdxl xb scpxp-  
vxn. Fxbxl l i vvchl `b`k ck hdv`k vcgxgx hahy'vh;` hdcvxn...

﴿الَّذِينَ تَتَوَفَّاهُمُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ ظَالِمِي أَنْفُسِهِمْ فَأَلْقَوْا﴾

âU ;csgcn ;x, zbgcnxkc bigl ejvxdx phgvh, l cgc;gcn ukghn'k [hkghn'k` hghn...B<sup>4</sup>

﴿الَّذِينَ تَتَوَفَّاهُمُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ طَيِّبِينَ يَقُولُونَ سَلَامٌ عَلَيْكُمُ﴾

âU ;csgcn ;x, l cgc;gcn ukghn'k nwpwkw \h;- \h;xbc ughk phgvh hghnghn, ukghnh  
vedxgc...Sxbk shghl ugswk...B<sup>5</sup>

﴿...حَتَّى إِذَا جَاء أَحَدَكُمْ الْمَوْتُ تَوَفَّتْهُ رُسُلُنَا وَهُمْ لَا يُفَرِّطُونَ﴾

âFxbxl 'zkvcnvx;gcnxl xb ;csgcn ukwk nwpwkw hghn, fw fhncvc pe] fxn  
scpgck;hng'r ejl cbgcn.B<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âFcrncß swncsx, hdc.107

<sup>2</sup> â: cptß swncsx, hdc.102

<sup>3</sup> âL hxcß swncsx, hdc.55

<sup>4</sup> âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.28

<sup>5</sup> âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.32

<sup>6</sup> âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.61

﴿قُلْ يَتَوَفَّاكُم مَّلَكُ الْمَوْتِ الَّذِي وُكِّلَ بِكُمْ ثُمَّ إِلَىٰ رَبِّكُمْ تُرْجَعُونَ﴾

âVe... Sıbc l c/l wn ugwkhhk zgi l l cgcđx nwpwkwbw hgh[hrv'n. Suknh  
|cnmcnvx'hñ'k'bh jcnct rhđjhn'gh[hrs'k'b.ß<sup>1</sup>  
Fharh fxn hđcvc xsc fwdwnwgn...

﴿اللَّهُ يَتَوَفَّى الْأَنْفُسَ حِينَ مَوْتِهَا﴾

âZgvi ;gcñx bhl hk fiji k kctsgcñx (xkshkghñ'k) nwpwkw hghk Hgghpv'n.ß<sup>2</sup>  
Fwkh cshsck, pcl âl cgc;gcñ nwpghñ` zgi l bhl hk` mc  
Hgghp`k xbkxgc hg`ñß – vedckgcñ, pcl vc ânwpghñ` zgi l l cgcđx  
Cbnhxg zgi l bhl hk` mc Hgghp`k xbkxgc hg`ñß, vedckgcñ kc  
dhghk vel xa, kc vc Hgghph acñx; rual wagn. Fw x;x szbgc  
âfi j i k nwpghñ` zgi l bhl hk` Hgghp hg`ñß – szbi hnhs'kvh pe]  
fxn bxvxdđcj vc duovwn. } i k;x fw phgghñ'k phl `s'kvh  
nwpghñ` Hgghpvhk fharh fxñsx, dhowv Hgghpgh dhkha` fxn ;cs  
hgl hl `av`n, c; sxkc [hkghñ` hghk egc Hgghp`k Zbi vi n.<sup>3</sup>  
Cmmcgvc redv ugwkhhk shñx sxtcjcñ vc edkxgc fw [i nvi n.

| EDYCL FCN j -X } HY-NL HR MC HGGHP DUGWKVH  
UKH JCMCSSI G EJLC:

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghñh cshsck ph;xl , l hgx; , actx, ohgx,  
vñxgvck, zgvi ñck mc mcgx ;xl x sxtcjcñxk Hgghpvhk fharhs`kh  
hvx evxgl csx Hgghp`k xbkxgc ughñsh, ukvh fw xa âHgghpvhk fha-  
rhs'k` ]hy`ñl hrß, dhowv âUkwkgh acñx; ugl hrß shđ'gl h-  
dh[hrv`n. Fw fcdhkh cshsck, c'cn |edycl fcñx-C;ñcl j -  
x ]hy`ñl hr mc Hgghp dugwkvh ukh jcmcssi g ejl c; Hgghp`k  
xbkxgc ughñsh, fwnhvñh vh Hgghpvhk fharhs'k` ]hy`ñl hr, dhowv  
Ukwkgh dhkha` fxn ;csx ]hy`ñl hr shđ'gl hdh[hr mc âmc gh jcv/w  
l ccghpx cpcvckß hđcsxkxk ohñx[x ki l wkcgcnxkvck ugl hdh[hrv`n.

Fwkvñk zk[c âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, âSi kckx Jxñl xbxß, âSi kckx  
xfkx L h[cß mc âSi kckx Fedpcrxß ;xjhfgghñ'kvñ redv ugwkhhk  
pcvxsck hdv`k ugvw ;x, |edycl fcñx-C;ñcl j u ;un  
scphfcđc zdñcjvx ;x, khl hbvñk suñh vñh evxf fegc vesxk...  
â/cnmcnvx'hñh! L ck Sckvck xsjcdñ mc Sckxk ncpl cj |edycl -

<sup>1</sup> âSc[vcß swñcsx, hđc.11

<sup>2</sup> âBi l cñß swñcsx, hđc.42

<sup>3</sup> Fw vcgxg xl hl Cgx ™ -`k pcvxsxkvck cob ugwkl wavwn. Aedo Scvwr  
ukw zbi ki k âJumpxvß ;xjhfkvh, âCñ-ñcvvw cgcs-sckcmxđđcjw mcb-  
bckhvñrcß fzgl csxkvc (scp.241) kcrđ ejl xavñ.



fcnxkxk mhsxjcsxgc Sckc jcnct 'cgxncl . Ed L i pcl l cv! L ck  
 sckxk mhsxjckgc Hgghp vcn'hp`kh 'evxncl ; x, ph[cjxl x denxkc  
 dejxnsxk. |cnmcnvx'hnh! Ukw l ckxl acthcj]xl rcnbn men.<sup>1</sup>  
 Hgghp-jhhgh vh ph[cjxkx denxkc dejxnf |edycl fcx ukwk i ]i k  
 acthcj]x ejvx mc ukh acth menvx. Fw ;xl x jcmcssi ggc Hgghp-  
 jhhghk`k hahy`vh;` hdcvc fwdwnvwyw jcmcssi gi k ohnx[x  
 ki l wkcsxvxn...

﴿وَابْتَغُوا إِلَيْهِ الْوَسِيلَةَ وَجَاهِدُوا﴾

âUkwk vcn'hp`kh fxn mcsxgc hojhn`k.<sup>2</sup>  
 Pcl ]xkxk fwdwnwn...

﴿أُولَئِكَ الَّذِينَ يَدْعُونَ يَبْتَغُونَ إِلَىٰ رَبِّهِمُ الْوَسِيلَةَ﴾

â...Hgghp vcn'hp`kh dho`kghal hr i ]i k mcsxgc hojhnghghn.<sup>3</sup>  
 \* \* \*

Fwnh rcvcn xojxghtg` l cscgcgcncvk fc/bxgcxkx fcdhk mc ukgh-  
 n`k bhpnnx jc/sxngcnxkx redv ejvx; . Suknh;` fcpsvc fwkghn`k csg  
 mc pcrxrx scfcfgcnxkx, dc/kx hahy`vh;` x; x i kmhk` hnhav`nh[h-  
 y`r...

1-Jhnxo fudw l cogwrhj`k jc; cffi n 'zsjcnl csxæ

2-Fw i l l cjc ph;xl ; csxgckgcxk xkshkxddcj ncpfcngcnx fh-  
 ncvc oi swsx fxn ]epnc jcrvxl ejl c; l crscvgnxæ fegc ; x, zbgc-  
 nxkxk acpmcj fhjhrgrghn`kh rcnr ugl wa sxl hghn` xgc bxvxdccj  
 jca; xg ejl cl xa ugswk.

Xkvx ukghn` fcdhk evxnx; ...

h) Xojxght`k dhnhkl hs`kvh ughk fxnxk[x pcrxrx l crscv

Oxgrcjxk cmmcgxkvc

Hgghp-jhhgh Xfgxsxk cpmhghj`k` ohj`nghvhn; ck ukwk Hvcl xk  
 rhna`s`kvh sc[vc ejl cl csxkx fegc fcdhk evxn...

﴿قَالَ يَا إِبْلِيسُ مَا مَنَعَكَ أَنْ تَسْجُدَ لِمَا خَلَقْتُ بِإِيدِيَّ اسْتَكْبَرْتَ أَمْ كُنْتَ مِنَ الْعَالِينَ قَالَ أَنَا

خَيْرٌ مِّنْهُ خَلَقْتَنِي مِن نَّارٍ وَخَلَقْتَهُ مِن طِينٍ﴾

Hgghp fwdwnvw... âEd Xfgs! Lckxl Zb rivncjxl gc ocgr ejvxdxl acosxk rhn-

<sup>1</sup> Pcl xk ; xjhf`k â|edycl fcx ; -x acthcj]x rcnbn menl c; ß fzgl c-  
 sxkc fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

<sup>2</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.35

<sup>3</sup> âXsnhß swncsx, hdc.57

a's'kvh sc[vc ejl cdixk kc l hke ugvw?! Jc;cffi ngi ; ejvixk, duosh, isji kgcnvckl x ugwk?!B U vevx...âLck ukvhk dhoa`dhl .B<sup>1</sup>

﴿قَالَ لَمْ أَكُنْ لَأَسْجُدَ لِبَشَرٍ خَلَقْتَهُ مِنْ صَلْصَالٍ مِّنْ حَمَإٍ مَّسْنُونٍ﴾

âVevx... Lck egc fñn acos vedxgcI ;x, i twkcjgx \hg]`y` rwnvwvf ukvhk ocgr ejvixk fcacn rhna's'kvh sc[vc evcl !B<sup>2</sup>

Fcgx, Xfgxs oxgrcjxk cmmcggnxkvc Si fphk Hgghph l cgc; gcnxk wbwk zl ni rcvcn, pcl vc acnx; sxb, de'hkc mc mcpvhkxddcj kcbcnx xgc xfhvcl ejl xavx. Suknh Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> i ]i k, fharh szbgc Hgghp-jhhghk`k pcn fñn csnvcl Zbi ki k den i bi kvcl; x ki l hdck-vcsx mc se]vxdx acos i ]i k jc/bxl ejl cvx, ukw ;x]x; shdv` mc jhnxovc redv ugwkxhk phvxscgn fha menvx.

Fxb fwnhvh jc;cffi ngi ; evck, Hgghp`k se]xgl xa fckvcgnxkc mc \edycl fcngcnxkc pcrhncj pxssx xgc dhkhahk, ukghnh i l w- l xddcjgc cpcl xddcj menl cdckgcnx ukghn`k cl cg mc nctjhngnh` xgc fxngx; vc redv evxnx; ...

Cmmcg;x i l l cjgcncv

Kwp, Hv mc Scl wv rzml gcnx zb \edycl fcngcnxkc vevxgcñ...

﴿مَا تَرَاكَ إِلَّا بَشَرًا مِّثْلَنَا وَمَا تَرَاكَ أَتَّبِعَكَ إِلَّا الَّذِينَ هُمْ أَرَادُوا بِادِّئِ الرَّأْيِ وَمَا نَرَى لَكُمْ

عَلَيْنَا مِنْ فَضْلٍ...﴾

âFxb scxk, zbil ib ;xl x fcacnvck fharh fñn aed peshf ejl xnx;... Sckxk fixxl i bcñl xbc pe] fñn isjikgi ; mc tcbxgcjxk duovwn.B<sup>3</sup>

﴿إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا رَجُلٌ بِهِ جِنَّةٌ فْتَرَبِّصُوا بِهِ حَتَّى حِينٍ﴾

âFw, sxbxk ;xl x fcacnvck fharh fñn aed vedxgvñ mc sxbcl isjikgi ; rhbhkl hr xsjcdñ.B<sup>4</sup>

﴿قَالُوا إِنْ أَنْتُمْ إِلَّا بَشَرٌ مِّثْلَنَا﴾

âSxb dhgk`b fixxl ;xl x fcacnsixkb...B<sup>5</sup>

﴿وَقَالَ الْمَلَأُ مِنْ قَوْمِهِ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا... مَا هَذَا إِلَّا بَشَرٌ مِّثْلُكُمْ يَأْكُلُ مِمَّا تَأْكُلُونَ مِنْهُ وَيَشْرَبُ

مِمَّا تَشْرَبُونَ﴾

âFw dhgk`b sxbxk ;xl x fñn fcacnvñ ;x, devixkdxkxb aedgcñvck dedñ, x]vixkxb

<sup>1</sup> âShvB swncsx, hdc.75-76

<sup>2</sup> âPx[nB swncsx, hdc.33

<sup>3</sup> âPwvB swncsx, hdc.27

<sup>4</sup> âL w/l xkwkB swncsx, hdc.25

<sup>5</sup> âXfnhpxl B swncsx, hdc.10

aedgcnvck x]xn.B<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcngrn vc fw e/jxnhb mc pznI cjsxbgx; gcnxk rhna`s`kvh  
ukghnh vedxnvxgc...

﴿إِنْ تَحْنُ إِلَّا بَشَرٌ مِّثْلُكُمْ وَلَكِنَّ اللَّهَ يُمْنُ عَلَى مَنْ يَشَاءُ مِنْ عِبَادِهِ﴾

âFcgx, fxb vc sxbxk ;xl x fxn fcacnx; , gh;xk Hgghp Zb fckvcgcnxkvck xsjcvxdxkc  
ke/l cj cjh evxn.B<sup>2</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -XK CSNXKVC

Xfkx Pc[cn âCg-xshfcß ;xjhF`kvh Bwg-Owmedsxncxk jcn[i -  
l edx-phg`k` redv evcn;ck (u, ocmhnx[xk ncxsx xv) Ckcsxk fegc  
vevxdxkx ncmhdcj evxn... |edycl fcnxk vzmni kvc fxn ;xax mhn  
xvx. Ukwk xfhvcj mc xjhcy dugwkvh 'zsjcnvxdx sc/dgc fxbx  
jcc[[i fc 'cjxnl xavx. |edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh ukwk hv`k` ]c; vx; ,  
pcbncj ukw jhk`l hv`, cghl cjgcnxkx vevx; , dekc vc jhk`l hv`.  
Ukwk fhncsxkvc szpfcj evxnvx; ;x, fxnvck 'zni kvi . Fxb âfw  
pcl xk acosvxnß vevx; vc |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âSxb l ckc egc  
fxn acos fhncsxkvc ofcn menxnsxkb ;x, ukwk ]zpnscsxkvc  
aedjhk`k l zpi ni kvck ughk fxn ]xn; 'zni ncl .ß U ;xax  
dho`kgha`f [hl hhj`k dwohn`s`kvh vwnvw mc ukghnh shghl  
menl cvx. |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ukh fwdwnvw... âSckx hkv menxncl  
Hgghph, ve 'znll , fw l c[gxsc vhoxg ughk bhl hk i ncdxkvck  
âfw rzml i k x]cnxsxkvc l ckvck isjik mc dhoe` fxn ;xax  
duovwnlß tx;nx ;e]l cvxl x?lß U vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x,  
fegcvxnß Suknh khl hb r`gl hr i ]i k l cs[xvc vhoxg ugvw.  
|edycl fcn fwdwnvw... â: xl fw ;xaxkx zgvi ncn?lß... Pcvxsxk  
ho`n`kvh fegc fwdwnwn... âC'cn u zgvi ni gsc, i l l cjxl vck pcjjh  
x; x kctcn fegc xojxght ejl cb.B<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âL w/l xkwkß swncsx, hdc.33

<sup>2</sup> âXfnhpxl ß swncsx, hdc.11

<sup>3</sup> Bwg-Owmedsxnc Jcl xl x egc ocmhnx[xk cshs`k` rudhk Pcnrws xfkx  
Bi pednvxn. Fxn vctc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; fedjwg-l hg`l i scgl hkgh-  
n`k hnhs`kvh fzgi avi nck bhl hk ukh e/jxnhb evcnc; âDh Ncswgcgghp! Cvhgj-  
gc fzglß vel xavx. |edycl fcn ; fwdwnl wavw... âMhd ugswk sckl C'cn  
l ck vc cvhgjc nxhdcj ejl cscl , ;xl cvhgjgx ugh[hrv`n?lß |edycl fcn  
; ukwk fhncsxkvc suknghn fwdwnl wavwn... âUkwk egc ;zl c; ]xgcx  
mhnv`n ;x, sxbgcnvck pcn fxnxkxbk khl hb mc unw[w ukghn`k khl hb mc unw[-  
ghn`l i rhfxgxkvc shdh 'cgl cb. Gh;xk uowk ;hl hkvhk ]`ov`y` ;xl x vxkvck  
]`oh[hrghn.ß Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`k` âCg-xshfcß mc âWsvwg-yhfcß ;xjhF-  
ghn`kvh, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; -xk ukwk zbi , ocmhnx[ mc ukghn`k

## FXBXL CSNXLXBVC

Bhpxnvc hgxl ughk u scwvxddcgx acos vevx...âL cpcl l cv vc  
l ckxl ; xl x fxn xkshk xv, hnj`r zgi f 'evxf!ß

Fw szbi k scfcfx vc jc; cffi n]i gi ; mc zbi ki phl `vhk  
di ; sc; vc 'znl c; vxn. Ke[c ; x, ukvhk cmmcg; xgc n vc fegc  
ugl wagh n.

## FCPSXK OI GHSCSX

Hdv`k ugvw ; x, Xfgxs Hgghp`k se]vxdx mc \h; ghv`y` acosvck  
– Hycl <sup>TM</sup> -vhk i sji k ugvwykw jcscmmi n evxn, ukwk  
rhna`s`kvh jc/bxl cl nxkc xjhcj ejl cdcnc; , âu, shvc[c fxn  
fcacnvxn!ß - vedc e/jxnhb evxn.

Fwkx vh fxgvx; ; x, Kwp, Hv mc Scl wv rzml gcx xghpx  
\edycl fcngcnx zbgcnxkvck i sji k peshf ejl xn mc ukghnh fegc  
vedxnvxgc n...âSxb shvc[c fxbxl ; xl x fxn xkshks`k`b.ß

Ocmhnx[xk fha]`s` mc fw txnrckxk fhkxsx Bwg-Owmedsxnc  
hnhghn`kvh |edycl fcx-C; ncl xk vc ugvwyw fxn vcsjc hvhl h  
]hj`f âfw hvhl ghn`k x]cnxsxkvc l ckvck dhoa`s` duovwn!ß vedc  
tx; xngcaxn.

Fw l cscgc fxbxl csnxl xbv c vc fegcvxn. Vel cgx, xghpx  
acosxddcjcnc mc Hgghp`k se]vxdx xkshkghnh rhna` pzn l cjsxbgx;  
ejl cdxk xg; scfcfx jc; cffi n]i gi ; mc xkshk`k zbi ki phl `vhk  
i sji k peshf ejl csxvxn.

f) Xojxght`k dnhk l hs`k`k x; xk[x scfcfx

Jhnxo fudw Xsghl i l l cjxkvc dnhkhk xojxghtghn`k x; xk[x  
scfcfx ph; xl vhxncgcxk l i scgl hkghnh ph; xl ; csxgl c; i ]i k  
xkshkxddcjxk ki l wkcmx ncpfcngcnxkvck, dc/kx \edycl fcngcn-  
vck mc Hgghp`k se]xgl xa fckvcgcxkvck ouah`cgl cb sxl hghn  
vi bcgjl cgcxvxn. Ukghn egc fxn ]zpnc jcrvxl ejl c; xsjcl xagcn  
; x, pcmhdx-kctsc wdhkghn`k mc acpmcj\cncsjgcxk ]zpncgcx xgc  
bxvvxddcjgx ugl hs`k.

Fwkh `znc vc fw x; x rnw\, Rwn/hk hdcgcxkx xghpx \edycl -  
fcngcn mc Hgghp`k se]xgl xa fckvcgcxkx `i khp; hn mc \h; ug-  
l hdhk acosgc n ; xl x [xgmcgckvxnc[c; ac; xgvc jc/mxg evxf dubwn,  
fwkvhk suknh ukghn`k cdgck[cgc nvc, acpmcj\cncsjgx; vc rcnr

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh h\hnh[hy` l i phnxfcgcn fhncsxkvc xsc, âScpxpx Lis-  
gi l Bi k äocmhnx[ß, âcj-jcpnxbw cgh rcjgxg-ocmhnx[ß mc âcg-ocmhnx[w acnnwg-  
ocgrx mcg-ocgxrcjß fhfghn`kvh `znc fxgcnsxkxb.

ugl hs`kh vhn ncmhdcjgcn rwnhav`n`n, fc/bck Jzmnhj mc Xk-[xgvck ; zji ni gck, âXsnhxgddhjß hvghkhk ownhthjghnh xsjxkhv evxngcn. Fegc ; x, fw ownhthjghn` ukghn`k pcbncj Vhmwv <sup>TM</sup> mc Wnxdhk`k bzm[csx mc s. fhncvc kcrj ejvx; gcnx ncmhdcjgcnvc 'znl c; ughn.<sup>1</sup> Cghmc ki l wkcgcnx vx'cn dengcnvc vc 'zsjcnl c; ughn ; x, \edycl fcngcnxk sxncsx fhncsxkvc fw ; xl x ownhthjghn` vi bcvxf dhd l `agh.

Fxb fwkvhk zk[c, ukghn`k \edycl fcngcnxk ck tcbxgcjgxsxkxk sxncsx mc jwjvwyw dug fhncsxkvc ncmhdcj ejvx; gcnxkx redv ej- l xavx;. Ukghn \edycl fcngcnxk mc ukghn`k mcsxgcgcnxkxk shxn xkshkghngh fcnhfcu ugl hs`k` 'zsjcnl cdc, ukghn`k fharhghn`kh pe] fxn xl jxdhbghn`k`k ugl hl hs`k` xsfhj ejl cdc [cpv evck ncmhdcjgcnx kcrj ejl c; gc, xghpx acosddcjcgnxk l z/[i bcgcnx fhncsxkvc ha; hn Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkx fharh l c/khdh dubl wa, zb szbgcnxkc wdywk ughk ncmhdcjgcn vi bcvxf dhd l `agh. Lxshg i ]i k, ukghn pcjjh Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -`k \hg]`rvhk rwa vi bcvxf ukh nwp i ti nl csx mc ukwk vh Hgghp`k xbkx xgc [hkg` fxn rwah ]emnxg- l csxkx fegc, hvx fcacn xax ; xl x [xgmcgckvxnl cdc ]hg`al `agh.

Fw ; xl x pcvxsgcnxk, jc/mxggcnxk mc Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkxk fw [i n dubwgl hs` l i rhfxgxkvc 'i vi gck l crscvgcngc dhkha` jctsn, pcvxs mc sxnc ; xjhfgghn`kvh \edycl fcngcnxk, xghpx acosddcjc- gnxk mc Hgghp`k se]xgl xa fckvcgcnxkxk shxn xkshkghnh i sji kgi ; mc xl jxdhbghn`kh vcghgcj evck vx'cn ncmhdcjgcn vc 'zbc vcdxn ; x, l i scgl hkghn`k fxn vcsjcsx vc ukghnh xl hk 'cjxnl xa, Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkx l cpb pcl xk pcvxsgcn cshs`kvh jctsn evcnc; l c/khghkv`nl `agh. Fwkwk vh kcjx[csxkvc fw x;x l c;jcf jcnctvhngghn`kvhk pcn fxnx Hgghp`k mc \edycl fcngcnxk sxtcjcgnx, cna, ; i nsi mc s. ; xl x xghpx mc xsghl x l hhnxtgc cghrcvhn oi swsx e/jxrhv l hgx; ugl wavwn ; x, rhna` jcnctvc ughkghn`k crxvcgc- nxcg bxvvxddc jca; xg evxn. Ukghn`k pcn fxnx vc xojxdhngghn`kvh ughkghnh xl hk 'cjxnl xa mc zb kcbcnxddcgcgnxkc l i ohgxt ughk- ghn` ; htnx peshf ejl xagcn ; x, jhnxo fudw vhmhl evck wbwk- wbhv` jctnxrcgn vc l cpb fwkwk jcfxx kcjx[csxvxn. Fw ; xl x \nufgel gcnxk pcgdx dugw vh Hgghp`k ; zl cdx xgc, oi ghsc mc ohxl c fzgl csxkvc redv ugwkhl[hrv`n.

---

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Vhmwv \edycl fcnxk sxncsxkvc ocfngcn mc fharh ; xjhfgghnh l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnxkxb.

# 9-OI GHSC MC DE: WK

Hgghp-jhhgh ai l wl x mc phrr fxn vxkß l c/khs`kh ughk Xsgh-  
l `xkshk`k jcfxcj mc txjncjx xgc wdywk ughk ac; xgvc rcnbn men-  
l xa, ukw \edycl fcngcnxkx mhsxjcsx xgc fcacnxdccj 'zkvcn-  
l xavxn. Pcn fxn \edycl fcn mcthj ejvx; vck suknh i l l c jx  
ukwk acnxcjxkx vcdxavnnxfsc, Hgghp-jhhgh fharh fxn \edycl fcn  
'zkvcnl c; gc Zb vxkxkx dekxgcavxn xavxn. Kcphdcj, Ukwk px; -  
l c jx fwkw jcgcf ejl xavxn ; x, xghpx pz; l mc acnxcjgcnxk vhl  
dekxgcavnnxgl csxkx Ohjcl i g-Ckfxdh pcbncj L i pcl l cv xfkx  
Cfvi gghp j -xk acnxcjxkx mhsxjcsxgc sukh ]hjv`ns`k, Xsgh-  
l `k cshs \nxksx\gcnxkx mc Rwn/hkx-: cnxl x pxtb evcnc; ukw hn-  
j`f-hbhgl hvhk, jcpnxtvck runwdwf shoghs`k. Hl l h acnxcj  
pz; l gcnxkx ncmhdcj evckgcnx ocjhvhk mc wkwjrhkg`rvhk  
hl hkvh shoghl hl `av`n.

Pcjhh dhh`j`ghn mc pcvxs ; xjhfgnh`k`k ki socsxkx ; z]i nckgc  
fegc, scpmvck mc sh`l hghnvhk hl hkvh rhgl hl `aghn. Phg-  
phb`nvh uk vnzv csnvxn ; x, l i scgl hkghn |edycl fcnc-C; ncl  
j -xk sxnc mc hvcj-ck/ckcsx fhncvc fxn-fxn xgc jcbhvg`  
ughk ncmhdcjgcnx, ukghnvh l zm[wv ughk x[l hg mc jctsxg,  
i l wl x mc oiswsx, egc[c vc pcvxs mc ncmhdcjgcnc ohnx[vck  
jc/sxn rudhk hl xggcngc dhkha` cgvcck-cgc 'cbvxn xagcn. Fwkh  
'znc vc l i ]jpxvgcnxk mc l i jcocssxsgcnxk fc/bx pcvxsgcnx  
vx`cngcnxkvck i sji k shdl hghn` fhncsxkvc; x kcbngcnx vc fxn-  
fxnxkvck tcnrgxvn. Fwkw vh redv evc; ; x, pcn fxn txnrc  
Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc; x l i jcahfxp hdcgcnx zbgcnxkx ohs kcbngcnx  
xgc jc/mxg evxf dubl wagh, vx`cn l zp; cl hdcgcnx xsc, ukghnh  
pcl g (ukghngh xbhp) ejl xagcn.

Fegcx; gc vc, l i scgl hkghn l i ojcgxt txnrc mc l cbpcfgcnc  
fzgi kl i a, wbwk csngcn fudw fxn-fxnkx jc; txn ejl xa (; htxn  
fxgl xa), fc/bck zb l i ohgxtgcnxkx rcjgc dejxn xa, em-eax; gcnxkx  
dhkv`nl `a mc vhy`jl `aghn! Xkvx jctnxrc i ]i k fw rcvcn bcl x-  
kckxk mc cmmcgvc ki l wkcgcnxkx redv ejvxdxl xb xojxghtg` l c-  
scgcgcnxk mhngh`y` xgc fegc, l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh mcpvcj  
ke[c l i l ; i k ugh fxgcn?! Oedn, l i scgl hk txnrcgcnx hnhs`kvh  
dho`kghal h cmmcg; xgcnc jcrxv cshs`kvh rhgl hrgh pe] mhoj  
l i dcscn ugh fxgl cb. Dhgk`b u bhl hk l i l ; i k ughn ; x, pcn  
fxn rnw\ zbi ki k cmmcg; x kcsxggcnvck xns ; e]ck mc xojxghth  
scfcf ughk xsghl x kcbngcnxkx, Rwn/hk jctsxngcnxkx, pcvxs mc s.

egl x [cpcjvck pcnjcnctgx ac; xgvc mc phrr cshs`kvh hnhav`ns`k, zb txnrc mc l cbpcfxxkx oednxkc ughk ahkjhgghnvhk, jcbdxrgcnvck, khghdxr szbgcnvck, szdi a mc xtjxnhghnvhk ]c; xksxk – Hgghp fxbx fw ; xl x xagcnvck runwswk! – suknh vx'cn rnw\ghn`k crxvc mc kcbcnngxkx s`nt egl x l crscvvc, sht bepkgc vxkgcsxk-gcn. } i k; x, pcrxrcj l cpb fw [i n jcprxrjhghnvhk cgvc ugwkwn.

Fw pcvctc ]hjl hy`k de'hkc vi b'i k dugw fwvwn ; x, l i scgl l hk hgxl gcnx fw fcpsgcnc s`nt egl x [cpcjvck dhkhas`kghn, ukwk kcjx[cgcnxkx fzdi ; xsghl x d'y`k[hrghnvh – u [i l gcvck Rhpncvc; x âCbpcn Acnxtß wlxmensxjejxkvc, L cvxkvc; x âxsghl xß wlxmensxjejvc, L c; ; cvc; x âNhfxjcji g-hgcl xg-xsghl xddß wlxmensxjejxkvc, Kc[ctx-Canctxk fzdi ; xsghl x [cl xddcjcgnxkvc, Rwl wk, Ounhshk`k, Rxnmhk`k mc Bedjwkckxk egl x l cn- ; cbgcnxkvc xncgx ]c; sxkgcn, ukghn` pcnjcnctgx ac; xgvc hnhav`n`f pcrxrcjx i bc ]`ohnjs`kghn. Suknh kcjx[ckx, phl `k`k xojxdhn`kh menxgsxk vedc, Xsghl pz; wl cjgcnxkc jcrvxl ejsxkgcn ; x, fi j i k l i scgl hkghn ukw hshkg`rgh cgvc evc, pcn fxn rnw\ vh vx'cngcnxkx kzrjedx-kcbcnngxkx ha; hn, mc vi b'i k ac; xgvc, xnhv mc hkgha`gl hbg`r ugl hvhk vcn; evc fxgsxk, fharhghn`k`k nc/dxkx vc ck dhoa`ac; xgvc zdncksxk, dh vh l i scgl hk rhnvha`k` zb kcbcnxddcsxkvc i bi ngi peshf ejsxk. Fwkwkgh vh, l i scgl hkghn fxn-fxngcnxkx kcbcnxddcgcnxkx vi b'i k fhah vi ac fxgc, fxn-fxnkc dho`kghahn mc zb xagcnxkx xsghp ugwk! hs`kvh edkx scmxddcvc jcvfxn 'znc fxgcngcn.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> L ck |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk si kksxkvc, l i ojcgxt l cbpcfgcncvc l zmbw swncjxkvc ughk fcpsgcnxk s`nt egl x ac; xgvc h`hn`gl hs`k` L xsxn, Px[hb, Ahl , Gxmhk, Pxkvxsjhk, ]h; xsjhk, Xnhr mc s. ; xl x zg; cgcnxk hgxl gcnx, l i jctc; ; xngcnx mc dhb`]`ghn` i ]i k xbhp ejl xacl – xsjcn xsghl x wlxmensxjeigcnvc, xsjcn egl x d'y`k[hrghnvh, xsjcnc vc hgxl mc l i jctc; ; xngcngc ughk x; xjcncgtx fcpsgcnc. Fw dugvh Hgghpvhk ; zl c; vxgcvxl mc cggx xgvck hnj`rv`n ; x, fw jcvrxrhjghn` vhmhl ejvxn! xacl . l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac |edycl fcnxk sxncsx fhncsxkvc u pcbncjxk shxn rhv`kghn`kvhk, Cpgx-fedjvck mc fi j i k scphfcgcnvck vph ]uo vkh`al `a, c; scn l i scgl hk l i jctc; - ; xngcnx mc jcvrxrhj`]`ghn`, pcl ]xkxk rednx-l i scgl hk acnrai khsgghn` mc ukghn`k ah`xnvgnx |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk sxncsxkx ukwk (Hdxackxk) ncmhdcj ejvdx pcvxsgcnvck cob ejl xagn. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk sxncsxkx mc ukh l ckswf evxgck ncmhdcjgc l c[l wcsxkxk phl `s`k` egl x [cpcjvck hnhav`nl hr l i l ; i k ugl hv`y`kvhk ukwk (Hdxackxk) pcvxsgcnxkx ukwkgh edkx scmxddcvc kcrj ugwkxk fharh pcvxsgcnvc mc l zmbw swncjxkvc hnhav`nl hy` l i khsxf fxgvl mc fw fhncvc fxn ; xjh`f dhb`f 1-2-[x [xgvgnxkx

Fw dugvh bcnwnx kcbnc ]hn\hk l cscgc fwvwn ;x, cmmcg[c  
Xsghl acncjxkx l ckfcgcnx, l i scgl hkghn`k l i ojcgt pz; l -  
gcnx ukghnvhk ke[c cgvc ejl cgcx mc |edycl fcn ; si k-  
kcsxkc ke[c ]hjl hghn` hnhav`n`gs`k. Lck fw fzdi ; pcvctc ]hj-  
l hr l crscvxc l ijchg Hgghpvhk ;zl c; vxgcvxl mc ;xjh`f`  
hahy`vh;` i sgwfgh dhbl hyh fhaghv`l .

Fw ;xjh`f`k fcpsxkx i sgwfghn`

Dwohn`vh l i scgl hk txnrcgcnx hnh`s`kvh ughk xojxghtg`  
l cscgcgcx mc ukghn`k l ckacdx fcdhk evxgvx. Gh;xk xojxght`k  
;z; gcnxkxk hojhn`g`f`jh`gl`hs` mc rhghk xojxghtghn redvc hg`k-  
l hl `a rhgv` ;x, fw vh ;xjh`f`k fxxk[x rxsl xkvc fcdhk evxgc-  
[c; vxn. Xsghl `k pcrxrx xsghphj]`ghn` mc redncjgx l i scgl hkghn  
ukghn` vxrrcj l cn; cbxkvc shoghl hg`, Hgghp`k ;zl cdx mc vcnxk  
l c/nxtcj shdcsxkvc Xsghl zmghvghn`k`k fxx-fxxkx dho`kgha-  
l hs`kvh mc ukghn`k Xsghl vi al ckgcx rhna`s`kvh mhpvx fxx  
ri mmc ac; gxxkvc fxngcal cgcxkvc ghb`l x rcvcn ]hg`al hg`v`nghn.

Fw dugvh hahy`vh;` pcvctgcx xbgcdxncl ... Fijik l i scgl hk  
jhdthghn` ho`nvx x;x fzdi ; rnv\h - xl hl cj mc oxgthcj l c; -  
jcfxkc fzgi kvi di kvck,<sup>1</sup> fw ;xjhfvh;` fcpsxl xb hahy`vh;`  
hmv`[`gg`rgh vhmhl evc[c; vxn...

1-X;x l c;jcf (oi gcth mc Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfx) kcbcnxkvck  
scphfc mc ukghn`k cvhgjgx ugwf-ugl hl hs` l cscgcsx. }ik;x uk-  
ghn |edycl fcx-C;ncl xk si kksxkx cgvc ejl c;vc fxx kzm  
mhsxjc nugkw udkhd`nghn. Oi gcth l c;jcfxkx kcbcnxkc `znc  
ukghn`k phl`s` - pe] fxx xsjxskh ugl hvhk cvhgjgxvxngcn,

---

]h\ ejvxvxl . Zb hnhav`nl hghn`l bhl hk` Xsghl `k cmmcgcnxkvc l zm[wv  
ughk sxnc ocfngcnxkvc ]uogw ouah`cgl cbgx; gcn ugvywkw `znvi l . Ukghn`k  
fc/bxgcxkx aDi b cgx shojh scphfcß hvg` ;xjhfvh kcan ejl xacl . : xjhfh fegc  
hv rudl hrvh l crscvxl hgxl gcnx Xsghl `k cmmcgcnxkvc dhnkhk shojh  
ncmhdcjgcncvck h`hp ejl c; xv. Fw ;xjh`f`k xkvxc rcvcn kcan ugwkxk x;x  
[xgvxkvc vuoshk i ] shojh scphfcx, egc[c vc dejl xavck hnj`r shojh nhmxkx  
jcrvxl ejl xacl . Pcl xk nhmxgcx ;x, tcjpcn, l i njcvgx; mc s. ;xl x  
l cscgcgcx ukghn`h xv evxl xavx. X;x [xgvx; aCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß hvg`  
;xjh`f` vh fw ;xjhfh l i rcvxl c ughnhr dnb`f` ]h\ ejvxnl xacl . aDi b cgx  
shojh scphfcß mc aCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ;xjhfvghn`k`k i ]ik[i [xgvx pcgc ]h\  
ugwkl hl `av`n. Fw dugvh l c/nwb rhgv`y`l txjkc mc fcghghnvhk dhgk`b  
Hgghph ax; hdcj evxncl !

<sup>1</sup> Fwkwk xbhph` pcl xk fcpsgcxk cmmcgxkvc redv ugwkx[hv`v`n.



ukghn`k cvhgckxkvc ac; ; -ai fpc dnhhl hr rhvhyhk mc ukghn`k pcn fmxkvck pcvxs cob ejl c; vi b'i kvi n. Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk kbcnx xsc fwvwn ; x, scphfcgcnxk hnhs`kvh pcl jcrmh mc dhoe` cl cg shpxfgcnx ugl wavwn (; x, ukghn`k pcvxsx l crfwg shd`g`n), pcl vc fcv cl cg shpxfgcnx mc l i khtxrgcn ugl waghv ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn`k fhncsxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَمِمَّنْ حَوْلَكُم مِّنَ الْأَعْرَابِ مُتَافِقُونَ وَمِنْ أَهْلِ الْمَدِينَةِ مَرَدُّوا عَلَى النَّفَاقِ لَا يَعْلَمُهُمْ نَحْنُ

نَعْلَمُهُمْ﴾

âLcvxkc cpgkvck (vc) fmx rnv\ axvvcjgc kxthrh xsnhn evxngcn... Sck ukghn` jhk`l`nshk, gh;xk Fxb ukghn` jhk`d`n`r.ß¹

Fw fzgl cvc cmmcg[c pcn x; x l c; jcfxk vcgxggcnx s`nt egl x ac; ; xgvc hnhav`n`gh[hr, vph suknh pcn x; x l c; jcfxk xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fhncsxkvc; x kbcnxddcgcnx mc ukghn`k vcgxggcnx fcdhk evxgc[c; vxn. } i k; x fw x; x l c; jcfxk fmxkxk – oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk kbcnxkc 'znc xg; vzv ocgxc Xsghl acnxcjxkxk rhdv-rhkwkghn`k` cgvc ejl c; i j i k dugvwn. Ukghn`k fhncsxkvc |edycl fcn j -vck fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... âPcl l ckxl si kkl x, pcl vc l ckvck suknh 'cgc[c; ânhavxk ocgxcgc-nxßkxk si kkcxsxk cob evxk, ukw vxaxkxbgc-v`nkhy`k`bgh shogh-d`k.ß

Oi gcth l c; jcfx ukghn`k acosx x[jxphvghn`, kbcngcnx mc nc/dgcnxkx xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnxkvck peshf ejl xagcn.²

Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk kbcnxkvc xsc uk x; x xl hl fw [i nvi n mc fw l c; jcf hnv`[`gghn` uk x; x xl hl `Xsghl acnxcjxkx cgvc ejl cdxk dugghn` peshf evxn, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -vck acnxcj pz;l gcnx fhncsxkvc kcrv ugwkxk pcn fmx aedx vc, ai fpcsb, ukghnvk cob evxngcn. Vel cgx, pcn x; x jcnctk fw fhncvc; x vcgxggcnx jhl hl xgc actttht mc hdv`k ugl hg`v`n.

2-Pcn x; x l c; jcfxk xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnx fhncsxkvc; x kbcnxkx egl x cl hkcjvhng`rgh hnhav`n`l hg`d`r mc fw fcpsgcnx pcn x; x l c; jcfxk l cvckx, sxdhsx mc x[jxl hx nctjhngn`k`, ukghn`k Xsghl [cl xddcjxkvc; x jc/sxngcnxkvck fc/bxgcnxkx redv ejl c; gc sukh ]hjv`nh[hy`r.

3-Fcpsxk sukwkvh Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkc mwnwghk fc/bx

¹ âJzmfcß swncsx, hdc.101

² Fw fcpsxk cjhgtg`xbhp` âXsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnx fhncsxkvc x; x l c; jcfxk kbcnxß fzgl csxkvc menxgl xavxn.

xjjxphl ghn` redv evcnc; , fw l c;jcfxk \h; -\h; xbc ugvywkw  
 fcdhk evc[cdx; . L i jchg Hgghpvhk xsjcdxncl ; x, fw x; x l c; -  
 jcfxk Rwn/hkx-: cnxl fhncsxkvc ughk ncmhdcjgcnxk hnhav`n`gl h-  
 s`kvh vh l ckc Zb gi jt mc l cnpcl cjxgc l i mcttcrxddcjgc cjh  
 ejsxk.

Xkvx fw fcpsgcnx cbxb Xsghl [cl xddcjxkc jcrvxl evxncl .  
 l l xvmhnhl ; x, ukh s`nt egl x kcbcnngcgc fhoh[hr mc l ckx  
 xsghl x l hhnxtxk dhd`gl hs`kvh, Xsghl l cbpcfpcgnx hnhs`kvh  
 rhna`g`rg` hkghal h mc dho`kghal h dnhhj l hr i ] i k fhaghv`y`l  
 xavc l i l ; i k ughk scpmgcnxl vck h'hp evc[c; gcn.

﴿قُلْ هَذِهِ سَبِيلِي أَدْعُو إِلَى اللَّهِ عَلَى بَصِيرَةٍ أَنَا وَمَنِ اتَّبَعِيَ وَسُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ وَمَا أَنَا مِنَ

الْمُشْرِكِينَ﴾

åVe... Fw l ckxl dugwl vwn, fcsxncjgc – l ck mc l ckxl hnv`[`gghn`l – Hgghph  
 vuynw ]hy`n`n`r. Hgghp pcn fxn edf mc kzsxhkvhk l i kcbbcpxn mc l ck  
 l i anx; gcnvck vedxgc l .<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> åDwsxtß swncsx, hdc.108

X: X L C: JCFXK XSGHLX ACNXCJ LCKFCGCNKKVC: X  
KCBCNXDDCGCNX

Lircvxl c

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk mcthj`kvhk suknh Xsghl  
jctc; ; i ni kvc fxn-fxnxcg jcbhvg` ughk x; x l c; jcf hnhs`kvh ha; hn  
hnd`g`y`k ahpxvx ugwnwr... Fxnk[xx, |edycl fcn i -xk  
mcthj`kvhk suknh i l l cjc ph; xl ughk ped/cjxk l c; jcfx ugwf  
Ji n; xdcvc Usl hkg` vzmgcjxkxk oxghtcjxkxk sukwkh rcvcn vh-  
mhl evxn. X; xk[xx xsc Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk xl hl ghn`k`k dugw  
ugwf uk x; xk[x xl hl `k redfc ]c; xgvxdx vzmnc rcvcn vhmhl  
evxn.<sup>1</sup> Fw xojxght ukghn`k l i scgl hk hnv`[`gghn` mc hgxl gcnx  
hnhs`kvh vh phb`n; ` csnc rcvcn vhmhl ejl xa mc Hgghp`k  
xsjcvxdx phks`ksh fxn vzmnc rcvcn vc vhmhl evc[c; vxn.

Fxb 'cgc[c; fcpsgcnvc fxnxk[x l c; jcfx ãoi gcth l c; jcfxß,  
vx'cnxkx xsc ãCpgx-fedj l c; jcfxß hvghkv`nh[hy`r. Cmmcg[c  
ukghn`k hnhs`kvh l zm[wv ughk xojxghtg` l cscgcgc n mc ukghn`k  
l ckacdxkx hnhav`nh[hr, vphph suknh xsc ukghn`k ki l wkcgcnxkx  
redv evc[cdx; .

XOJXGHTG~ PHGGHN

Pcn x; x l c; jcf Rwn/hkx-: cnxl fhncsxkvc l i ajcnc; l zmre-  
dc l hgx; vxngcn, zbgcnxkx phghg mc phnhi , mh[xf mc l i sjcpcf  
; xl x cl cggcnc xgjxbhl g` fxgxngcn. Gh; xk ukwk l c/khs`k`k  
dubwgl hs` mc jc/mxg evxgl csxkvc – oi swsxcg l i jcahfxp  
hdcgcncv – ; cs; xk kcbcn xojxght`kh l hgx; vxngcn. Ukghn hahy`-  
vh; ` i ] l cscgc fhncsxkvc vc kcbcn xojxght`kh l hgx; vxngcn...

1-Scphfcgc fhncsxkvcæ

2-Xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fhncsxkvcæ fegc ; x, fw, xsghl x acnxcj

---

<sup>1</sup> Ph; xl gcnxk ph; xl xddcjvc ugvyw l c; jcfx – oi gcth l c; jcfxkx  
Ji n; xdcvc Usl hkg` oxghtcjxkxk sukh ]hjl hs` xgc, Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkx xsc  
Cpgx-fedj ☼ -vhk ughk uk x; xk[x xl hl `k vzmni kc rcvcn  
l cpvwwghkv`n`n`r. } i k; x oi gcth l c; jcfx zbi ki , |edycl fcnvck suknh; `  
ocgxtcgcnxk pz; wl cjxkxk rhkwkx ugl hs`kh xgjxbhl g` fxgx n mc ukghn`  
ã|edycl fcnxk ocgxtcgcnxß hvghkv`n`nghn. Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfx xsc ph; xl xddcj  
dhgk`b Cpgx-fedj ☼ -vhk ughk xl hl ghn` gcdhrcjgx fxgx n mc ukghn`  
ã|edycl fcnxk mcsxgcxß hvghkv`n`nghn. Fwkh 'znc vc fxnxk[xkx ãoi gcth  
l c; jcfxß, x; xk[xkx xsc ãCpgx-fedj l c; jcfxß hvghkv`nv`r.

I ckfcgcnxkc khxg ugl hy`k dugghn`kvhk fxnxvxn.

3-Rwn/hkvhk suknh xsghl x acnxcj I ckfcgcnxkc khxg ugl hy`k fhncsxkvc.

Fw fzgl cvc I zm[wv ughk xsjxghpgghn` hnhav`nv`rvhk suknh, pcn x; x I c; jcfk fw fhncvc; x kcbcnxddcgcnxkc 'xnxac[cdx; . Cmmcg[c fw ; xjhfk fi jik fzgl cgcnxkvc I i ajcnc; ughk xsjxghpgghn` hnhav`nh[hr, suknh xsc cncf vxgxkvc I zm[wv ughk gi ycj ; xjhfgghn`k`k ke[c d`y`gl hs`k` mc dhb`gl hs`k` fcdhk evc[cdx; .

#### CNCF VXGX MC XSGHLX XSJXGHPGHN (JENLXKGCN)

Fxnk[xsx...Jc/nxt mc jcrxl (fzg' i)

h) Cncf vxgxkxk gi ycjx, dhowv cncfvcnxk hv rudl hs`æ

f) Xsghl x-acn/x xsjxghpgghn, dhowv I i rcvvc acnxcj shpxfxkxk hv rudl hs`æ

y) L i jcacnxc xsjxghp`, dhowv I i scgl hkghn`k hv rudl hs`æ

r) Pcrxcj mc I c[hb.

h) Cncf gi ycjx

Fxb fc/bx cncf gi ycjgcnx fhncsxkvc dhgk`b Rwn/hkx-: cnxl xk fw vxgvc khbxg ugvywkh 'znc fcps evxnx; . Redv ugwkl hg`v`n ; x, phb`n; ` vzmnc xsjxthvc ugwkxk cncf szbgcnxkxk c; scnxddcjx Xsghl vkh cmmcg mc suknh – phb`n; ` vzmnc rcvcn – zbi ki k cmmcgvc; x 'ekxa dhd`ghk I c/khs`kvx xagckl xavxn. U [i I gcvck... åc; gß (del c; ), åkuml ß (dhjI hr), ågedgß ('e[c), åkcphnß ('i kvi b).

Fw szbgcnvck fc/bxgcnx cncf vxgxkvc I i ojcgxt I c/khghn` xthvc evxn. U [i I gcvck, åyi kl ß ; cgl csxkx redv ejl c; ughn ; x, xg; cmmcgvc rhbhk[ mc ; csf I c/khs`kvx ugl wa, suknhghn fxn aedx hshkg`rgh cgvc ejl c; I c/khs`kvx vh xsjxthvc ugwkl wavwn. Vhph suknh, Xsghl vh hahy`vh; ` I c/khvh xagcvxgl xavxn... åPcn phks` fxn aedx I i jgcr ac; xgvc cgvc ejl c; æ xsjcn hshk ugswk, xsjcnsc vc ]cjxk.ß

Fc/bck vc mhpvx fxn ; cgl c fxn rcfxgcvc fxn I c/khvh, fharh fxn rcfxgcvc xsc jhl fharh fxn I c/khvh xagcvxgl xavxn. L cscgck, åcsgcfß ; cgl csx Px[hb gcp[csxkvc åfhaß I c/khs`kvx, Jcl xl x gcp[csxkvc xsc åjun`hrß I c/khs`kvx xagcvxgx.¹

Fxbxl vzmni I i bvc vc ål cfswjß ; cgl csx xnhrg`ghn`k

¹ åJcpbxfi g-gi ycjß, Cbpcnx, 15-[x [xgv, scp.91, Rhpnc ]h` , 1384.

gcp[csxkvc l cbnwf – mwnwghk, swndxhg`ghn`k mc gxmhg`ghn`k  
 gcp[csxkvc xsc l cswn – semxk[gx l c/khs`kvh xagckxn. Vel cgx,  
 l xshg i ]i k, ácsgefb vevx;vc, Jcl xl x gcp[csxkvc fxn l c/kh,  
 Px[hb gcp[csxkvc xsc jhl fharh fxn l c/kh fhah vi ai gi n.  
 âL cfswjß ;cgl csx vc edkxgc.

f) Xsghl xsjxghpghn, dhowv l ircvcs acncj jcnctxkvck rudwghk hvghn  
 |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; -xk fe/scjxkvck suknh cncf  
 szbgcnxkx fc/bxgcx cmmcgvc xthvc ejvxdx l c/khghnvkh fharh  
 l c/kh ;csf ejl xavxn. L cscgck, áscghjß ;cgl csx Xsghl vkh rhfhr  
 âl ijger ac;xgvc vwh ejl c;ß l c/khs`kvh xagckxnvx,  
 |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; ukw rxnhcj mc bx;ngcnc, rxdhl  
 (hdhr i sjc vwnl hr), ujwnl hr, ni ;w mc sc[vc ejl c; ;xl x  
 cl cggcnc ahl xg ughk oi swsx fxn xfhvcj l c/khs`kvh xagcjl xavxn.  
 Fegc ;x, fw cl cggcn cncfgcn hnhs`kvh jhk`kl hb mc khl c/gwl  
 fxn aed vxv. Fw vh zbi kc xsghl x, dhowv acn/x xsjxghp hv`k`  
 hgl `av`n – xsjcn áscghjß ;cgl csx ;xl x, zbi ki k csg  
 l c/khs`kvkh fharh fxn l c/khdh vcdxavxnxgl xa mc jcbc fxn  
 l c/kh ;csf ejl xa szbgcnvck ugswk, xsjcnc vc âNcpl hkß  
 ;cgl csx ;xl x acncj shpxfxkxk zbi jcnctxkvck gi ycjv vxoxg  
 evxgck mc dekx fxn l c/khvh xagcvxgck szbgcnvck. Fwkh, Hgghp`k  
 l cosws sxtcjcgnxkvck fxnx ughk âNcpl hkß ;cgl csxkx l xshg  
 'zsjcnl c; ughn.

Acn/x xsjxghpghn dhgk`b Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc, dhowv acnxt Kcfcmx  
 pcvxsgcnxkvck 'cgl csxgc jhk`k`n mc fwkghn ugl hvkh acn/x xsjxghp  
 shd`gl `n.

r) L ijacnnc xsjxghp, dhowv l iscgl hkghn jcnctxkvck rudwghk hv  
 Fc/bx ;cgl cgc l iscgl hkghn`k kcbcnxkvck oi swsx l c/khdh  
 l hgx;vxv. U [i l gcvck, âx[jxphvß mc âl i [jepxvß szbgcnxkx  
 redv ejl c; ughn ;x, ukghn`k kcbcnxkvck âx[jxphvß ;cgl csx  
 âtxrpß, âl i [jepxvß ;cgl csx xsc âtxrpß l c/khs`kvh xagckxn.  
 Phgfw;x âx[jxphvß ;cgl csx cncf vxgxkvck âfxn aedx jh\l hr mc  
 cgvc ejl c; i ]i k ]hg`al hrß, âl i [jepxvß ;cgl csx xsc â]hg`arhk  
 acosß l c/khs`kvh xsjxthvc ugwkwn. Fw l c/kh |edycl fcn  
 i -xk fwdwnvwyw hahy`vh;` pcvxsvc vc xagcvxgl xavxn...

فَضْلُ الْعَامِ عَلَى الْمُجْتَهِدِ مِائَةُ دَرَجَةٍ

âHxł xk xfhcvjvc ]hgahk acosc (hfıvc) ughk tcbxgcjx di b vcnc[cvxn.B<sup>1</sup>  
 Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc mc |edycl fcn i pcvxsgcnxkvc  
 âx[jxphvß txrp l c/khs`kh, âl i[jepxvß xsc tcrxp l c/khs`kvh  
 'cgl cl xavxn mc fxb fw [i n hvrudl hk` âi ntx l ijcacnxcß,  
 dhowv âl i scgl hkghn jcnctxkvck hvrudl hß hvghkv`n`n`r.

Fw [i n hvrudl hghn`k fc/bxgcx l i scgl hkghn`k dhgk`b fxn  
 rnw\wkwk x]xkvc ncmh[ jh\l`av`n. U [i l gcvck, âsuml w  
 Bc;cnxddhßk` redv ejl c; ughn. Fegc ;x, l i scgl hkghnvhk  
 fc/bxgcxkxk (dc/kx fe/scjvck cmmcg;x cpgx-;xjh`k) kcbcnxkvc  
 âsi ;wj unw[wß ;xl x l c/kh menxvx. Dhoa` ughn ;x, fegc  
 xsjxghpghn phks` l ckjcrcvc dhđ`g`fsh, pcl xk l ckjcrcckxk hv`  
 xgc fhyghdhr mc l xshg i ]i k, âtxghk xsjxghp Fhyvhv l i scgl hk-  
 ghn`k`k xsjxghp`v`nß, dhowv âRhpnc l i scgl hkghn`k`k xsjxghp`-  
 v`nß - vedc; . Fw phgvh ukwk l i jgr ac; xgv l i scgl hkghn`k  
 xsjxghp`, dhowv âi ntx l ijcacnxcß hvghkv`n`gl hs` scpxp  
 ugl hdh[`rv`n.

Pcl ]xkxk, fc/bx xsghl x l cbpcfgenxk, dhowv zbgcnxkx Xsghl h  
 l ckswf evck fc/bx txnrccgnxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k kcbcnxkvc 'ekxa  
 dhđ`gl`a fc/bx hvghn vh edkxgc fegcvxn. Fegc ;x, ohnx[xgcxk  
 kcbcnxkvc âahnxß, dhowv âl i anx;ß ;cgl csxkx redv ejl c; ughn.  
 Ukghn`k kcbcnxkvc âahnxß – l i [hpxv acosc, âl i anx;ß xsc  
 zbgcnxkx ocmhnx[ hvghkv`nl hdhk fi ji k l i scgl hkghnh hv  
 evxgx. Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k fc/bxgcx jcnctxkvck  
 xsjxthvc ugwkxk ânhtxbxß ;cgl csx vc Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk hnv`-  
 [`gghn`kh edf rudl hr l crscvxc xagcvxgl xavxn. Cpgx-fedj  
 l c; jcfx hnv`[`gghn` hnhs`kvh âkhsxfxß ;cgl csx vc xl hl ghn`k  
 vi al ckgcxkc hv evxgx. Fw phgvh fxnxk[xkx ohnx[xgcxk  
 xsjxghp`, x; xk[xkx oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk xsjxghp`, i ]i k[i ki xsc  
 Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk xsjxghp` hvghkv`n`n`r.

Vel cgx, pcn mhoj oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk xfhncgnxkvc âkhsxfxß  
 ;cgl csxkx jh\shr, ukwk Cpgx-fedj vi al ckgcxkc hv evxgl csx  
 vi b'i k vedxgvxn. Egc[c vc âahnxß ;cgl csxkx ohnx[xgcnvck  
 fharhs`kvhk eajvx; vc, ohnx[xgcxk kcbcnvc jwjvwyw l c/khk`  
 vc; ejl cl cgxdx; .

y) Pcrxrcj mc l c[hb

C'cn fxn ;cgl ckxk zb l c/khs`kvh xagcvxgl csx, ukw eavck

<sup>1</sup> âKxphdcji g-gi ycjß, Xfkx Csx, â[c-pc-vcß l hvvcsx.

;xl x pcl xk l c/khvhk fharh fxn aedxk fhah vi ai gl cdc[cdx  
rcvcn ncmh[ jh\hnsh, fw szbi k pcl xk l c/khvh xagcvxgl csxkc  
âpcrxrx xagcvxgl cß vedxgx. L cscgck, âcscvß ;cgl csx d`nj`[  
pedmhk ughk axn i ]i k xagcvxgsxk, ukvhk fharh pe] fxn fharh  
l c/kh vh vi ai ki gl csxk. Vx'cn fxn l xshg... âScghjß ;cgl csx  
oi swsx bx;n mc cl cggcngc dhkha` denxkc dejxnxgck khl hb i ]i k  
kcbcnvc jwjwgl wavwn ;x, l i scgl hkghn âscghjß szbi ki  
xagcjvx;vc ukvhk (khl hbvhk) fharh fxn aed fhah vi al ingcn.  
Fw phgvh âcscvß ;cgl csx d`nj`[ pedmhk ughk axn, âscghjß  
;cgl csx xsc l cosws cl cg ughk khl hb i ]i k pcrxrx xagckl c  
shd`g`n mc fxnxk[x ;cgl c (i swg mc txrpvc-l i j.) âxsje/l hgx  
pcrxrxß, x; xk[x xsc âpcrxrcjx acn/xß hvghkv`n`g`n.

Fc/bck âcscvß ;cgl csx xagcvxgx, gh; xk ai [hcjgx hvhl kcbcnvc  
jwjwgnw mc l xshg i ]i k, âl cs[xvvc vkh`ahk fxn axnx 'znvi l ß -  
vedxgx. Fw, âxsje/l hgx l c[hbxß (l c[hbx l c/khvh xagckl c)  
shd`g`n mc âcscv ;cgl csxkxk ai [hcjgx hvhl fhncsxkvc xagck-  
l csx l c[hbxvxß - vedxngcn. Cgfcjjc, fw [i n xagckl cgc n ;cghl -  
vh;`, dhowv l crhl vh;` rcnxc mc ahpxvgc dhkha` ugl hg`v`n  
;x, l crscvxk ukwk pcrxrx l c/khs` vedxg, l c[hbx l c/khs`  
ugl hs` fhah vi ai gsi k. L cscgck, âl cs[xvvc vkh`ahkß redvx  
cscv ;cgl csxkxk l c[hbx l c/khvh ugvwykw 'zsjcnxn. } i k; x  
pcrxrx axn vkh`al `n, fw vh 'zsjcnxn ;x, vkh`ahk`k l crscvx  
d`nj`[ axn vedxg, ai [hcjgx ;xaxvx.

X; xk[xsx... cncf gi ycj l c[l wgcgnxkxk ke[c d`y`gl hs`

Cncf gi ycjai khs hgxl gcnx 2-3-[i px[nx csngcnxkvc cncf  
;cgl cgcnxkx fxn denc d`yhk bhl hk [hpxgddcj vzmni kvck  
e/jxfhnck fw xac fhaghv`rghn` vzmnc rcvcn ;cgl cgcnxk xthvc  
ejvxdx pcn fxn l c/khk` ukghn`k rhna`s`kvh redvc hgl `aghn.  
Ukghn`k kcbcnxkvc fw ;cgl cgcnxk gi ycj cpqx, dhowv Xsghl  
acnxcjx, dhowv vh l i scgl hkghn`k kcbcnxkvc phks` l c/khdh  
xagckl csx pe] fxn cpcl xddcj ;csf ejl xnvx. Dhgk`b l i scgl hk  
tcrxpgcnx wbwk csngcn fudw ]hg`ahnr zb dunwgl hb cl c; gcnx xgc  
xsghl x-txrp xsjxghpgghn`k, u [i l gcvck, âscghjß, âsuml ß, âpc[[ß  
mc s.-kxk jc/nxtxkx mencnc; ukghn i ]i k pcvv-pi vwv jc/dxk ej-  
l xagcn. Fwkh 'znc vc xsghl x-txrp xsjxghpgghn fi ji k l i scgl hk-  
ghn`k kcbcnxkvc l capwnghal `av`n. Gh; xk Xsghl vh l zm[wv  
ughk rednx-txrp xsjxghpgghn fhncsxkvc fegc [xvvx sc/d

evxgl cvxdxkc 'znc, xsjxghpghnvhk fc/bxgcnx l i scgl hkghn i ]i k  
khl c/gwl rhgl `a, ukghn fc/bx szbgcnxk acn/x xsjxghp ugwf-  
ugl hl hs`k`, dhowv l i scgl hkghn jcctxkvck hvrudwgl h mc  
ål i jcacnnxc xsjxghp`ß ugwf-ugl hl hs`k` fxgl cl xagcn. Fw l i cl -  
l h vh kcjx[c e/jxfhn` xgc xsghl x l ctpwl ghnvh hkgha`gl hbg`y`k  
dnhhkl hs`kh scfcf ugl wavwn. Fw, fc/bx Xsghl pz;l gcnxkxk  
jhg`kl hs`kvh zb jc/sxnxkx 'zsjcnl xavxn. L cscgck, åscphfxß mc  
åscphfcß szbgcnxkxk l c/khs` fhncsxkvc dnhhkhk tx; xn hdn`g`y`k`  
redv ejl c; ughn ;x, 'cgck fcpsvc fwkw hnhav`nh[hy`r.



# FXNXK{X FCPS

X; x l c; jcfxk ászpfcjß mc áscphfcß fhncsxkvc ughk kcbcnxddcgcnx

Fxnix[x tcsxg – X; x l c; jcfvc áscphfcßkxk jc/nxtx

h) Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk jc/nxtxæ

f) Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk jc/nxtxæ

m) Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk jhk`kl h duggn`æ

r) Scphfckx jhk`l hr i ]i k rudwghk i l wl x rhkwkh xnhvghn.

X; xk[x tcsxg – x; x l c; jcfvc scphfckxk cvhgcjx

h) Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk cvhgcjxæ

f) Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk cvhgcjxæ

m) L z/l xkgc l i khtxrxx hd`nv evxgl csxkvc ughk i l wl x rhkwk.

l ]i k[i tcsxg – pcn x; x l c; jcfvc scphfc fcpsixkxk oighscsx

h) Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc scphfc mc ukwk cvhgcjxæ

f) Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkvc scphfc



# FXNXK{X TCSXG – X: X LC: JCFVC SCPHFCKXK JC/NXTX

h) Oigeth l c; jcfxkvc scphfckxk jc/nxtx

XfKx Pc[cn zbi ki k āCg-xshfcβ ; xjhfk`k l i rcvvl csxkvc scphfckxk jc/nxtx xgc cghrcvhn fegc dhb`n... āScphfc u ; csc vedxgx n ; x, |edycl fcnx 'znl i a, ukh xl hk 'cjxnl xa mc l i scgl hk phg`kvh zgl i a ugswkæ xsjcn |edycl fcngc 'zni al csx mc ukwkgh dhkha` ugl hs` r`sh l i vvcjgx ugswk, xsjcnc vc wbwk l i vvcjgxæ xsjcn |edycl fcncvck fxn aed ncmhdcj ejl xa ugswk, xsjcnc vc ncmhdcj ejl cl xa ugswkæ xsjcn |edycl fcngc fxn`c [xphvh (l i phnxfcdc) 'ejl xa ugswk, xsjcnc 'ejl cl xa ugswk, fi ji k fw ; csgcn fxbxl jc/nxtxl xbvc, dc/kx ā|edycl fcnx 'znck acosβxk jc/nxtxkvc fxn denc d'y`g`n. Pcjjh c`cn |edycl fcnx dhgk`b fxn vctc 'znl i a ugsh, dhowv ukwkgh fxn denvc ujwnl hl `a ugsh, dhowv ; un ugvwywkh 'znc u pcbncjx zb 'zbi xgc 'znl cl xa ugsh fegc.β<sup>1</sup>

U, pcl xk ; xjhfk`k fharh denxkvc fegc dhb`n... āFw rhkwkw fxgl c; gc ]uoghn`k`k scphfc ugl hs` hdv`kgha`n. U [i l gcvck...

h) Ukghn (ocgxtcgc) xsghl x tcjpcgcnc unvw scn; cnvcgxdxk mc mhgxgdx dhgk`b scphfcgcncvck jc/dxk evxnvxgc.

f) Px[ncjxk 10-[w xgxkvc L c; ; c mc Jhxt acpcngcnxkvc egc fxn hvhl rhgl hl `av` ; x, Xsghl `rcfwg ejl csxk mc |edycl fcngc āPc[[c]i g-mxvhβvh xajxnh; ejl csxk.

m) Ums mc Ocbnc[ rcfxgcgcncxkxk fi ji k i bmgcnx |edycl fcnxk zl ni ki k ho`n`kh rcvcn Xsghl `rcfwg ejl xavxgc.

r) |edycl fcnxk mthj`kvhk suknh vh ukghnvhk pe] fxnx ; htxn ugl hl `av`.β<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> āCg-xshfcβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.10. Pcl xk jc/nxtx l cnpwl Acpxvx Shkx zbi ki k āCv-vxnhdcb ; xjhfk`kvh oigeth l c; jcfxkvck cob ejl xa mc ukwk 4-[i fhf`kvh fegc vel xavxn... āScphfc u ; csc vedxgx n ; x, |edycl fcnx 'znl i a, ukh xl hk 'cjxnl xa mc vi kdhvhk l i scgl hk phg`kvh 'ejl xavxn.β

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.13 mc 16.

L i c g g t ... C ' c n p c n p h k s ` j c p r x r h j ] ` l c k x l d h b v ` y ` l â D i b c g g x s h o j h s c p h f c ß h v g ` ; x j h f ` l h l i n h [ x c j e j s c , o i g c t h l c ; j c f x k x k s c p h f c f h n c s x k v c n c m h ' z n v i ; g c n x s c p g c k ; h n g ` r , ' z s j c n v x ; g c n x e / j x k h s ` b g ` r m c f w x a x k p c v x s e g l x k c m w n v w y w h y ` n b x d h k g h n ` d h o a ` a c ; x g v c f h a h v i a c n .

f) C p g x - f e d j l c ; j c f x k v c s c p h f c k x k j c / n x t x

C p g x - f e d j l c ; j c f x k v c x s c v e d x g x n ; x , s c p h f c k x k j c / n x t x c n c f g i y c j x k x k r h l w s g h n ` k v h ' c g k g c n v x n . U n h v h v e d x g x n ... â S h p x f ß ; c g l c s x k x k [ c l t u n l h s ` u g h k â s c p h f c ß f x n ; c s g c d h k h a ` u g h k h v h l g h n h v e d x g x n . S c p h f x ( s c p h f c k x k j c ; t u n l h s ` v ` n , l i j . ) – | e d y c l f c n i s c p h f c g c n x k v c k m c u p c b n c j g c v h x l d h k h a ` u g h k f x n k e t c n v x n . F w j c / n x t d h g k ` b u ; c s f h n c s x k v c v u y n w v w n ; x , | e d y c l f c n g c p c v v x k v c k h n j ` r ] u o d u g v h a g ` r e j l x a u g s w k . } i k ; x â s z p f c j ß ; c g l c s x ( s c p h f c ; c g l c s x k x k ; z ; i v i n , l i j . ) w b w k l i v v c j g x d h k h a ` u g l h y ` j c g c f e v x n .<sup>1</sup>

â L i s h p x f c j ß x ; x j c n c t g x x a u g v w y w k h ' z n c p z ; l c k s h p x f m c u k w k [ c l x u g h k s c p h f c ; c g l c s x v c ; c g h l v h f h a r h f x n s z b c x b h t c j – l w b h t m c l w b h t w k x g c d p a c ; g x k v c u g l h g ` v ` n . R w n / h k x - : c n x l v c f e g c f w d w n w g w n ... â D h s h p x f c d x s - s x [ k x ß , e d l c k x l x ; x b i k v h k d u g v h a ` l v h k f i n x .<sup>2</sup> â M c c s p h f w L w s h – L w s h k ` k d u g v h a g h n .<sup>3</sup> | e d y c l f c n x - C ; n c l i - x k v z m n i k v c v c â s h p x f w N c s w g x g g h p ß m c â c s p h f w N c s w g x g g h p ß v e d x g x n v x . D c / k x s h p x f m c c s p h f ; c g l c g c n x k x â N c s w g x g g h p ß ; c g l c s x k c x b h t c j a c ; g x k v c v e d x n v x g c n . â C s p h f w f e d / c j x a - a c [ c n c ß , â c s p h f w s - s i t t c ß m c s . ; x l x ; c g l c g c n x k p h l ` s ` k v h v h â c s p h f ß ; c g l c s x x b h t c j a c ; g x k v c ' c g x n v x . U v z m n v c s h p x f m c c s p h f ; c g l c g c n x j c ; g x ; v c m c l i b h t w k x g e d p u g l h v h k | e d y c l f c n x k s c p h f c g c n x k c v e d x g l x n v x . G h ; x k o i g c t h l c ; j c f x k x k h n v ` [ ` g g h n ` u g h k l i s c g l h k g h n j c v n x [ g c â c s p h f w N c s w g x g g h p ß ; c g l c s x k x l w b h t w k x g e d p u g l h v h k , d c / k x s c p h f x m c c s p h f a c ; g x k v c x a g c j v x g c n . V e l c g x , f w [ i n h v r u d l h l i s c g l h k g h n ` k h v r u d l h s ` m c l i j c a c n n x c x s j x g h p v ` n , a c n / x x s j x g h p v e d x g v x n .

<sup>1</sup> â G x s h k w g - c n c f ß , â L i t n c v h j x N h y x f ß , â s c - p x - f c ß ; c g l c s x .

<sup>2</sup> â D w s x t ß s w n c s x , h d c . 29

<sup>3</sup> â A i c n h ß s w n c s x , h d c . 61

m) Oigeth I c;jcfkvc scphfckxk jhk'kl h duggn`

Oigeth I c;jcfkvc jcn[i l edx-phg dhhbkghn scphfckx jhk'kl hr i ]i k l i cddck duggn redv ejl xagcn. Xfkx Pc[cn âCg-xshfcb ;xjh'kvh fegc dhh'n... â(Pcvxs) fha]`ghn`k`k scphfckxk jc/nxtxkvc mc ukw jhk'jv`nl hrvh fxbc 'cgxf ]hjhk l i cl l hg` szbgcnxkvc fxn vc – c'cn ukh h]`r-ha; hn vcgxg ugl hsh vh fegc – Xfkx Cfx Aedfckxk âCg-l i sckkctb ;xjh'kvh ncvv ugwkl hdhk fxn jcnxr (dug, mhsxc) xgc redv ejvxdxvn... âUkghn (ocgxtcgcn) tcjpcgncv dhgk`b scphfcgcnx scn;cnvcgxdc mc mhgxgdc jc/dxk evxnvxgc.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fwnhvh vedxgck âncvv ugwkl hdhk fxn jcnxrß Jcfcnxkxk mc Xfkx Csh;xnk zb sckcvgcx xgc... Sedtvck, u vh Cfw Usl hkvhk, u vh Ohgxvvc, u vh l fhvcvck kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjvx ;x, ukvh fegc vedxgn... âScn;cnvcgcn pcl xac scphfcgcnvck ugwnvwghn. Hl l h u l crhl h l i khsxf acos jh`k[hdh rcvcn ukghnh scn;cnvcg; menl c; tx;nxkvc vzkl cbvx. Hl l h c'cn jh`l hshdv`, ukghnvkh suknh 'cgck tcbxgcj shpxfgcnxkc pcmhgc evcnvx. L i njcv ugwf suknh jzmfc evckgc pe] mhoj ncdhscjc mc scn;cnvcgdc 'zb vx; l xnvxgc.ß<sup>2</sup>

Jcfcnx fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc Sedtxk fegc vevxdxkx kcrj evxn... âOcgxtc Zl cn l i phnxfc i ]i k scphfcgcn hnhs`kvh scghpxddcjgx, fh[hn`rg` mc l i khsxf fxn acos jh`k[hdh rcvcn ukghnh scn;cnvcg; menl c; tx;nxkvc vzkl cbvx. Hl l h c'cn jh`l hshdv`, ukghnvkh suknh 'cgck tcbxgcj shpxfgcnxkc pcmhgc evcnvx. L i njcv ugwf suknh jzmfc evckgc pe] mhoj ncdhscjc mc scn;cnvcgdc 'zb vx; l xnvxgc.ß<sup>3</sup>

SCPHFCKXK JHK-KLH DUGGHN-KVH L ZM{WV UGHK XNHV

Pcn x;x ncmhdcj ho`nvh Sedt xfkx Zl cnc rhd`v`n ;x, u, pcvxsai khsghn`k kcbcnxkvc shojh pcvxs vi bcgj l c;vc mc vxksxbgx;vc l i jpcxl ugwkwn.<sup>4</sup>

Sedt fw ârhkwkwß Cfw Usl hk hvg` fxn acosvck ncmhdcj evxnæ pcl xk Cfw Usl hk ;x, Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcxkvc Ohgxv mc l fhvcvck ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Sedt zb ocdhg`kvh ukw Debvx xfkx l sedv Rcsshkx hvghkv`nl `av`n ;x, fw vh ukwk zb jcnctxkvc

<sup>1</sup> âCg-xshfcb, 1-[x [xgv, scp.13.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2151

<sup>3</sup> âJzmfcß swncsxkxk 100-[i hdcxkc xahncvxn...

﴿وَالَّذِينَ اتَّبَعُوهُمْ يَأْخُذُونَ بِاللَّهِ عَنَّهُمْ وَرَضُوا عَنْهُ﴾

âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2457-2458. Hmnu`h ]h`.

<sup>4</sup> âCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhß, 1-[x [xgv, Sedtxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

wdvwnvwyw shojh nhmxgcnvckvx.β<sup>1</sup>

Nhmxgcnxk acosddcjxkxk l i cl l hg` ugl hs`kvhk cghmc, fw ncmhdcjgcnxk l zpjcmhs` vh jhnnox 'en]c; gx; gcngc wdywk 'cgl xn. Fegc ;x, āCyhcxβ ;xjhfk`k l i cggtx ncmhdcj evcnc; dhb`n... āXl ncwg-Reds Zl cnxk cgx xgc Xsghl ` rcfwg ejvx, Zl cn ukw pcjjh fxn nc;/cj khl hb r`gl hbvhk zk[c, mhgxxdc mc scn;cnvcgdc jc/dxk ejvx.β Fw ncmhdcj suknh;` ncmhdcjvc acnp ugwkhnhr l nt xfkx Ohnx[c L i nnxvck fegc kcrq ugwkwn...āHggph hkv ugswk! Lck Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k oxghtcjx vzmni kvc fxn 'i k ukwk dhk`kvh xvxl . "znvi l ;x, hdhy` cdnx, sh]` hb mc fha`k`k unjhs` ;e]cg ughk fxn ;xax [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvhk ;e]cnc; Zl cnxk rhna`s`kvh vhdhkv` mc ukwk oxghtcjxkx jcfnx; ejvx. Zl cn āSck ;xl sck?β – vedc, sunwavwrvh, vevx ;x, l ck l csxpx fxn hvhl hl , hv`l Xl nci g-Reds Cvx : cgfxvx. Zl cn ukw jhk`d`f vevx... āKc xsjcdxnsck?β Vevx... āXsghl `β Zl cn Xsghl vxkxkx ukh jcrvxl ejvx, u vh rcfwg ejvx. Suknh ukw āRcbhcjβ l i scgl hkghn`kh scn;cnvc mc cl xn jc/dxk ejvx.<sup>2</sup> Fw bhl hk fxn kxbc xsjcvx, Ahl l i scgl hkghn`kh ncpfcngx; fhdnhy`k` pcl xk kxbckxk w[wkh fhyghv`. Xl ncwg-Reds pcl xk fhdnhr fha`k`k i sji kvc deggckck phgvh rhd`jv`.β<sup>3</sup>

Zl cnxk Cgrcl c xfkx Cghsc : cgfxdc, ukwk l i njcvgdxkvck suknh cl xngx; menl c; phvxscsx vc fegcvxn. āCyhcxβ mc āCg-xshfcβ ;xjhfgghn`kvh<sup>4</sup> ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh fegc redv ugwkwn...āCgrcl c Xsghl ` |edycl fcnxk vzmni kvc rcfwg ejvx, u pcbncjc scphfc ugl hr xtjohnd` ukh vh kcsxf ugvw. Suknhghn, Cfw Fc; nxk oxghtcjx vzmni kvc l i njcv ugvw. Cfw Fc; n Ohgxvx ukh jcnct 'zkvcnvx mc u rh]v`. Vel xagcn ;x, suknhghn rhd`v`f Xsghl ` dekvck rcfwg ejl xavxn.β

<sup>1</sup> āNumhjwk l wojcgxrwkcb, cgdhbl hæ āCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.117, Fednwj ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> Rcbhcj fzdi ; rcfxgcgcgnvck xfhncj vxv ;x, Pedvhk, Fcpnhp mc {i pedkc rcfxgcgcgnx vc ukwk jcn;xfxkvc vxv. Ukghn`k acnp-xphg` Xfkx Pcb l xk ā{cl pcncji g-ckshfxg-cncfβ ;xjhfk`k 440-460-[` scpxtcgcnxkvc redv ugwk l wavwn. Ukghn cmmcg[c Acpnvc, suknh Kc[nhkvh mc fwkvhk suknh vh Ahl vh l cs; wkgghal `av`ghn. Cghmc l c/gwl hj i ]i k āL z/[cl i g-rcfxfxg-cncfβ ;xjhfk`k rcbhcj l hvvcxkc, 3-[i [xgv, scp.957-c fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

<sup>3</sup> āCyhcxβ, 14-[i [xgv, scp.257. Shsx ]h`. Ukwk oi ghscsx xsc ā{cl pcncji g-ckshfxg-cncfβ ;xjhfk`k 284-[i scpxtcxkvc redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>4</sup> āCg-xshfcβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.496-498. āCyhcxβ, 15-[x [xgv, scp.56. Shsx ]h`.

Fw phvxsc âCg-xshfcß ; xjhfkvh fegc redv ugwkwn... âCgrcl c ZI cnxk vzmni kvc acnhf x]vxdxkc 'znc ZI cn ukh ahgghr mwnvw. U vh vxkvck j`o`f Nul hdh rh]v`. Nul h \hvahp` ukw cbxbgcvx mc vevx... âSck HI xn xfkx Ji tedgxk cl x uygwswshk?ß U rcbcfgckxf vevx... âLck HI xnvck fharhs` xgc jhk`kl hd`l l `?ß¹ Suknh rhd`vnhhr Xsghl ` rcfwg ejvx. Vel xagcn ; x, u, 'e[c rhnhkg`y`kvh Lcvxkcdc rhd`jv`y` bhl hk ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhfgh rhna`ghav`. ZI cn fxn rcvcn Ohgxvc uoahv`y`kh mc Ohgxv vc Cgrcl ckxk vusjghn`kvhk ugvwywkh 'znc Cgrcl cj ukwk Ohgxv ugvwywkw 'i l hk evxf shghl menvx mc vevx... âZI cn sckx scn; cnvcgx; vck j`ohnjv`l `?ß ZI cn vevx... âFcgx, egcvxn.ß Cgrcl c vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk, sckx fw xavck j`ohnj l hy` dhgk`b \ho`gg`r mc pcscvc 'zncvxn.ß ZI cn vevx... âFxbc ; z l c; ej l c; i j i k kc tx; xngcaxnsck?ß U vevx... âHgghph \ckhp! ZI cnxk fxbxl i bcxnl xbv c eajl c; mc xjhcj ej l c; phrr` mhnv`n mc fxb pe] mhoj ukwk cgedpxkc fxn xa 'znl cnx; !ß

Pcl xk 'i ki k shfhp` ZI cn i l wl x 'zni a jca; xg ejvx. Ohgxv Cgrcl c xgc fxngx; vc ukwk dhk`kh 'cgvx mc fxn-fxnxkxk dhk`kvh ujwnvwghn. ZI cn Cgrcl cdc i b jwjwf vevx... âVe 'znc; , Cgrcl c! U szbgcnx Ohgxvc vedck sck xvxl x?ß Cgrcl c Ohgxvc i b jemxnxf vevx... âCfh Si gedl hk! Sckc vevx; gcxnl x ZI cnc vel xsckl x?ß Ohgxv vevx... âMhd ugswk sckcl Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, fwkvhk rhfhr sckxkgc rhna`ghal hl `ahl ! Lck 'i l hk evxncl ; x, sck ukw (ZI cnx) 'znl i scklß Cgrcl c vevx... âFcgx, Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, ukw 'znl i acl !ß Suknh ZI cnc i b jwjwf vevx... âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Dhoa`g`rvhk fharh fxn aed eajl cvxklß ZI cn vevx... âFcgx, fegcvxn. Xsjcnvxkl x sckx Pumnhkh mhgx 'zkvcnl ?ß² Cgrcl c vevx... âFcgx.ß ZI cn ukw Pumnhkh mhgx jc/dxk ejvx, z l ni ki k ho`n`kh rcvcn vc unhvh rhgv`.ß

âCg-xshfcß ; xjhfkvh xsc fegc cghmc ugwkwn... âZI cn vevx... C'cn sckxk nc/dxk l ckvck suknh 'cgckgcncvc ugshdv`, l ckxl

<sup>1</sup> Cgrcl c xgc HI xnxk hnhs`kvh wbwk-wbhv` mc rhna`g`rg` kxtncj mhn vxv. Fw, âCyhkbß ; xjhfk`k`k 15-[x [xgvxkxk 50-[x scpxtcsxkvc redv ugwk l wavwn. Fwkh 'znc vc Cgrcl c l cpb HI xnxk cl xsx uygw ugvwywkh 'znc pznl cjc ghdxr 'zni gl csxkvck khnhphj vxv.

<sup>2</sup> Pumnhk, Vcl carxk xvhnc ped/cjxkxk dengcavdx 'ekxa fxn cnhbxvx; x, ]uogw ; ckvgcnx mc c; xk shpcgcnx mhnv`n. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.358.)

i ]i k txghk-txghk aedgcnvck vphph semxl gx ughnv`.B

Redv ugwkhhkghn jhnnox ;en]c;gx;gcnvxn. Gh;xk oi gcth l c;-  
jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx zb ncmhdcj ejvx;gcnxkc xsjxkhv ejl xa, egc zb  
ncmhdcjgcnxkvck |edycl fcn scphfcsxkx jhk`l hr i ]i k fxn rh-  
kwk vi bcgjl xa mc vxksxbgx;gc l ijjcpxl ugwkhhk Sedt xfkx  
Zl cnxk vi bcgjvxdx shojh hvhl ghn` scphfc peshf ejl xagcn.  
Fegc ;x, fxb âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ;xjhF`kvh ukghn`k mcbxd-  
dcjxkx fcdhk ejl xax;.

X;x l c;jcfxk scphfckxk jc/nxtx fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcsxkx  
hnhav`nv`rvhk suknh fw x;x l c;jcfxk scphfcgcnxk cvhgcyj  
fhncsxkvc ughk szbgcnxkx redv evxnx;.



X: XK{X TCSXG

X: X LC: JCFXK KCBCNXKVC SCPHFCKXK CVHGCJX

h) Oigeth l c;jcfxkxk scphfcgcnxk cvhgjx fhncsukvc;x kcbcnxddcsx

Oigeth l c;jcfx scphfcgcnxk phl`s`k` – pe] fxn xsjxskh  
ugl hvhk – cvhgjgx peshf evxn mc vxkxk i swg mc rhdvhghn`k`  
zdnckl c;vc ukghn`k` pcn fxnkc l i nh[xcj evxngcn. â{cnp mc  
jc/vxgß egl xkxk ncpfcnx (nhmxgcnxk cvhgjgx ugwf-ugl hl hs`k`  
hnhav`nhk egl c vedxgx) Cfw Phjcl Nhbx<sup>1</sup> zb ;xjhfk`k`  
l i rcvvl csxkvc fegc dhn`n... â... Hl l h |edycl fcnxk  
scphfcgcnxkc `cgvx;vc xsc, mcpdc mc jckbxgc ahpxv ughkghn  
Rwn/hk`k` jctsn mc jc/mxgxkx phl`vhk dhoa` fxgxnvxgc. L i jchg  
Hgghp |edycl fcngc pcl szpfcj mc dhkha` ugl hrvh, vxkc  
;zl c; ejl c;vc, vxkx fcncnchn mc phrr`xbphn ejl c;vc ukghn`  
se]l xavxn. Hgghp ukghn`k` scphfc ugl hs`k` fcdckl xa, ukghn`  
fxbxl i]i k kxahkc, znkc; mc kil wkc rcnchn menl xavxn. U  
;csgcn ;x, |edycl fcnxk Hgghp-jhhgh jcnctxkvck ukghnh  
]hjv`nv`y` mc âsi kkcß i kmhk` xgc rhkwk phg`kh shgv`y` pcn fxn  
aedx, mh[xf mc l i sjcpcf i kmhk` xgc `zkvcnvxdx pcn fxn  
pz;l i, cl n mc kcpdx, rhvhyhk ejvxdx pcn fxn aedx zdnckxf  
pxtb ejvxgc mc ukghn` l zp;cl gcjvxgc, vxkvc tcrxp ugvwghn,  
Hgghp`k` cl n mc kcpdxkx, l crscv mc l wnhv`k` |edycl fcnxk  
pi bwnwkvh zdnckcnc; Rwn/hk`k` jctsn mc jc/mxgxkx l i ahpxvc  
ejvxgc mc u pcbncjvck vcgxg-si fwj dugwkw `zbcg ac; xgvc  
zdnckvxgc. Hgghp-jhhgh vh ukghnh l cpb fw mhsxjc xgc acnhtcj  
cjh ejvx, ukghnh ncpfcngx; mcbxtcsxkx menl c;gc cbxbgcvx,  
ukghnvhk pcn kzm ac;;, dhghk, scpm, jcncvvi v mc edfgcnx  
hnhvhk h`hmv`, ukghn` i l l cjxk cvhgjgxgcnx hvghkv`nv` mc

---

<sup>1</sup> Cfw L cpcl l cv Cfvi nncpl hk xfkx Cfx Phjcl Nhbx 327-[x xgvc methj  
ejl xavxn. 1371-[x xgvc Pedvcnhfhvvh ]h\ ugwkxk âJcrvxl cjwg-l c/nxtcjx  
gx; xjhfxg-[cnpj mcj-jc/vxgß ; xjhfk`k` u dhbl `av`n.

Zbi ki k l zp; cl ; xjh<sup>1</sup>kvh fegc fwdwnvw...

﴿وَكَذَلِكَ جَعَلْنَاكُمْ أُمَّةً وَسَطًا لِتَكُونُوا شُهَدَاءَ عَلَى النَّاسِ﴾

åMc fegcg;gc, sxbx unjh i l l cj rcnhn menvx; ;x, xkshkghnh ahpxv ughs<sup>1</sup>k'b.ß<sup>1</sup>  
| edycl fcnx-C; ncl åmcscjckß ; cgl csxkx åwvwgckß, dc/kx  
cvhgjcjgxcn ; xl x jctsn ejl xavxn. Vel cgx, scphfcgcn i l l cjxk  
cvhgjcjgxcnx, pxvhdcj ncpfcngcnx, vxk pz[[cjgcnx, Rwn/hk mc  
si kkckxk ncmhdcj]xgcnxvxn. Hgghp-jhhgh vh ukghn<sup>1</sup>k dugwkh  
shn<sup>1</sup>gl hy<sup>1</sup>, ukghn<sup>1</sup>k dugwkvh ugl hy<sup>1</sup> mc ukghnh xrxvh ejl cdx  
fcdckl xa mc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿وَمَنْ يُشَاقِقِ الرَّسُولَ مِنْ بَعْدِ مَا تَبَيَّنَ لَهُ الْهُدَىٰ وَيَتَّبِعْ غَيْرَ سَبِيلِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ نُوَلِّهِ مَا تَوَلَّىٰ

وَنُصْلِهِ جَهَنَّمَ﴾

åPcn ;cs | edycl fcngc l iohgtcj evncsc... mc l z/l xkgcnxk dugwkvhk fharh  
fxn dugh 'evncsc, ukw 'ejvdx dugh h\hnhn<sup>1</sup>r.ß<sup>2</sup>

}uogw ncmhdcjgcnvc vc 'znl i ai ; ;x, | edycl fcn zb  
scphfcgcnxkx zbi ki k szbgcnxkx fharhghn<sup>1</sup>kh jcfgy ejl c; mc  
]hjv<sup>1</sup>nl hyh ncyfcjgckvxnxn mc ukghnh fegc fwdwnwnvw...

﴿نُضِرَ اللَّهُ أَمْرًا سَمِعَ مَقَالَتِي فَحَفِظَهَا وَوَعَاهَا حَتَّىٰ يُبَلِّغَهَا غَيْرُهُ﴾

åHgghp u ;csx semxkvnsxk ;x, l ckxl szbgcnx x eajxsk, pxtb ejxsk, dhv<sup>1</sup>kvh  
shoghs<sup>1</sup>k ;x, fharhghn<sup>1</sup>kh ]hjv<sup>1</sup>nh fxgsk.ß

Pcl ]xkxk, zb oi jfcxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

فَلْيُبَلِّغِ الشَّاهِدُ مِنْكُمْ الْغَائِبَ

åSxbx ahpxvgcnxkb (fwnhvh ughkghn<sup>1</sup>k'b) rhxfgcnc ]hjv<sup>1</sup>ns<sup>1</sup>kgkn.ß Suknh  
fwdwnl wavwn... åLckxl szbgcnx x fharhghn<sup>1</sup>kh (vh) ]hjv<sup>1</sup>n<sup>1</sup>k, pcjjh fxn hdc vc  
ugsh fegc. Lckxl pcvsgcnx x szdgcdxk ;x, fwkwk pe] fxn l cpvwxddcx duovwn.ß

Fwkvhk suknh scphfcgcn cjnht khpxdcgcnc, acpcngcnc mc  
scnpcvgcnc vuynw 'evxn, [xphv h\hn<sup>1</sup>n, tcjpcgn rhbhk<sup>1</sup>n, pz; wl cj  
xagcnxkc, rcbhmcj mc xvhnc]xgxdc l caywg ugwnvwghnæ pcn ;cs  
zbi ki k dhahv<sup>1</sup>y<sup>1</sup> denvc | edycl fcnvck eajvx; gcnxkx kerg evxf  
dhd<sup>1</sup>n, [hl hhj<sup>1</sup>k swghghn<sup>1</sup>k<sup>1</sup> zbi ki k | edycl fcnxk szbgcnxkvck  
fhah vi avi di cshsvh [hmhfghkv<sup>1</sup>n<sup>1</sup>n, ukghnh tcjmh menxnvx.

<sup>1</sup> åFcrncß swncsx, hdc.143

<sup>2</sup> åKxshß swncsx, hdc.115. Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hnv<sup>1</sup>[<sup>1</sup>gghn<sup>1</sup> fijik  
fwkghn<sup>1</sup>k ohnx[x ki l wkgcnxkxk l cpb l z/l xk scphfcgcn ugvywkw  
vedxngcn. Fegc ;x, hdc fwkh ha;hn ac;xgvc vcghgcj evxn. Fw fhncvc cghmc  
xbhpgghn suknvhk redv ugwk[h<sup>1</sup>rv<sup>1</sup>n.

Hggghp-jhhghk`k ukghn` Zb vcn'hp`kh ]hy`n`f nwpghn`k` rcfb  
ejvxdx mhohj rcvxn zb [hkghn`k` pi ski -kxddcjc, scl xl x rcgf-  
vck mc rinfcj rcsvx xgc vxk pz;l gcnxkx, tcnxbcgcnxkx, si kkc-  
gcnxkx, phnhl mc phghghn`k` [hl hhjh zdncjl cdc scnt evxnvxgc.  
Hggghp`k nxbmhk`, ncpl cjx mc fhy`aghl hs` ukghn`k phl `s`kh  
ahl xg ugswk!ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnn zbi ki k âXsjxd/hfß ;xjh`f`k`k l i rcv-  
vxl csxkvc fegc dhb`n... âScphfcgcnxk phl `s`k`k cvhgcjgx ugl hs`  
si fwjh dejxfvxn.ß<sup>2</sup> Nhbxkxk kcrj ejvxdx ;xl x, u suknh ukghn`k  
l z/l xkgcnxkx fhncsxkvc 'cgck hdc mc ncmhdcjgcnx jctsn mc  
xbhp ejl xavxn.

Xfkx Csx âWsvwg-yhfcb ;xjh`f`k`k l i rcvvxl csxkvc fegc  
redv evxn... âU si kkcgc ;x, pz;l gcnxk cjhntg` ac;xgvc fcdhk  
ugwkl hs`, phghg-phnhl `k jhk`kl hs` mc vxkxk shx xagcn ukwk  
l epmcnxkvc [cncdhk evxn, dhgk`b u bhl hk si fwjh dejx ;x,  
ukwk sckcvxkx kcrj evck nhmxgc jhk`kl `a ugswk. Fwkghn`k  
phl `s`kvhk vh zk[c |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnxvxn ;x, c'cn fxn  
;cs ukghn` jhk`l hsh, ukwk fharhghn`kh kxsfcjck khvhkg`y`  
vhph hn`r, xk;hn` vhph ]uo ughn. Vel cgx, vhph dhoo` ughn ;x,  
ukghn`k kcsfcgcnx mc mcbxddcjcgcnx vi b`i k ac;xgvc jhk`ks`k.  
|edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnx dhgk`b [cnp mc jc/vxg xax xsjxskh  
ugwkl hrgh, fijik fw xagcnvc shx nhmxgcgc l i ajcnc;vxn.  
}ik;x ukghn`k phl `s` hvxgvxn, ukghnh edf mc xnhv jwjl hr,  
jckrxv ejl c; rhvhyhkv`n.ß<sup>3</sup>

Xfkx Pc[cn âCg-xshfcb ;xjh`f`k`k 3-[i tcsxkvc scphfcgcnx mc  
ukghn`k cvhgcjxkx fcdhk evcn;ck vedxn... âCpgx-si kkcj  
scphfcgcnxk phl `s`k`k hvxg ugl hs`kh xkhk`nghn mc fw fhncvc  
l ijjctxr tx;xnvcvxgc. Pe] fxn ;cs fw fhncvc ukghngh  
l i ohgxtcj ejl cl xavxn. Dhgk`b fxv/cj]x ughk hb fxn rnw`  
l i ohgxtcj ejl xavxn.ß U, Cfw-Bcn/cvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn...  
âPcn'hp fxn ;csxk |edycl fcn scphfcgcnxkvck pcn phks` fxnxkx

<sup>1</sup> âJcrvxl cji g-l c/nxtc gx ;xjhfxg-[cnpx mcj-jc/vxgß, scp.8-9.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-xsjxd/hf tx csl hxg-csphfß, Phtxb Cfw Zl cn Dwsxt xfkx Cfvi gghp  
xfkx L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi g-fxnn Kcl xnx Rwnjwfx L hgx;x (363-463). Ukwk  
xfhncgcnxkx âCg-xshfcb ;xjh`f`k`k phaxdcxkvck kcrj ejl xax; .

<sup>3</sup> âWsvwg-yhfcb tx l c/nxtcjs-scpfhfcb, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3. L i cggxt... Cfwg-pcsck  
Xbbwv-vxk Cgx xfkx L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi g-;cnxl {cbcnx (Xfkx Csx hv` xgc  
l capwnvwn).

ncvv ejvxdxkx 'znsck, fxx ;x, vxksxbvxnæ ]i k;x |edycl fcn phrv`n, Rwn/hkx:- cnxl phrv`n, |edycl fcnxk 'cjxnvxdx pcn fxn aed phrv`n. Fwkghn` vh fxbc dhgk`b scphfcgcn ]hjv`nl `aghn. Fw rnw\ fxbxl ahpxvgcnxl xbx e/jxfhnvhk shgl hr xsjcdxngcn ;x, si kkckx mc ;xjh` fhjxg ejsxkgcn. Phgfw;x [cnp mc kzsxhk mhnv ejl c; (jckrxv ejl c; , cvhgcvck shgl hr) dhgk`b fw vxksxbgcnxk zbi kc ghdxrvxn.<sup>1</sup>

Fwnh rcvcn redv ugwkhhkghn oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk scphfckxk cvhgcv fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcsx xv. Suknh;` fcpsvc Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk fw fhncvc kcbcnxddcsxkx hnhav`nh[hy`r.

f) Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk scphfcgcnxkxk cvhgcv fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnx

Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfx hnv`[`gghn` Rwn/hkx:- cnxl xk ha; hn fcdhk-ghn`kh jhfe ughnhr xkhk`ngghn ;x, scphfcgcnxk hnhskvh egc l z/l xkgcn mhnv`n ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh Rwn/hkvu ukghn` jc/nxtgcl xa mc âFed/cjx ac[cncß i kmhk` xgc redv ejl xavxn...

﴿لَقَدْ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ إِذْ يُبَايِعُونَكَ تَحْتَ الشَّجَرَةِ فَعَلِمَ مَا فِي قُلُوبِهِمْ فَأَنْزَلَ السَّكِينَةَ عَلَيْهِمْ وَأَثَابَهُمْ فَتْحًا قَرِيبًا﴾

âHgghp l z/l xkgcnvck, scxkxgc hyh[`k hgj`kvu fed/cj ejvx;gcnx bhl hk nhb` ugvw. U, (Hgghp) ukghn`k incdxkvck kcgcn ;e]vxdxkx fxgmvx. Fwkh 'znc vc ukghnh hnhl gr khbxq ejvx, dho`k ughk rcgcfckx ukghnh l i;hthj ughnhr menvx.<sup>2</sup>

Hdv`k ugvwyyw ;xl x, Hgghp-jhhgh fw jc/nxtx dhgk`b pcl xk hyh[`k hgj`kvu;` fed/cj l cnhsxl xkvc xajxn; evck l z/l xkgcnc l cosws ejl xa, unvh phb`n ughk Cfvi ggghp xfkx l fedd mc Ums xfkx Redbx ;xl x l i khtxrgcnc ahl xg ejl cl xavxn.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCg-xshfcjw tx jcl dxbxs-scphfcß, L xsxn ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.17-22. L i cggxt... Phtxb Acphfwvxxk Cpl cv xfkx Cgx (Xfkx Pc[cn hv` xgc l capwnvwn mc 773-853-[i xggcnvc dhahl `av`n). âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß ;xjh`k`k 2-[x [xgvxkxk 536-[` scpxtcsxkvc 1479 kzl ncgx pcvsvc Cfw-Bcn/ckxk fhncsxkvc fegc kcrq evxgxn... Xl hl Phtxb nhmxgcnxk 11-[x jcfrcscxkvck ughk l capwn sxrcvxn ;x, 264-[i xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn. L i sgi l , Jxnl xbx, Kcshx mc Xfkx L h[c ukvhk ncmhdcj kcrq ejl xagcn.

Lck vedncl ... "znsck, Xl hl Cfw-Bcn/c |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnxkvck ughk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkvc kc vedc fxgcn?!

<sup>2</sup> âTcjpß swncsx, hdc.18

<sup>3</sup> Fho... âL cyhbß (Mhrxvx), scp.588, âFed/cjx ac[cncß phvxscsx. âCl jhwg-csl hß (L crnxbx), scp.288, âCl jhwg-csl hßk`k acnp]xsx Ums xfkx Owgxkxk hv`k` ]c; l xavxn ;x, fw vh scpmvxn. Vi b'i ki l cjkvck redv ugwkhhk`n.

Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfx, dekc vc Rwn/hkx-: cnxl c jhfe ughnhr xkhk`nghn ; x, scphfcgcnxk hnhs`kvh fc/bx l i khtxrgcn vc mhn vxv ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn` juogw hdcvc l cbcl l cj evcnc; fwdwn- l wavwn...

﴿وَمِمَّنْ حَوْلَكُم مِّنَ الْأَعْرَابِ مُنَافِقُونَ وَمِنْ أَهْلِ الْمَدِينَةِ مَرَدُوا عَلَى النَّفَاقِ لَا تَعْلَمُهُمْ نَحْنُ نَعْلَمُهُمْ سَنُعَذِّبُهُمْ مَّرَّتَيْنِ ثُمَّ يُرَدُّونَ إِلَىٰ عَذَابٍ عَظِيمٍ﴾

âSxbxk cjhnt`k`bv h ughk jzg cncfgcnxkvck fc/bxgcnx l i khtxrvxngcn. Lcvxkc cpgkxkvck vc fxn rnw\w l i khtxrgdc juo l edg evxngcn. Sck ukghn` jhk`l`nshk, gh;xk Fxb ukghn` jhk`d`n`r. Jebgx;gc, ukghnh x;x vctc cbhf mencnx;, suknh fzdi; cbhfh vuynw rumwghnghn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, scphfcgcnxk hnhs`kvh egcgcnx mhn vxv ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn`k |edycl fcnxk ohk`l`kh jzpl cj mwnl hs`kvhk ocfcn me-nxnvx.<sup>2</sup> Fxb fw xagcnvck Hgghph \ckhp h\hn`n`r! Fc/bx ; csgcnvck vc ocfcn mencnc; fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿وَإِذَا رَأَوْا تِجَارَةً أَوْ لَهْوًا انفَضُّوا إِلَيْهَا وَتَرَكُوكَ قَائِمًا﴾

âUkghn jx[hncjx, gcpmx 'znvi;vc, vhy`g`a`n mc ukwk jcnctxkc 'evxn, sckx (|edycl fcnx) hdnr i sjc jc; rudwnvwghn...B<sup>3</sup>

Fxgvxdxl xb ; xl x, fw phvxsc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk zb l cs[xvxxkv vhdhk`f [i l c khl hb`k`k oi jfcxkx uowvwyw bhl hk fha menl xavx.

Pcl jxkxk, scphfcgcnxk hnhs`kvh egc ; csgcn mhn vxv ; x, Jcfw; l i phnxfcsxkvck, dhowv âPc[[c]i g-mxvhßvkh rhd`vhn;ck âCrcfedx-pcnaß dugwkvh, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl c rhna` swx-rcsv phb`ngl `av`ghn.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âJzmfcß swncsx, hdc.101

<sup>2</sup> âKwnß swncsxkxk 11-17-[x hdcgcnxkvck redv ugwkxk âxt;ß phvxscsxkc xahncvxn. Hdxackxk ncmhdcj ejvxdx ; xl x, fw hdc ukh mwnwghk xjzxphl ghn rhna`s`kvh fcnhcj rhbhkv`n`gl hs` xgc cghrcvhn khbxg ugl wavwn. Ukvhk fharhghn`k`k ncmhdcjxkc `znc xsc L hnxdc Rxfjxddcdc fcnhcj rhbhkv`n`gl hs` i jik khbxg ugl wavwn. Fw fhncvc; x ncmhdcjgcnxk phl`s`k`k jctsxnx âHdxackxk Xsgl pcvxsgcnxkvck; x nugwß ; xjh`kvh redv ejl xax; .

<sup>3</sup> â{i l cß swncsx, hdc.11

<sup>4</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.390 mc 453â âScpxpx L i sgi l B sxthjwg- l i khtxrk fhf`æ âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.110, 6-[` [xgv, scp.195â âL cyhbxbß (Mhrxvx), 3-[i [xgv, scp.1042â âCl jhwg-csl hß, scp.477â âVwnnw- l ckswnß jctsxnx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.258-259. âMc pcl l w fxl h gcl dckhgwß, âJzmfcß swncsxkxk 74-[i hdsxkxk jctsxnxkvck.

Fxgvxdxl xb ;xl x, |edycl fcngc dhkha` mc u pcbncjc scphfc  
 ugl hr acnhtcjx ukwk pcdhj dugvha` ugl hr acnhtcjxkvck pe] vc  
 i sji k vedxgvxn. } i k; x |edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk pcdhj dugvhaghñ  
 u pcbncjgc l i shpxf mc ukwkgh dhkha` ugl hy`k ck di ;sc;  
 pcvvxkvcvxn. Gh; xk edkx phgvh, l i jchg Hgghp ukghnh oxjhñ  
 evcnc; fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿يَا نِسَاءَ النَّبِيِّ مَنِ يَأْتِ مِنْكُنَّ بِفَاحِشَةٍ مُّبَيِّنَةٍ يُضَاعَفْ لَهَا الْعَذَابُ ضِعْفَيْنِ وَكَانَ ذَلِكَ عَلَى  
 اللَّهِ يَسِيرًا وَمَنْ يَقْنُتْ مِنْكُنَّ لِلَّهِ وَرَسُولِهِ وَتَعْمَلْ صَالِحًا نُؤْتِهَا أَجْرَهَا مَرَّتَيْنِ وَأَعْتَدْنَا لَهَا رِزْقًا كَرِيمًا  
 يَا نِسَاءَ النَّبِيِّ لَسْتُنَّ كَأَحَدٍ مِنَ النِّسَاءِ...﴾

âEd |edycl fcncx ohk`l ghn! Sxbgcnvck pcn fixx ha;hn fixn 'ikhph l injc;xf  
 ugsh, cbhf x;x rhj hnjh[hrv`n. Fw, Hgghp i]ik ]uo hshkv`n. Sxbgcnvck pcn fixnxkb  
 Hgghp mc Ukwk |edycl fcncxkc jc/bxl 'zsjcnxf shgcp cl cg 'znsckxb,  
 l i ;hthj`k`b` fixn ke]c rhj hnjr mencnx; , sxbxk i]ik vcdcnx fixn nwbx phb`nghdhn`r.  
 Ed |edycl fcncx ohk`l ghn! Sxb fharh rhv`kghn ;xl x vedxgsxkb...B<sup>1</sup>  
 U ohk`l ghn`k x; xsx fhncsxkvc xsc fegc vedxgvxn...

﴿إِنْ تَوْبَا إِلَى اللَّهِ فَقَدْ صَغَتْ قُلُوبُكُمَا وَإِنْ تَظَاهَرَا عَلَيْهِ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ هُوَ مَوْلَاهُ وَجِبْرِيلُ وَصَالِحُ  
 الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَالْمَلَائِكَةِ بَعْدَ ذَلِكَ ظَهِيرٌ...ضَرَبَ اللَّهُ مَثَلًا لِلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا امْرَأةَ نُوحٍ وَامْرَأةَ لُوطٍ كَانَتَا  
 تَحْتَ عَبْدَيْنِ مِنْ عِبَادِنَا صَالِحَيْنِ فَخَانَتَاهُمَا فَلَمْ يُغَيِّرْ عَنْهُمَا مِنَ اللَّهِ شَيْئًا وَقِيلَ ادْخُلَا النَّارَ مَعَ  
 الدَّاخِلِينَ...وَضَرَبَ اللَّهُ مَثَلًا لِلَّذِينَ آمَنُوا امْرَأةَ فِرْعَوْنَ إِذْ قَالَتْ رَبِّ ابْنِ لِي عِدَدَكَ يَبْتَا فِي  
 الْجَنَّةِ...﴾

âC`cn sxb x;x rhv`k jzmfc ejscxkb, (sxbxk oednxkxbcvxn)æ ]i k;x sxbxk rcgfgcnxkb  
 phrvhk vzkl iavin. C`cn ukwk (|edycl fcncx) cgedpxkc cghn ugshk`b, fixxk ;x,  
 Hgghp, {cfnhxg, l z/l xkgcnxk shgcp ukh ;z l c; evc[c; , l cgc;gcn vc fwkvhk suknh  
 ukh hnoh ugh[hrghn... Hgghp ;htxngcn i]ik Kwp mc Gwjwk bzm[cgcnxkx l xshg  
 mwnwn, ukghn Fxbxl shgcp fckvcgcnxl xbvck x;xsxkxk pxl hdcxh hj`kvh xvvgcn, hl l h  
 ukghnh ocdhkcj ejl xavvgcn. U x;x l i shpxf pe] fixn mc[pgc ukghn` Hgghpvhk  
 epjxdh[s`b ejl cvvgcn mc ukghnh vedxgvx...â{cpckkcl cpqx xgc fixgx;vc [cpckkcl c  
 vhoxg ugwk!B Hgghp l z/l xk rhv`kghn i]ik Txn/ukwk bzm[csxkx l xshg mwnwn, u  
 bhl hk ;x, vevx...â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Lckxl i]ik Zb dhk`kvh fixn fixh jx;...B

Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk pcvxsgcnxkvc redv ugwkwn ;x, fw phvxsc  
 |edycl fcnc-C; ncl j -xk âPc[[c]i g-mxvhßvhk rhd`jv`y` bhl hk {zptc  
 vxdhn`kvh Rcvxn-Owl phvxscsx xgc cghrcvhn fha menl xavxn. âFxpnhwg-  
 ckmhñß, 28-[x [xgv, scp.97, dekx ]h\, Jephñk, 1392-[x xg.

<sup>1</sup> âCpbhfß swncsx, hdc.30-32

Pcl jxkxk xl nhk'k r'b' Lcndcl x vc l xshg mwnwn...B<sup>1</sup>

| edycl fcnx-C; ncl i rxdhl cj 'i ki kvc fc/bx  
scphfcgcnxk mcbxddcjxkx fcdhk evnc; fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَنَّهُ يُجَاءُ بِرِجَالٍ مِنْ أُمَّتِي فَيُؤْخَذُ بِهِمْ ذَاتَ الشِّمَالِ فَأَقُولُ يَا رَبِّ أَصِحَّابِي فَيَقَالُ : إِنَّكَ لَا تَدْرِي مَا أَحَدَثُوا بِعَدِّكَ فَأَقُولُ كَمَا قَالَ الْعَبْدُ الصَّالِحُ وَكُنْتُ عَلَيْهِمْ شَهِيدًا مَا دُمْتُ فِيهِمْ فَلَمَّا تَوَفَّيْتَنِي كُنْتُ أَنْتَ الرَّقِيبَ عَلَيْهِمْ فَيَقَالُ : إِنْ هَؤُلَاءِ لَمْ يَزَالُوا مُرْتَدِّينَ عَلَى أَعْقَابِهِمْ مُنْذُ فَارَقْتُهُمْ﴾

âRxdhl cj 'i ki il l cjxl vck fc/bxgcnxkx scpkcdc 'cjxncn mc [cpckkcl c jcnct rumhngnh. Lck vedcnc! ... â|cnmcnvx' hnh! (Ho') fwwghn l ckxl scphfcgcnxl vxn?!B  
Vedxgc... âSck fxgl xnsck ;x, sck (vi kdhvhk) 'ejvx; vck suknh kc ;xl x fix/cjgc  
rudvwghn!B Lck vc ukghnh vedcnc! ;x, Hghp'k shgcp fckvcsx (Xsh xfkx  
Lcndcl ) vevx ;x, l ck sxbxk hnhk'bv h ugvwywl mhojh rcvcn ukghn'k phgkvhk  
h'hp xvxl , gh;xk l ckx ukghn'k hnhs'kvhk 'zjinvi dik bhl hk Sck ukghnh  
kcbhncj]x xvxl.B<sup>2</sup> Lckc fegc vedxgc... âFw vcsjc sckvck hdn'gvrvhk suknh dekc  
zb cmmcg; x mcbxddcjgcnxkc ([hpxgddcj crxvcgcnxkc mc hvcjgcnxkc) rhd'jv'ghn.B<sup>3</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

لَسِرْدَنَّ عَلَيَّ نَاسٌ مِنْ أَصْحَابِي الْحَوْضِ حَتَّى عَرَفْتُهُمْ اخْتَلَجُوا دُونِي فَأَقُولُ : أَصْحَابِي  
فَيَقُولُ : لَا تَدْرِي مَا أَحَدَثُوا بِعَدِّكَ

âScphfcgcnxl vck fc/bxgcnxkx â: zmscnB pumwbwkvh l ckxl dhk' l h 'cjxncngcn  
;x, ukghn' jhk'd'nhl , suknh ukghn' l ckvck hdn'nhngnh! Lck vedcnc! ... âLckxl  
scphfcgcnxl !B Mc (Hghp) vedcn... âSck fxgl xnsck ;x, sck (vi kdhvhk) 'ejvx; vck  
suknh kc ;xl x fix/cjgc rudvwghn!B<sup>4</sup>

âScpxpx L i sgi l Bvc fegc redv ugwkwn...

لَسِرْدَنَّ عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضِ رِجَالٌ مِمَّنْ صَاحِبِي حَتَّى إِذَا رَأَيْتُهُمْ وَرَفَعُوا إِلَيَّ اخْتَلَجُوا دُونِي  
فَلَأَقُولَنَّ : أَيُّ رَبِّ أَصْحَابِي فَلَيَقَالَنَّ لِي : إِنَّكَ لَا تَدْرِي مَا أَحَدَثُوا بِعَدِّكَ

âScphfcgcnxl vck fc/bxgcnxkx â: zmscnB pumwbwkvh l ckxl dhk' l h 'cjxncngcn.

<sup>1</sup> âJcpnxi B swncsx, hdc.4, 10, 12

<sup>2</sup> âL hxvcB swncsx, hdc.117

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, jctsnx ; xjh'f, âmc ; wkjc cgedpxl acpxvck l h vwl jw  
txpxl B hdxsxxk jctsnx, âCkfxdhß ; xjh'f, âmcjjcocbcgghpw Xfnhpxl c ocgxgckß  
fhf' âScpxpx Jxnl xbxß, sxthjwg-rxdhl cj fhf' mc âJhphß swncsxkxk jctsnx.

<sup>4</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, ânxrhrß ; xjh'f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.95. âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß,  
l ckhsx; ; xjh'f, pcvxs, 5830. âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.453, 3-[i [xgv,  
scp.28, 5-[x [xgv, scp.48.

"cgrf ]hvj`rghn` mhojh rcvcn l ck ukghn kcbhncj evxncl . Suknh ukghn` l ckvck hd`nhghn! L ck vedcncl ... â |cnmcnvx`hnh! Lckxl scphfcgcnxl !B Lckc vedxcn... âSck fixl xnsck ;x, sckxk 'ejl cdxkvck suknh kc ;xl x fix/cjgc rudvwghn!B<sup>1</sup>

y) L z/l xkgc l i khtxrk jhk`kl hs`k`k l e/dhn`

|edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnx hnhs`kvh l i cddck acosgc l i khtx ugvwywkx mc Hgghpvkh fharh fix ;cs ukghn` jhk`l hv`y`kh 'znc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i egc fix l e/dhn rcnhd menl xavxn ;x, ukwkgh fw x;x vcsjckx fix-fixxkvck se]xf hd`nv ejl c; ughn. U pcbncj fwdwnwn... âCgkx dhgk`b l z/l xkgc semcn, ukwkgh dhgk`b l i khtxrgcn vial ck]xgx; evcn!B Fw pcvxsx xl hl Cgx,<sup>2</sup> l l l i g-l z/l xkxk l l l i Scgcl c,<sup>3</sup> Cfvi ggghp xfkx Hffhs,<sup>1</sup> Cfwbcn

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l B, âtcbhxgß ;xjh`f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.1800, pcvxs, 40.

<sup>2</sup> xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> |edycl fcnxk cl xsx Cfw Jhgxfix ugvwvn. Ph;xl xk âL i sjcvcn;B ;xjh`f`k`k 3-[i [xgvxkxk 483-[i scpxtcsxkv, L hgx; xk âTi swgi g-l i pxi l cß ;xjh`f`kvh, Xfkx L cyhbxxk âL ckhrxfß ;xjh`f`kvh, Acfgck[xkxk âKwnwg-cfshnß ;xjh`f`k`k 69-[w scpxtcsxkv redv ejvxdx ;xl x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Hl i g-txgxk 30-[w xgxkxk Nc[cf hd`k`k 13-vc : c/fckxk vhoxxkv vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc px[ncjxk 35-[x xgxkv l i ph[xn mc ckshn d`y`a`f ukwkgh fe/cj ejl xagcn. R`no`k[` px[nx xgx, Nhl hbhk hd`k`k uk vurrwbwk[w 'e[csxkv Xfkx L i g[cl L wnhvx jcnctxkv bcnfcjgckl xa mc Nhl hbhk hd`k`k xdxnl x fixxkv acphvcj ]hjl `av`n. âSxphß l i cgxtgcx ukvhk 536 pcvxs kerg ejl xagcn. U Pcbncjxk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjd/hfß, âWsvi g-yhfß, âCg-xshfß, â{cmhl xws-sxncjß ;xjh`fghn`kvh l zm[wvvn. U Pcbncjxk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkv kerg ejvxdx ncmhdcjgc âScpxpx L i sgi l B, 1-[x [xgv, scp.61âScpxpx Jxl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.177â âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, 11-[x fh`f`k l i rcvxl csxkvâ âSi kckx Kcshß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.271â âCg-Ocshxß (Kcshx), scp.28â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.84, 95, 128â âJhnxx Fhyvhß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.255, 8-[x [xgv, scp.417, 16-[` [xgv, scp.426-vc l zm[wvvn. Cfw Kcxl âPxgdcji g-zmgdhß ;xjh`f`k`k 4-[i [xgv, scp.185-vc vedxn ;x, fw pcvxs scpx mc l z/jcfcn pcvsgcnvckvxna pcl ]xkxk, âJhnxxg-xsgl B (Bcpcf), 2-[x [xgv, scp.198â âJhnxx xfkx Csxß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.354-c vc fhoh fxgcnsxkb. Egc[c vc u Pcbncjxk jcn[i l edx-phg` hahy`vh;` ;xjh`fghnv redv ugwk l wavvn... âXsjd/hfß, 2-[i [xgv, scp.461â âWsvwg-yhfß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.292â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 15-[x [xgv, scp.105â âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.282.

<sup>3</sup> l l l i g-l z/l xkxk l l l i Scgcl c |edycl fcnx C;ncl gc hxgc rwnl hbvhk rhfhr Cfw Scgcl ckxk hnmhv` vx. Cnx xgc fxngx;vc Xsgl `rcfwg ejl xa, Pcfcacdc px[ncj ejl xa, suknh Lcvxkdc rhd`jl `av`. Cfw Scgcl c l pi v vzdi ai kv dnhghkl `a mc px[ncjxk 3-[i xgxkv acphvcj ]hjl `av`n. Fwkvhk suknh |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i ukwkgh hxgc rwnl wavvn. l l l i Scgcl c xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k acphvcjxkvck suknh hgjl `a`k[` px[nx xgxkv mcthj ejl xavxn. âSxphß l i cgxtgcx ukvhk 378 pcvxs ncmhdcj



Rctthnx,<sup>2</sup> Ckcs xfkx L hgx; <sup>3</sup> mc XI nhk xfkx Pcsxk<sup>4</sup> ncmhdcj ejl xagcn mc fw, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk vzmni kvc l capwn fxn phvxsc xvx.

Cfwbcn vedxn...âFxb cmmcggn l i khtxrgcnx jhk`l `nv`r, dhgk`b u bhl hk jhk`v`r ; x, Hgghp` mc |edycl fcnx jc; bxf ejvxgcn, mh[xf khl hbghnvhk xl jxkh ejvxgcn, Cgx xfkx Cfx Jhgxfgc

---

ejl xagcn. Ukwk pcdhj` âWsvwg-yhfcß mc âJcrnxfwj-jcbpxfß ; xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx pcvxs gcn âScpxpx JxnI xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.161â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.292â âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.460, l i ojcgxt duggnhghâ âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.354â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.158, 1-[x ]h`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>1</sup> Cfvi gghp xfkx Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf, |edycl fcnxk cl x ugwsw xvx. U, px[ncjvck i ] xg cmmcg vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc 68-[x px[nx xgkvc Jhxtvc mthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 1660 pcvxs kcrj ejl xagcn. Ukwk pcdhj` âWsvwg-yhfcß, âCg-Xshfcß mc â{cmhl xws-sxncß ; xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Cfwbcn {i kvcf xfkx {i khvc Xsgl` gh\ cmmcgcnvc rcfwg ejl xa, phl`vhk suknh vh px[ncj ejl xavxn. Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvck suknh |edycl -fcngc fxngx; vc shxn rcbmcgcnvc xajxn; ejl xavxn. Px[ncjxk 32-[x xgkvc Ncfcbcdc si n'i k ugwkl wa mc egc unhvh vh mthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 281 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Ukwk pcdhj` âJcrnxfß, â{cmhl xws-sxncß mc âCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhßk`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> Ckcs xfkx L hgx; Ckshnx. Ncmhdcj ugwkl wavwn ; x, uk xg |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk oxvl cj]xsx ugl wavwn. U, zb cggnxkx (vxnsdc rvcn) ounh ocsjcgdxkc uoahn hyg`r ugvywkh 'znc oi swsx ; nel si njcnc; znji nvi. Fw vh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k ukw rhny`a ejvxdxkc 'znc ugl wavwn. } i k; x u, Rcvxn-Owl phvxscsxk xk; hn ejl xavx, XI hl vh vwh evxf Hgghpvhk xsjcl xavx ; x, ukh ohs fxn hyg`r mwswk ; x, cl l hl c xgc znji gc fxgl csxk. Fw phvxsc âE/ghrwk-kctxsß ; xjhfk`k 132-[x scpxtcsxkvc oi ghsc ac; xgvc, 'ekxa jctsxghj` xsc Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvk âKcp[i g-fcgchycßdc dhbv`y' acnpxk 4-[i [xgvxkxk 388-[x scpxtcsxkvc l zm[wvwn. U px[ncjxk 90-[` xgkvc Fcsncvc mthj ejl xavxn. âScpxpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 2286 ncmhdcj kcrj ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc, âJcrnxfwj-jcbpxfßvc, â{cmhl xws-sxncßvc redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjgcn â: ckbi g-i l l hgß`k 7-[x [xgvxkxk 140-[` scpxtcsxkvc (1-[x ]h\ ) l zm[wvwn.

<sup>4</sup> Cfw Kc[xv XI nhk xfkx Pcsxk Owbhx. U, Oedfcn rhghs` tcjp ugwkhn; ck Xsgl` rcfwg ejl xa mc |edycl fcngc dhkha` ugl wavw. : wtc acpcnxkvc rcbh-mcj ; i nsi si kvc ugl wa mc 52-[x px[nx xgkvc Fcsncvc mthj ejl xavxn. Sxphpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 180 pcvxs kcrj ejl xagcn. Ukwk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkvc vevxdx ncmhdcjgcn â: ckbi g-i l l hgß`k 7-[x [xgvxkxk 140-[` scpxtcsxkvc menxgl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcrnxfwj-jcbpxfß mc â{cmhl xws-sxncß ; xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

vi al ck ugvwghn.<sup>1</sup>

Cfw Scxv Oxvnx vedxn... âFxb ckshn rnw\w |edycl fcnxk vzmni kvc ughk l i khtxrgcnx, Cgx xfkx Cfx Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> -h rhna` l hgx; ugvwrghn` ; xk-; i vwncj mc vi al ck]xgx; gc jhk`d`nv`r.<sup>2</sup>

Cfvi gghp xfkx Hffhs vedxn... âFxb |edycl fcnxk vzmni kvc l i khtxrgcnx, Cgx xfkx Cfx Jhgxfgc vi al ck]xgx; gcnx xgc jhk`d`nv`r.<sup>3</sup>

{hfxn xfkx Cfvi gghp Ckshnx vedxn... âFxb l i khtxrgcnx Cgx xfkx Cfx Jhgxfc rhna` vi al ck]xgx; ejvx; gcnxkvck fharh fxn duggh jhk`l `nv`r.<sup>4</sup>

Fijik fw ncmhdcjgcnxk jcgcfxkc, egc[c vc Ncswgx-C; ncl i -xk Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -`k fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw... â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Cgkx semckgcnx sem, ukwkgh vi al ck ughkghgh vi al ck ugß – pcvxsxkc `znc<sup>5</sup> Cpgx-

<sup>1</sup> âL i sjcvnc; i s-Scpxpedkß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.129æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 15-[x [xgv, scp.91.

<sup>2</sup> Cfw Scxv L hgx; xfkx Sckhk Ocbnc[x Oxvnx. Ockvc; l i phnxfcsxkvc mc ukvhk suknh; ` l i phnxfcgcnvc xajxnh; ejl xa, dh 63, dh 64, dh 65, dhowv vh 74-[i p.r xgxkvc L cvxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cgxtgcnx ukvhk 1170 pcvxs kcrj ejl xagn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß, âJcrnxfwj-jcbpfbß, â{cmhl xws-sxncß ; xjhfgghn`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk l i khtxrgcn fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx pcvxsgcn âScpxp Jxnl xbxßkxk 13-[i [xgvxkxk 167-[x scpxtcsxkvc mc Cfw Kcxl xk âPxgdcji g-zmgxdhß ; xjhfc`k`k 6-[- [xgvxkxk 284-[i scpxtcsxkvc vcn[ ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.153

<sup>4</sup> {hfxn xfkx Cfvi gghp Ckshnx. Ukwk pcl zbi scphfcvxn, pcl vc hjhs`. Crcfc cpv-ædl hk`kvh hjhs` xgc fxngx; vc xajxnh; ejl xa, |edycl fcngc fxngx; vc uk devvx l i phnxfvc ugl wavwn. âSxttedkß l i phnxfcsxkvc vc xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -`k jcnctxkvc vx. U, dejl xaxk[x px[nx xgxkvck suknh L cvxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cgxtgcnx ukvhk 1540 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß, âJcrnxfwj-jcbpfbß mc â{cmhl xws-sxncß ; xjhfgghn`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn. l i khtxrgcnxk fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx pcvxsgcn xsc âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.462-vc, âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.284æ âJhnxox Bcpcfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.198æ âL c[ l ci b-bcmhvxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.133-vc l zm[wvvwn.

<sup>5</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.165, l ckhrxfw Cgx fhf`æ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, tcbgw Cgx fhf`, pcvxs... 116æ âOcshxswk-Kcshxß, 4 mc 30-[w scpxtgcgnæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.84, 88, 118, 119, 152, 330, 4-[i [xgv, scp.281, 368, 370, 372, 5-[x [xgv, scp.307, 347, 350, 358, 361, 366, 419, 568æ âL i sjcvnc; ws-Scpxpedkß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.129, 3-[i [xgv, scp.9æ âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.222-225æ âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.377, 8-[x [xgv, scp.290, 12-[x [xgv, 343 mc s. ]uogw vx`cn l z/jcfc n l ckfcgcn.

fedj l c;jcfx zbgcnxkxk vxkx cshs mc kxahkcgcnxkx Cgx xgc  
vi al ck ughk mc ukw seml cdck scphfcgcnvck cob ejl c;vc  
epjxdhj evxnvxgc. }i k;x u scphfckxk Hgg hpvhk fharh fxn  
;csxk jhk`l hv`y`l i khtxrgcnvck ugl hs` epjxl hg menxgxnvx.

I } I K { I TCSXG

X: X LC: JCFVC SCPHFC FCPSXKXK OI GHSCSX

h) Oigcth I c;jcfxkvc scphfc mc ukwk cvhgjx

Oigcth I c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` vedxngcn...âScphfc u ; csvxn ; x,  
|edycl fcnx 'zni f ukh xl hk 'cjxnl xa ugswk mc vi kdhvhk  
I i scgl hk phg`kvh 'ejsxk, pcjjh 'i ki k fxn pxsscsx ugsh vh  
fegc. Ukghn pcl vc vedxngcn ; x, 10-[w px[nx xgxkc rcvcn L c ; ; c  
mc Jhxtvc Xsghl ` rcfwg ejl cdck, âPc[[c]i g-mxvhßvh  
|edycl fcngc phb`n ugl hdhk fxn hvhl rhgl hl `av`, pcl ]xkxk  
Ums mc Ocbnc[ rcfxgcgcxkvck egc fxnxsx duo xv x ; x,  
|edycl fcnxk zl ni ki k ho`n`kvh Xsghl ` rcfwg ejl cl xa ugswk.  
Ocgxtcgcx dhgk`b scphfcgcx tcjp evxgl xa zg;cgnc ph;xl mc  
scn;cnvc jc/dxk evxnvxgcx. Lcpb fwkh 'znc vc scphfcgcxk  
shd`k` pcvvxkvck hnj`r ]uohgjl `aghn. Fxb âDi b cggx shojh  
scphfcß hvg` ; xjhfvh xsfhj ejl xax; ; x, ukghn`k ]uow shojhv`n  
mc ohnx[x hgcl vc pe] fxn mi [wvghn` duo xl xa.

Fw I c;jcfxk hnv`[`gghn` xsjxskhs`b ughnhr fi ji k scphfcgcx  
cvhgjgx peshf evxn mc ukghnh xnhv jwjl hy`, ukghn` jckrxv  
ejl cdx ncmh fxgl xngcn. Pcn ; cs ukghnvkh fxnxc xnhv jwjhnsh,  
ukw vxksxb peshf evxngcn. Kcix[cvc zb xsjxghpghn`kvh scphfc  
hvgkhkh fw acosgcxk ncmhdcj ejvxdx pcn fxn aedc cl cg ejl cdx  
zbgcnxkc ghb`l fxgx, zb vxkgcnxkxk fi ji k cghl cjgcxkx, i swg  
mc crxvcgcxkx ukghnvkh cob evxngcn.

f) Cpgx-fedj I c;jcfxkvc scphfc

Cpgx-fedj I c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` xsc fegc vedxngcn...âScphfc  
; cgl csx acn/x xsjxghp vedxgvxn, c; sxkc ukwk mcbxddcjx edkxgc  
cncf gi ycjxkvc ughk shxn ; cgl cgcn ; xl xvxn. Shpxf cncf gi ycjxk-  
vc fxnx xgc vhl dhkha` ughk xkshkh vedxgx. Fw szb dhgk`b u  
; csgcnc vedxgc fxgcx ; x, ukwk fxn ; csgc dhkha` mc pcl szpfcj  
ugl hs` wbwk I i vvcjgx ugswk. Szpfcj mc I i shpxfcj x; xjcnetgx

kxsfcjc l hgx; ughk ;cgl cvxn. Fwkh 'znc vc shpxf mc ukwk  
 [cl tunl hs` ughk csphf mc scphfc ;cgl cgcx pcl xac ;cgl vh  
 xbhtc ac;gxkvc xagckxn. Rwn/hkvh;` âDh shpxfcdxs-sx[kxß mc âcs-  
 phfw L wshß mc s. ;xl x ;cgl cgcx, pcl ]xkxk |edycl fcnxk vzm-  
 ni kvc xagckck âshpxfw Ncswgxgghpß, âcsphfw Ncswgxgghpß ;xl x  
 xthvcgcx x;xjcnctgx xbhtc ac;gxkvc xagcvxgx, |edycl fcn j  
 l cs[xvxxk sc;xsxkvc dhahdhkghn âCspfhx si ttcß vedxgxnvx.  
 |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk mthj`kvhk sukn scphfc szbi xbhtcsxb  
 ac;gxvc xagcl cdc fhaghv` mc fw bhl hk |edycl fcnxk  
 scphfcgcx kbcnvc jwjwgvnw.

Fwkh cshsck, scphfx mc scphfc l i jcacnxc xsjxghpghn`kvhk mc  
 l i scgl hkghn`k rudvwyw hvghnvhk ugwf pe] vc acn/x mc xsghl x  
 fxn xsjxghp vedxgvxn. Hl l h scphfcgcxk cvhgjxkc 'cgxk[c, Cpgx-  
 fedj l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` Rwn/hkx-: cnxl c jhfe ughnhr vedxngcn...  
 âScphfcgcxk hnhs`kvh egc l i khtxr acosgcx mhn vxv ;x, zb  
 kxthrgn`kvh xsnn evxn, |edycl fcnxk ohk`l`kh jzpl cj mwnwn mc  
 ]hg`a`nv`ghn ;x, |edycl fcnc swx-rcsv phb`nghd`f ukw rcjgc  
 dejxnsxkcn. |edycl fcn j vc ukghn`k rxdhl cjvc;x  
 mcbxddcjgcxkvck ocfcn mencnc; fwdwnwnvw ;x, ukghn` jwjwf  
 l ckxl 'zbi l zki kvc [cpckkcl c hjv`rgn` bhl hk âl ckxl  
 scphfcgcxkl , l ckxl scphfcgcxkl !ß – vedc[cdcl . Hl l h l ckc  
 vedxc[c;vxv ;x, âsck fxgl xnsck ;x, fwkghn sckxk (vi kdhvhk)  
 'ejl cdxkvck sukn phks` fxv/cjgcx rudvwghn! Ukghn sckvck  
 hdn`gv`y` 'i kvck zb cmmcg;x mcbxddcjgcxkc ([hpxgxddcj vzmni kc)  
 rhd`jv`ghn.ß

Ukghn`k fc/bxgcx vc egc l z/l xkgcnvxv ;x, Hgghp mc Ukwk  
 Ncswgw ukghn` jc/nxtgcl xavxn, Rwn/hk mc pcvxsgcnvc fcdhk  
 evxgck fi ji k jc/nxtgcx vc egc ukghn hxxvxn. |edycl fcnx-C;ncl  
 j l z/l xkgc l i khtxrxc se]xgl csx l e/dhn` ;xl x xl hl  
 Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h l cpcffcj mc dh ;xkx fwdwnl wavwn. Fwkh 'znc vc  
 Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` nhmxkxk mcbxddcjxkx pcl xac  
 vxrrcj l cn;cbxkvc shoghd`ngn. Fegc ;x, xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> , dhowv  
 Cpgx-fedjvck ughk shx xl hl ghng vi al ck]xgx; evxfgcnsc,  
 ukwk ncmhdcjxkx rcfwg ejl xngcn, ukh cl cg ejl cdx zbgnxkc  
 mh[xf fxgl xngcn, xsjcn scphfc ugsck, xsjcnc vc rednx-scphfc!

Fwnh rcvcn redv ugwkghkghn x;x l c;jcfxk scphfcckxk jc/nxtx  
 mc ukghn`k cvhgjx fhncsxkvc;x kbcnngcn vxv. Suknh;` fcpsvc  
 fw x;x l c;jcfxk xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fhncsxkvc;x kbcnxd-  
 dcgcnxkx hnhav`nh[hy`r.



X: XK{X FCPS

X: X LC: JCFXK XLHL CJ MC OXGHTCJ FHNC SXKVC: X  
KCBCNXDDCGCNX

Xsghl `k cmmcggnxkvc oxghtcjxk jca;xg ugwkI hs`k`k jhnnox nehgg`y`  
Oigcthl I c;jcfxkxk xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnx  
Cpox-fedj I c;jcfxkxk xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnx  
X;x I c;jcfvc xl hl cj fcpsxkxk oighscsx

FXNXK{X TCSXG

Xsghl `k cmmcggnxkvc oxghtcjxk jca;xg ugwkI hs`k`k jhnnox ;en]c;gxdx  
|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk mcsxddcj dhbl hs` I cscgcsx  
|edycl fcnxk mcthj ejvxdx bhl hk ZI cnxk jwjvwyw I zmre  
åScrxtcß phvxscsx mc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj  
|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk vctkx mc fw I cnhsxl vc xajxnh; evckgcn  
Thjxl edx-Bcphnk`k emxkvc fxn denc d`y`gl h  
Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl cdckgcn  
Cfw Fc;nix zgi I i mc ZI cnxk [hknxkqgdx  
Awnh phvxscsx mc UsI hkgh fed/cj  
XI hl Cg<sup>TM</sup> oxghtcjxk ukvhk wbhr viac[cdxkx fixgnvx  
XI hl gh fed/cj





XSGHL -K CMMCGGCNXXKVC OXGHTCJXX JCA: XG UGWKL HS-K-K  
JHNXOX "EN}C: GDX

Dhoa` ughnv` ; x, x; x l c; jcfxk oxghtcj mc xl hl cj fhncsxkvc; x  
kcbcnxdcsxkx hnhav`nl hlvhk zk[c Xsghl`k cmmcgcnxkvc  
oxghtcj jca; xg ugwkl hs`k`k jhnnox 'en]c; gdxkx hnhav`nhr. Fwkh  
'znc vc vedxnx; ...

Xsghl x pz; wl cj l cscgcsx xgc cghrcvhn ughk xojxght  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk mthj`k`k xg; 'i kgcnxkvck  
fhaghkl`av`n. U pcbncj zbi ki k mthj`kvhk fxn hb cmmcg  
l shl c xfkx Bedvx (u, |edycl fcnxk hbhv ejvxdx rwg vxv)  
nul hg`ghngh l i phnxfc h`hnl hr i]i k unvwdh scn; cnvc jc/dxk  
ejvx mc fwdwnvw ; x, fi j i k l i ph[xn mc ckshn fzdi ; gcnx, u  
[i l gcvck Cfw Fc; n, Zl cn, Cfw l fedvc, Sc/v xfkx Cfx  
Mcrrhs, Sc/v xfkx Debvx mc s. fw unvwvh xajxnh; ejsxkgcn. Fw  
unvw Lcvxkcvck i] l xg l cshtcvc dengcack {i nt  
l ckjcrsxxkvc vi acn'c shgv`. Fc/bxgcnx âFw rcvcn \nhghr  
; e]l xac l hgx; ughk l i ph[xngcnc kc i]i k [hmhk fxn uyghk  
scn; cvc ugl hg`v`n?!ß - vedc e/jxnhb ejvxgc. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
i rcbcfgckvx mc l cs[xvc 'ejvx, l xkfcnc ]`o`f fwdwnvw...  
âFw kc szbvin ; x, sxbxk fc/bxgcnxkxb l shl ckxk scn; cnvcgdx phrr`kvh vel xavxn?!  
Sxb fwkvhk cmmcg ukwk hjhs`k`k scn; cnvcgdx fhncsxkvc vc fegc szbgcn  
vel xavxkxb. Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, u, scn; cnvcgdx ghdxr vxv! Ukvhk suknh vh uygv  
pcl xk gcdhrcjc l hgx; vxv.ß Fwkw vedxf l xkfcnvck ekvx. l shl ckxk  
unvsw xgc 'evckgc u pcbncjxk dhk`kh 'cgenc; mxvhghav`ghn mc  
vi acn'cdc dugghkv`ghn.

Fwkvhk suknh |edycl fcnxk ocsjcgdx axvvcjgckvx mc u  
pcbncj l i kjcbcl swncjvc âl shl ckxk unvswkw dugh shg`k!ß - vedc  
fwdwnwnvw. Kcphdcj, fhbhn 'i ki 'cgxf ]hjv`. |edycl fcnxk  
ocsjcgdx vphv vh axvvcjgckl cdc fhaghv`. Fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki  
l shl ckxk unvswkh pcnc; cj tcnl hk` menvx. |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl i -xk [hk i sji kvc ugl hs` ocfcnx ukghnh ]hjv`rvh

I shl c, ZI cn mc Cfw I fedvc L cvxkcdc rhd`jv`ghn.<sup>1</sup>

|EDYCLFCN i -XK SUK MCSXDDCJX

Xfkx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... |edycl fcnx-C; -  
ncl i ZI ni ki k suk hkghn`kvh [hl hhjvhk fxn rnw\w-  
kwk vh xajxnh; ejvxdx fxn d`y`k[hrvh fwdwnvw...

هَلَمْ أَكْتُبْ لَكُمْ كِتَابًا لَنْ تَصِلُوا بَعْدَهُ

â"cgk sxbxk i]ik fxn aed dhb`l ;x, l ckvck suknh pe] mhoj bcghgcjc viai f  
dugwkwbw hbl hdhs`k`b.ß ZI cn vevx... â|edycl fcnxk ocsjcgxdx  
axvvcjgckxf! Phgfw; x, Hgghp`k : xjh`f` sxbxk dhk`k`bv`hv`n mc  
Hgghp`k : xjh`f` fxbc ;xthdcjvxn!ß Fwkvhk suknh emvc ughkghn`k  
hnhs`kvh xojxght vi avi . Fc/bxgcx ZI cnxk szbi ki j;c; nhnghv`ghn.  
Scs-; i d juohgv`y` bhl hk |edycl fcn i fwdwnvw...âLckxl  
dhk`l`vhk rhgo`k (mc jzgc j`o`k)! Lckxl dhk`l`vh l i fhp`xsc h`hnl hr ncmh  
vedxgvxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxgvxn... Xfkx Hffhs u rcvcn  
hyghv` ;x, 'zbi ki k dhaghn` denvc; x rwl ghn` xsghjv`. U vevx...  
|edycl fcnxk ocsjcgxdx axvvcjgckck bhl hk fwdwnvw...âLckxl  
i]ik ;hy`b`'cj`nxk, sxbxk i]ik fxn aed dhb`l ;x, l ckvck suknh pe] mhoj  
dugwkwbw hbl hdhs`k`b.ß Ukghn vh zb hnhghn`kvh j;c; xal cdc  
fhaghv`ghn, phgfw; x pe] fxn \edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh j;c; xal c;  
ncmh vedxgvx. Fc/bxgcx vevxgcx...â|edycl fcn shdhrghd`n!...ß<sup>3</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc Xfkx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx kcrj  
ugwkwn...âFi ji k l i sxfcjgcxk ck fzdi di u bhl hk fha menvx  
;x, scs-; i d shgl hrgh, xojxght jzncjl c;gc |edycl fcnxk ukghn  
i]i k fxn dhb` dhbl hs`kh l hke ugvwghn.ß<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCj-Jcferhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, scp.190-192. Fwkvhk cghmc l ckfcgcx  
vc âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`f`kvh 1-[x [xgvxkvc jh`h` fxcn`sxkxb.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, egl ; xjh`f` , ; xjh`f`c`j`i` g-egl` fh`f` , 1-[x [xgv, scp.22-23.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, [xphv ; xjh`f` , 2-[x [xgv, scp.120, [xbdc ; xjh`f` , xonh[wg-dcpwv  
l xk [cbxncjxg-cncf` fh`f` æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, mcsxddcj ; xjh`f` , jcn; i g-mcsxddcj  
fh`f` mc s. l ckfcgcx mc vcg`ggc`cnx âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`f`kvh redv  
ejl xax; .

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvh, cg-e/jxshl w fxg-; xjh`fx mcs-si kkc ; xjh`f` , ; cnhpcj`i` g-oxght  
fh`f` , rumgw-g`l` cnxb` fh`f` , rwl w ck`kx l xk ; xjh`fxg-l` cnbh, l cncbwk-Kcfx  
fh`f` æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, mcsxddcj ; xjh`f` , jcn; i g-mcsxddcj` fh`f` , shxn l ckfcgcx  
vc âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`f`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

|EDYCLFCN i -XK MCTHJ- BHL HK- ZLCNXK JWJVWYWL  
LZMRE

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fhbhn 'i ki 'i kunjh ]hy` mcthj  
ejvx. Fw bhl hk Cfw Fc; n unvh vedxgvx, hl l h Zl cn unvh  
vxx. Zl cn x[hbc xsjcvx mc L i yednc xfkx Az/fc xgc fxngx; vc emc  
vhoxg ugvw. |hgjhn` u pcbncjxk i bi kvck ;cknhh ]c; xf vevx...  
âMhd, ke[c vc fxpwa ugwfvwn! |edycl fcnxk fxpwagwyw kc  
rcvcn ]uovwn!ß L i yednc vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x,  
|edycl fcn mcthj evxfvxn!ß Zl cn vevx... âDhghk vedxnsck!  
|edycl fcn zgl cl xavxn. Gh; xk sck egc fxn hvhl shk ;x, txjkc  
sckx [i n/cjgckvxn! xavxn. |edycl fcn l i khtxrgcnxk ;z; i ki  
; csl cdxk[c mcthj ejl cdc[c; vxn.ß¹ Fwkvhk suknh Zl cn  
l i kjcbcl swncjvc vedxnvx... âL i khtxrgcnvck fxn rnw\w  
|edycl fcnxk mcthj ejvxdxkx jcscmmi n evxngcn, phgfw; x, u, mcthj  
ejl cl xavxn, c; sxkc, Lwsh \edycl fcn zb rzml i kvck  
hdn`ghnhr r`no 'i k 'zni kl cb ugvwyw ;xl x, u vh zb  
|cnmcnvx`hn`k`k dhk`kh 'ejl xavxn. Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x,  
|edycl fcn rhd`vh[hr mc ukwk zgvi di ki jcscmmi n evckgcxk  
cg-hdhrghn`k` ;csc[c; vxn!ß² Pcl ]xkxk, vedxnvx... âPcn ;cs âu  
zgl i avinß vsc, fudkwkw r`g`k[gh mwvnhhl ! U dhgk`b  
hsxl hkh, dwohn`hgcl gcnc 'ejl xavxn.ß³

Fw bhl hk l cs[xvvc fw hdckx jxghmcj ejvxgcn...

﴿وَمَا مُحَمَّدٌ إِلَّا رَسُولٌ قَدْ خَلَتْ مِنْ قَبْلِهِ الرُّسُلُ أَفَإِنْ مَاتَ أَوْ قُتِلَ انْقَلَبْتُمْ عَلَىٰ أَعْقَابِكُمْ﴾

âL i pcl l cv dhgk`b fxn \edycl fcnvxn ;x, ukvhk vh cmmcg \edycl fcnvgn  
'cgxf-' ejl xagcn. C'cn u zgsc, dhowv zgvinigsc, sxb cmmcg; x vzmni ki bc  
([hpxgddcjc) rhd`vh[hrs`k`bl `?...ß⁴

Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf vevx... â|edycl fcn mcthj  
ejl xavxn! Lck Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf zmghvghn` zgck bhl hk ukghn`k  
sxl hs`kvh bhpvn ughk cghl cjgcx ukwk vh sxl hs`kvh

¹ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.219â shxn l ckfcgc n âCfvi ggph xfkx  
Scfhß ;xjh`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

² âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1818

³ âJhnnox Cfvg-txvhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.164.

⁴ âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 3-[i pxssc, scp.57â: ckbi g-i l l hgß,  
4-[i [xgv, scp.53, pcvxs, 1092â âJhnnox Xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.243â âCg-rcvxnß,  
Cgghl c Cl xkx, Bcnrhkxkxk âAcnpx Mhpxfßvck kcrgek, 8-[x [xgv, scp.281â  
âSi kckx Xfkx L h[cß, pcvxs, 627â âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsx, 144-[i hdc.

I i ahpxvc ejvxl .β Suknh vevx... āSxbgcnvck pcn phks` fñxkxbxk dhk`kvh |edycl fcnxk mthj` fhncsxkvc fñn cpv mc 'zsjcnxa mhnł ` ; x, fxbxl i ]i k uowswk?β Vevxgcñ... āOedñ.β U vevx... āEd xkshkghñ! Ahpxv ugwk... Pe] ; cs |edycl fcnxk zb mthj` fhncvc ukh 'zsjcnxa menł xa ugvywkw xvvxh ejł xn...β<sup>1</sup>

Gh; xk Zl cn u rcvcñ vñk`av` ; x, hyb` ; z`i ; gckl cdc fhaghv`.<sup>2</sup> Fw bhl hk Cfw Fc; n 'cgxf hahy`vh;` hdckx jxghmcj ejvx... āMc l h Lwpcł l cvwk xggh ncswgwk, rcv ocgcj l xk rcfgxpñ-nwswgβ Zl cn āFw hdc Hgghp`k : xjh`kvhv`ñl `?β - vedc jcc[[i fgc sunwavwrvh, Cfw Fc; n āFcgxłβ vedc [hmhf menvx. Dhgk`b fw bhl hk Zl cn si ; wj ejvx.<sup>3</sup>

SCRXTC PHVXSCSX, ZLCNXK MHSXJCSX XGC CFW FC: NGC FED/CJ  
EVXGLCSX

L cvxkvc; x ckshñ āFckx-Shxvcβ scrxtcsxkvc fñn denc ju`ghal `av`ghñ. L i ph[xngcnvck vc fñn rnw`w ukghñ ruawgvw, ukghñ |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk [ckhbcxkx fuaghl `av`ghñ, dhgk`b u pcbncjxk rupwl -crncfhs`...Cgx, Hffhs mc ukwk x; x uygw Tcbg mc Rcscł , l shl c xfkx Bedv, Shgcp – |edycl fcnxk hbhv ejvxdx rwg mc Ums xfkx Owgx Ckshñ ukwk rwsq-; ctck xagcnx xgc l caywg vxvgcñ.<sup>4</sup>

Zl cn zbi fw fhncvc vedxñ... |edycl fcn mthj evck bhl hk ocfcñ jwjvwr ; x, ckshñ āFckx-Shxvcβ scrxtcsxkvc fñn denc ju`ghal `aghñ. Cgx, Bi fedñ mc ukwk dugvhaghñ` fxbxl gc

<sup>1</sup> āCj-Jcfcrhjβ (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.58āJhñox xfkx : csññ, 5-[x [xgv, 243ā āCssñcñi g-Pcgcfxddcβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.390-391ā ā: ckbi g-i l l hgβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.53, pcvxs, 1092ā āCj-jcl pxvβ (Fhrghkx), scp.192-193.

<sup>2</sup> āCkshfwg-canhtβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.567ā āCj-Jcfcrhjβ (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.53ā ā: ckbi g-i l l hgβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.53ā āJhñoi g-ocl xsβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.185ā āCssñcñi g-Pcgcfxddcβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.392.

<sup>3</sup> āCj-Jcfcrhjβ (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.54ā āJhñox Jcfcnxβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1817-1818ā āJhñox xfkx : csññ, 5-[x [xgv, scp.243ā āCssñcñi g-Pcgcfxddcβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.392ā āSi kckx xfkx L h[cβ, pcvxs, 1627, Zl cñc uowkhk hdc ukvhk cmmcg xfkx l l l i "i gsil jcnctxkvck jxghmcj ugwkł wavw. {hl hhj` |edycl fcnxk mthj` fhncsxkvc ac; ; -ai fpcdc shgl hr u 'i k Zl cn xfkx Ocjjh`k oi swsddcjkxkvck xvñ. Jhñox]xgcñ mc sxñc dhbhkghñ fw [i n ac; ; c shgl hk` fharh acosvck redv ejł cl xagcñ.

<sup>4</sup> āCj-Jcfcrhjβ (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.70. Fwkwk uoahn` āCg-fcv/w mcj-jhñoxβ ; xjh`kvhv`ñ. ā: ckbi g-i l l hgβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.54 mc 60ā āXrvi g-tcnxvβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.61ā āJhñox Bcpcfñβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.321, 324, 326.

I i ohgxtcj ejvxgc, I ck Cfw Fc; nc vevxl ...â"cg, ckshnvhk ughk rnhvaghnl`b`k dhk`kh 'evc; ß Fxb 'evxf ukghnh ruawgvwr. Unhvh \hgjhnh fi ni kl i a fxn kctcnx 'znvi ; . Vevxgc...âFw Sc/v xfkx I fhvcvx, r`bv`nl hs` mhnv`n.ß Fxn hb ujwnvwr. Ukghn`k jcnctxkvck vkh`ahk hvhl acphvcj ; cgl cgcnxkx vevx, Hgghph pcl v-sckh evxf suknh fegc vevx... âHl I h fc/v... Fxb Hgghp`k ckshn` (; zl c; ]xgcnx), Xsghl `k si jwkwdwr, sxb I i ph[xngcn txghk rzml -rcfxgcvcksxkxb...ß L ck fxn szb vel c; xsjcdxnvxl ; x, Cfw Fc; n vevx... âSh; xj uglß Fwkvhk suknh zbi vkh`al hyh fhaghv`. Hgghph hkv ugsww ; x, I ckxl rcgfl vc ughkghn` mc I ckx jcc[[i fc 'c]xnckgcnx edkxgc ugvwyw ; xl x, fcg; c vc ukvhk vh dhoad`ghn`k` fxnvtcdc mc fcvhpcjck ha; hn ejl cdc fhaghv`. U vevx... âZb fhncxbvc vevxdxkxb oedxngx mc dhoad` szbgcn sxb ghdxrvxn. Gh; xk fw I cscgc (ncpfngx; ) Ri nedaxk fw ahocsxkvck fharhs`kvh pe] mhoj ncsl xddcjc jhk`kl hl `av`n. } i k; x ukghn kcscf mc I crhl vh cncfgcn hnhs`kvh I epmcn mc I cn; cbxddcj jca; xg evxngcn. L ck fw x; x kctcnvck fxxkx sxbk i ]i k se]xncl æ ukghnvhk phks` fxx xgc xsjcscxb fed/cj evxk.ß Suknh I ckxl gc Cfw I fedvckxk cgxkvck jwjwf ukghnh jcrvxl ejvx. L ck ukwk fwkvhk cghmc vedc[cdx szbgcn vxkgcl c; xsjcl xnvxl . Suknh ckshnvhk fxn kctcn hdhyh rhgo`f vevx... âFxb ukwk (|edycl fcnxk) hnohs` mc ; zl cdx vxv; . Ed Ri neda rnw\w! Fxbvck vc fxn cl xn ugsww, sxbvck vc fxn cl xn.ß Fw bhl hk scs- ; i d rhgov`, I ck vc xojxght dhnhkh[hy`kvhk runowf Cfw Fc; nc vevxl ...âEd Cfhh Fc; n! Cgxkx h]!ß U cgxkx h]v`, I ck vc ukh fed/cj ejvxl . Suknh cmmcg[c I i ph[xngcn, vphh suknh xsc ckshn ukwkgh fed/cj ejvxgc. Fwkvhk suknh Sc/v xfkx I fhvcdc jcnct 'ejvx; ...ß Suknh fegc vedxn...âPcn ; cs I i scgl hkghn`k I camcncjx ugl hvhk fxn ; csgc fed/cj ejsc, kc ukwk zbi xgc fed/cj ugwkhn, kc vc ukwkgh fed/cj evck ; csgc. Fw hgvhv`[` dug pcn x; xsxkx I csgcoc (shgghrohkhdh) h\hnhn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Jcfcnx âScrxtcß phvxscgcnxkx mc unhvh Cfw Fc; ngc ke[c fed/cj ugwkl hs`k` fegc ncmhdcj evxn.<sup>2</sup> âCkshn Fckx-Shxvc

<sup>1</sup> âScpxx Fwohnxß, pi vvv fhf, nc[I wg-pwfgl I xkcb-bxkh fhf, 4-[i [xgv, scp.120.

<sup>2</sup> Fw ncmhdcjxk oi ghscsxkx |edycl fcnxk mthj`kvhk suknh;` phvxscgcnx redv evcn; ck âJhnxx Jcfcnxßvck kcrgek, redv ejl xax; . Egc[c vc Jcfcnxvck

scrxtcsxkvc fñn denc d'y'av`ghn mc |edycl fcnxk [ckhbcxkx  
 fuaghv`ghn ;x, u pcbncjxk zb hxgcsx ukh rwsq mensxk. Vevxgcñ...  
 âL i pcl l cvvck suknh Sc/v xfkx l fhvckx ukh [hxxaxk se]xnx; .ß  
 Sc/vx, ocsjc ugvwyw fñn phgvh unh 'cjxnvxgcñ...ß Kcphdcj ho`nvh  
 fegc vedxgxñ... âU, Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvx; vck suknh ckshn`k  
 vxkvc ughk 'zbcg tcvh; hng`rghn`k` mc \hnghr ;e]l xaxkx, ukghn`k  
 Xsghl vh;` i sji kgi ;gcñxkx shvhghv`, ukghn`k |edycl fcnx mc  
 ukwk scphfcgcñxkx cbxbgcl cgcñxkx, vi al ckgcñx xgc [xphv  
 h\hnl hghn`k` ohj`nghjv`. Kcphdcj vevx ;x, cncfcgcñ zb hdhrgñn`  
 i sji kvc vhdhkv`ghn mc |edycl fcnx-C;ñcl ukghnvhk nhb`  
 ugvwyw fñn phgvh vi kdhvhk 'ejvx.ß Sukñh vevx... â{hxxaxkx;  
 l cscgcsxkx fharhghn`k`k vcohgjx ugl hvhk zbi ki bc l cosws  
 evxk.ß Phl `g`rgh [hmhf menvxgcñ ;x, âdhoa` nc/d mc 'zbcg szb  
 vevxk, sckxk menvxdkx kcbcnvck pe] mhoj vzkl cdc[cdx; . Sckx  
 fw xaxk mcgxsx mc rcddwl w peshf evc[cdx; .ß Sukñh fñn-fñxgc  
 l i bh;xncdc fhaghd`f vevxgcñ... âC`cn Ri neda mc l i ph[xngcn  
 fwkw rcfwg ejl cscgcñ mc âfxb l i ph[xngcn mc scphfcgcñ  
 |edycl fcnxk zki kvc 'evckgcñ vxv; , fxb u pcbncjxk dho`kghn`,  
 rupwl -crncfhs` vxv; , kc i ]i k ukvhk suknh vxk xaxkvc fxbxl gc  
 ]c;xal cdc fhaghv`k`b?ß - vescgcñ, ukvh kc [hmhf mencnx; ?!ß  
 Ukghnvhk fc/bxgcñx vevxgcñ... âFxb vc vedcnx; ;x, xkvx ;x, fegcvxn,  
 fñn cl xn sxbvck ugswk, fñn cl xn vc fxbvck.ß Sc/v xfkx l fhvc  
 vevx... âFw bcxtgxdxk mc si sjgi di k cmmcgxvxn.ß¹

Cfw Fc;ngc Zl cn fw l cscgcvcck ocfcñvhn ugvwrvh Cfw  
 l fedvc {cnñhpgñ fñngx;vc Scrxtcdc jcgcsvxgcñ. l sedv xfkx  
 Pi bedn,² l medl xfkx Shxvc¹ mc Hsxl xfkx Cvx² ukghngh

fharhghn`k`k vh ncmhdcjxkx phaxdcvc redv ejl xax; . Fw ncmhdcjxk 'ekxa  
 acñpxkx âCfvi ggñp xfkx Scfhß ;xjhfk`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc redv ejl xax; .

¹ âJhñxox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.456, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1838æ  
 âJhñxox xfkx Csxñß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.125æ âJhñxox oi gcthß (xfkx Ri jedfc), 1-[x [xgv,  
 scp.5, fw l cbl wkh dho`k xfhncgcñ Cfw Fc;n {umpcnxkxk âScrxtcß ;xjhfk`k`k  
 2-[x pxsscsxkvc mc Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvxk âKcp[i g-fcghycßdc dhbv`y` acñpxk âmc  
 l xk ;cghl xk gcpw tx l c/kg-ckshñß oi jfcxkvc.

² âSxñedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.335. l sedv xfkx Pi bedn x;xk[x  
 âCrcfcß \edl hk`kvñ mc l pi v vzdi ai kvc xajxñh; ejl xa, phl `rh]hk  
 bhl hk |edycl fcnxk dhk`kvñ rhgl `av`. U, |edyl fcngc fi j i k  
 l i phñfcgcñvc xajxñh; ejvx. Cfw Fc;n ckshnvñk pe] fñn acosx ukvhk rhfhyh  
 ;e]xñl cbvx. 20-[x, dhowv 21-[x px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xavñ. Ukwk [ckhbcxkx  
 Zl cnxk acosck zbi 'zj iñl i avi. âSxphpß l i cgxtgcñx ukvhk uk sc; ;xb  
 ncmhdcj kcrq ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß ;xjhfk`k`k 1-[x

pcl tx; xn ugvwghn.

Cfw Fc;n Zl cnx vkh'al hrvhk shoghv`rvhk suknh, zbi vkh'al hyh fhaghv`. Cmmcg[c Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvx, l i ph[xngcnxk |edycl fcnc jcsvxr ejl c;vc phl `vhk rhfhyyh vi al cgcnxkx ohj`nghvnhnr vevx... âUkghn den i bi kvc Hgghph xfhvcj evck, |edycl fcnc xl hk 'cjsxck xg; acosgcx vxvgcn. Ukghn |edycl fcnc [hcxaxkx ugl hrvh ukwk dho`k rupwl ghn` mc fw mcbxtcdc ghdxrgx acosgcxvn. Bhg`l ghnvhk fharh pe] ;cs fw fhncvc ukghngh xojxght evxf l i khrxadc rhgol hb.ß Suknh ckshn`k tcbxgcj mc vcdncgcxkx ohj`nghvnhnr vevx... âFxbxl kcbcnxl xbvz zkvc 'evck l i ph[xngcnvck suknh pe] ;cs sxbxk l crhl mc l ckbxgcjxkxhc ]hjl hb. Fegc xsc, fxb cl xn ughr, sxb xsc mcbxn.ß

Ukvhk suknh Pi fhf xfkx L i kbcn hdhyh rhgo`f vevx.<sup>3</sup> âEd ckshn rnw\w! Xaxkxbx (ncpfcnxgx) zb xojxdhn`k`bh hg`k, ]i k;x, fw [hl hhj sxbxk l i g; xddcjxkxbvc mc sxbxk shdckxbvcvn. Pe] fxn [cswn acos sxbxkgc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc [i n/cj ejl cb. Xojxght ejl cdxk, c;s phgvh zb nc/d mc 'zni ai ki bi ohnhf, zb xa mc jcvfxngcnxkxbx \w] evcnxkxb. C'cn fw rnw\ (l i ph[xngcn) ukghnvkh eaxjvxdxkxbvck fharh aedgcx rcfwg ejl cscgcx, fxbvck vc fxn cl xn ugswk, sxbvck vc fxn cl xn.ß

Zl cn vevx...âPedphj! X;x kctcn edkx fxn bhl hk mc l c; hkvh

---

[xgvxkxk 31-33-[i , âCg-xshfcß ;xjh`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkxk 64-[i mc â{cmhl xnws-sxncß ;xjh`k`k 283-[i scpxtcsxkvc l zm[wvvn.

<sup>1</sup> l medl xfkx Shxvc Crcfcvc, Fcvnc mc ukvhk suknh;` phvxscgcncv xajxnh; ejl xa mc Zl cnxk oxgthcjx vzmni kvc vi kdhvhk 'ejl xavxn. Zl cn ukwk rcfnx i sji kc 'cgxf vedcnv... âDen i bi kvc ughk xkshkghn`k pe] fxnx vedc fxgl cb ;x, l ck fw rcfnxk shpxfxkvck dhoadhl .ß Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.170, âCg-xshfcß 3-[i [xgv, scp.45, âWsvwg-yhfcß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.158-vc redv ugwk l wavvn.

<sup>2</sup> Hsxl xfkx Cvx vc ckshn`k pcl `edl hk` mc âC[ghkß rcfxgcxkxk hyhs` vxv. l pi v mc ukvhk suknh;` l i phnxfcgcncv xajxnh; ejl xavxn. R`no feaxk[x px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[i [xgv, scp.133, âCg-xshfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.237 mc âWsvwg-yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.75-vc redv ugwk l wavvn.

<sup>3</sup> Pi fhf xfkx L i kbcn Fcvn vzdi ai kvc mc ukvhk suknh;` vzdi agcnv xajxnh; ejl xa, Zl cnxk oxgthcjx vzmni kvc mcthj ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß ;xjh`k`k âCg-xshfcßdc ughk phaxdcxkvc, 1-[x [xgv, scp.351, âCg-xshfcß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.302, âWsvwg-yhfcß, 1-[x [gv, scp.364â â{cl pcncß, scp.359-vh redv ugwk l wavvn.

fxn denc d`y`al hb... Hgghph hkv ugsww, cncf i l l c j x  
 |edycl fcngcnx sxbvck rednxsx ughk phgvh, sxb c ocgxtcgx;  
 menl cdc nhb` ugi hb. Gh;xk cncf gcn ki fi mmcjxk ukghn`k  
 hnhs`kvh ugvwyw ; csgcnvck ughk fxn ocgxtc ugi hs`kvhk xl jxkh  
 ejl cbgcn. Fxbxl i j i k ukghn`k rcfwg ejl cl cdxkc vhn ha; hn  
 vcgxgl xb mhnv`n. : xl Lipcl l cvxk ri vncj mc pz;wl c j x  
 fhncsxkvc fxbxl gc l i ohgxtcj evc fxgcn, phgfw;x fxb ukwk  
 rupwl -crncfhghn`d`r?! Dhgk`b u ; csgcn l i ohgxtcj evcn ; x, fhjxg  
 xgc l cynwn ugwf 'i khpgh dugvhk ]`os`k mc tcgh; c j rwdwswhk  
 vi asi kgcn!ß

Pi fhf xfkx Li kbcn hdhyh rhgo`f vevx...âEd ckshn rnw\w!  
 Zb ri mmcgcnxkxb hnohghk`k mc ukwk ; z l c; ]xgcnxkxk szbgcnxkx  
 rcfwg ejl cdxk, c; s phgvh sxb fw xavc;x (pz;wl c j vc; x)  
 fcpnckxbvck l cpnwl evc[c; gcn. C'cn sxbxk xsjcdxkxb rcfwg  
 ejl cscgcn, ukghn` fw zg; cvck rumwk mc zb xsjc; gcnxkxb ukghn  
 rcfwg ejvxnk. Hgghph hkv ugsww ; x, sxb fw xac ukghnvkh vph  
 ghdxrsxkb. } i k; x l i ohgxtgcn fw vxkx l cpb sxbxk  
 r`g`k[ghn`k`bgh rcfwg ejvxgcn. L ck fw xagcnvc wsjh mc ri vncjgx  
 fxn hnohdh l . H'hp ugwk! Hgghph hkv ugsww, c'cn xsjcsckxb, xax  
 xg; vzmngcnc rhdjhnh fxgcncl !ß

Zl cn vevx...âFegcvxnc, Hgghp sckx zgvi nsi klß U vevx...  
 âHgghp sckx zgvi nsi klß Cfw l fedvc vevx...âEd ckshn rnw\w! Sxb  
 |edycl fcnc ; z l c; evxf ukh hnoh vwnhk xg; acosgcn vxkxb.  
 Fegc xsc, vxkvc jcpnxtc dug menck xg; acosgcn ugi hd`klß

Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v Ocbnc[x hdhyh rhgo`f vevx...âEd ckshn rnw\w!  
 Hgghph hkv ugsww, fxb l i anx; gcngc [xphvvh i sji kgi ;  
 rhbhkv`r mc fw vxkvc xncgx ; e]vx; . Fw xagcnvc  
 |cnmcnvx`hn`l`b`k nhb`g`y`k` rhbhkl hr, |edycl fcnc xjhj  
 ejl c; mc zbi l i b i j i k ]hg`al hrvhk fharh fxn kxddcjxl xb  
 ugi hl `av`n. Fxbc ghdxr vedxgvn ; x, ukwk ohjxnkc [hl hhjh 'zb  
 vx; c; . Fxb ukwkgh vi kdcmx fcpnc hojhnl `n`r. Hgghp fw fhncvc  
 fxbxl ke/l c j shpxfxl xbvxn. H'hp ugwk ; x, Lipcl l cv  
 Ri nedavckvxn, ukwk rupwl -crncfhghn` ukh vph dho`k mc  
 (ncpfcngxdc) vph ghdxrvxngcn. Hgghph hkv ugsww ; x, Hgghp  
 l ckx pe] mhoj fw l zmbw fhncsxkvc ukghngh l i khrxacvc

---

<sup>1</sup> Xi hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> l i ph[xngcnxk fw [i n vcgxg 'cjxnl cgcnxkx eavcn; ck  
 fwdwnvw...âKifimmcj ac[cncsıkx xsjxvgh ejvxgcn, ukwk l edmcııkx xsc l cpm ejvxgcn.ß (Xfkx  
 Cfxg-Pcvvxk âKcp[i g-fcghycßdc acnpı, 1-[x ]h\, 2-[x [xgv, scp.2.)



'znl cb. Fegc xsc Hgghpvhk rnowk mc ukghngh l i ohgxtcj ejl cdxklß

Cfw Fc;n vevx...âFw Zl cn, fw vh Cfw l fedvc! Phks` xgc xsjcdxnsxkxbsc, fed/cj evxk.ß

U x; xsx vevxgc...âHgghph hkv ugswk, sck ugh-ugh, fxb fw xax zpvcl xbc hgl hn`r!...ß<sup>1</sup>

Suknh Cfvi nncpl hk xfkx Umt rhgo`f vevx...âEd ckshn rnw\w! Sxb i sji k ugshk`b vh, sxbxk hnhk`bv Cfw Fc;n, Zl cn mc Cgx ;xl x acosgc duovwn!ß

Li kbcn xfkx Cnrcl hdhyh rhgo`f vevx...âFxb hvghn`k` ]c; vxdxk acosgcxk i sji kgi di ki xk; hn ejl xnx; . }i k; x ukghn`k hnhs`kvh egc ; csgcn mhnv`n ; x, (u, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfx kcbcnvc jwjwnvw) c'cn fw l cscgckx (ncpfcngxdx) xsjcscgc, pe] mhoj ukwkgh l i ohgxtcj evxgc fxgl cb.<sup>2ß</sup>

Ckshn`k phl `s`, dhowv fxn rxsl x vevxgc...âFxb Cgxvck fharh pe] ; csgc fed/cj ejl cnx; !ß<sup>3</sup>

Zl cn vedxn...Fwkvhk suknh ; cs; xk l i khrxac dnhhk`. L ck xojxght ugh[hy`kvhk runohnhr vevxl ...âCfw Fc;n, cgxkx h], sckxkgc fed/cj evxl !ß<sup>4</sup>

Pcn x; x acos (Zl cn mc Cfw l fedvc) fed/cj l crscvkvk ugvyw bhl hk Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v ukghnvhk rhfhyh ; e]xf Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx. Pi fhf xfkx Li kbcn fegc scsgckvx...âEd Fcaxn! Kc rcvcn xjhcsxbgx; ejvxk! Cl x uygwkwk pz; wl cjxkc pcscv evxnsck?ß U vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk ; x, duo! Hl l h xsjcl xncl ; x, Hgghp`k fw rzml i ]i k rcnln menvxdx fxn phrr fhncsxkvc ukghngh l i khrxac evxl .ß

Fcaxn xfkx Sc/vxk xagcnxkx, Ri nedaxk xsjc; gcnxkx, zb ncrxfgcnx âOcbnc[ß rcfxgcsxkx Sc/v xfkx l fhvcdc ncpfcngx; menl c; fhncsxkvc; x jcvfxngcnxkx 'znck âUmsß rcfxgcsx fxn-fxnxgc

---

<sup>1</sup> Xojxshnh nxhdcj evxgsxk vedc, fw szbgcnxk vhmhl `k` redv ejl cvx; .

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.103æ âCg-l i mcttcxdddjß (Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn), scp.579.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.208, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1818æ âJhnnox xfkx Csxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.123-vc vedxgn...âCkshn fw szbgcnx Zl cnxk Cfw Fc;ngc szpfcjxkvck suknh vevxgc.ß

<sup>4</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.336. âTcgjcjß pcvxsxkx ncmhdcj evckgcxk phl `s` Zl cnxk Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl csxkxk jcshvi tx ugvywkwk redv ejl xagcn.

szpfcjc fhaghv`ghn, ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx – I sedv xfkx Pi bedn vc hnhghn`kvh ugl hrgh – vx'cngcnxkc vedxnvxgc... âHggphp hkv ugswk, c'cn ocbnc[ggcn fxn vph fw I ckscfc ]hshghn, ukwk ohjnxkc pcl xac sxbc i sji kgi ; rhbhkh[hr mc pe] mhoj sxbk i ]i k fxn \hd hd`nl hdh[hrghn. Fegc xsc, rhgo`k mc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj evxk.<sup>1</sup>

Fwkvhk suknh rhgo`f Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvxgc. Fw xagc Sc/v xfkx I fhvckxk mc ocbnc[ggcnxk jcvfxn \ubwgvw. Unhvh xajxn; evckgc Cfw Fc;nc fed/cj ejl c; i ]i k ukh jcnct ho`av`ghn. Hb rhg`nv` ; x, Sc/v xfkx I fhvckx hhrghn` hgj`kvh jh`vghs`kghn ; x, Sc/vxk ; zl c; ]xgcxkvck fxn rnw\w vevx... âEpjxdhjg` ugwk Sc/vx jh`vghl hdhs`k`b! Zl cn vevx... âZgvi ni k ukw! Hggph ukw zgvi nsi k! Suknh ukwk fha` i sji kc 'cgxf vevx... âSckx egc cbxavnl c; xsjcnvxl ; x, fcvckxkxk fckvgcnx fxn-fxnxkvck hdn`gs`k! Fw bhl hk Reds xfkx Sc/v Zl cnxk shrrhg`kvhk jwjwf vevx... âHggphp hkv ugswk, c'cn ukwk fha`kvhk fxn ji ; cs;x; ugsh, hyb`kvh fxn vxaxk vc shy rhgl hb! Cfw Fc;n vevx... âZl cn! Hnhl ug, fwnhvh [hl hhjgh I i vnh ejl c; vph dhov`v`n. Zl cn fwkw eavxf ; cknh ]c; xgv.<sup>2</sup> Sc/v xfkx I fhvc vevx... âHggphp hkv ugswk! C'cn hdhyh rhgol hyh ri vncjxl ugshdv`, egc kc/nc ]c;cnvxl ; x, sckx mc dugvhaghk`k` sx]hk veaxdkc si ni ;gcdcnvxl U bhl hk sckx egc fxn vcsjcdc rumwavwnhv`l ; x, ukghn`k [cn'csxkvc scn;cnvcgxdc xjhj ugwkxk fxn hvhl ughnv`k. Suknh zb hvhl ghn`kh vevx... âLckx fwnhvhk h`hn`k! Ukw zb emxkc h`hvn`ghn.<sup>3</sup>

Cfw Fc;n {umpcnx zbi ki k âScrxtcß ;xjh`kvh fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ugwkxk 'i k Zl cn ]uo [hktcahkg`r evxn, Cfw Fc;nk rhfhy`kvh 'evcnc; w[h scsgc vedxnvx... âH'hp ugwk, phl ` Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx!<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.2. Cfw Fc;n {umpcnxkxk âScrxtcß ;xjh`kvhk kcrgek. Unhvh vedxgn... âUms rcfxgcsx âOcbnc[ß rcfxgcsxkxk fha]`ghn`kvhk fxn xgc fed/cj evxgl csxkxk I i l ; i kgi di ki 'znvi ;vc, umsgwghn`k fha]`s` I sedv xfkx Pi bedn rhgov` mc Sc/vgc ncrhfcj mc pcscv ejvxdxkc 'znc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx.

<sup>2</sup> Fw [i n l zmre jwjl hr 'zsjcnx ; x, u x; x ocgxc pcl ]cjxkgx; vc, pcl vc hshdxavc; x sxdhscjgcxkxk cmmcg[cvck jcvfxn 'znl i avi gc.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.455, 459, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1843.

<sup>4</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.133 mc 74-vc fharh xfhnc xgc redv ugwkI wavwn.

Scrxtcvc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx;vck suknh ukw l cs[xvc  
'c]xnvxgc n ; x, fharhghn` vh ukwkgh fed/cj ejsxkgcn. Hffhs mc Cgx  
|edycl fcnxk rwsq mc ;ctck xagcnxkx rwnjhnl hl `av`ghn ; x,  
l cs[xvvck w[hghk jc;fxn scsgcnxkx eajvxgc n. Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vevx...  
â" zncsck, kc ocfcnvx n?ß Hffhs vevx... âFegc fxn aed pe] mhoj  
'zni kl cl xavxn. Sckc fxn aed vel cvxgc n! x?!ß<sup>1</sup>

Fw bhl hk Fcnh xfkx Hbxf zbi ki Fckx-Phaxl rcfxgcsxkc  
]hjv`n`f vevx... âEd Fckx-Phaxl ! Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj evxgvx.ß  
Ukghn fxn-fxnkc vevxgc n... âLi scgl hkghn fxbxl xajxnh;`l`b  
ugl hvhk pe] fxn xa 'zni cbgc n. Ho` fxb |edycl fcnc vph  
dho`k`r!ß Hffhs vevx... â: c/fckxk Hgghp`kh hkvh ugswk ; x, hnj`r  
fw xax 'zni fgcn!ß

Fw xa u bhl hk fha menl xavx ; x, l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k  
c;scnxdccjx |edycl fcn ; -vck suknh ncpfcngxdc dhgk`b  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k ghdxrgx ugvwywkvh hbh[`r fegc ac; ; ejl xnvxgc n.<sup>2</sup>

Jcfcnx ncmhdcj evxn ; x, Csgcl rcfxgcsx phl `g`rgh L cvxkcdc  
vhoxg ugw f Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvxgc n. Fw rcfxgcvcck u rcvcn  
hvhl 'cgl xavx ; x, acpcnxk ; i]cgc n vugl wavw. Zl cn fw  
fhncvc vedxnvx... âFxb Csgcl rcfxgcsx 'cgl cl xavck rhfhr zb  
xaxl xbx khjhl hl peshf evxnvx; , gh;xk ukghn` 'znvi ; vc, rcjx  
rcgcfcdc ]hjv`y`l`bh dcrxk ejvx; .ß<sup>3</sup>

Scrxtcvc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ugwkvwrvhk suknh fed/cj  
evckgc n ukw hnhdh hgv`ghn mc |edycl fcn ; l cs[xvxc  
'c]xnvxgc n. U, |edycl fcnxk l xkfcnxkc ]`ov` mc hoahl ]hy`kh  
rcvcn [hl hhj 'cgxf ukwkgh fed/cj ejvx. Fwkghn |edycl fcnx i ]

<sup>1</sup> âXrvi g-tcnxvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.258â âXfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk acnpß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.132 mc 74â âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß, Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn, scp.577, 580, 583 mc 592. Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv vc zb acnpkvc, 2-[x [xgv, scp.2-16, ukw ncmhdcj ejl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß (Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn), scp.580.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.458, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1843â âJhnnox xfkx Csx nß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.224â Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn zbi ki k âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß ; xjh f kvh Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk acnpkxk 6-[` [xgv, scp.287-vck kcr gck vedxn...âCfw Fc; n ukghn`k mhsxjcsxgc 'i [gckvx.ß

Jhnno]xgc n Csgcl rcfxgcsxkx L cvxkcdc kc mhoj 'cgl csxkx redv ejl cl xagcn, gh;xk 'i [gi epjxl hgh 'znc ukghn fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki 'cgl xavxgc n. L cnpwl Aedo Li txv â{cl cgß ; xjh f k`k 43-[i scpxtcsxkvc dhn`n...âFw rcfxgc L cvxkcvck ownl h hgl hr i ]i k 'cgl xavxgc n.ß

'i k vctk ejl cvxgcn.<sup>1</sup>

#### I L WLX FED/CJ

Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ugwkhhk 'i ki k shfhp` u, l xkfcnc ]`o`f  
ujwnvw. Zl cn hdhyh rhgov` mc Cfw Fc;nvck zk[c szpfcjc  
fhaghdhnr Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvx. Suknh ohj`nghjv` ;x, ukwk  
vi kck vevxdx szb kc Hgghp`k : xjhfkvh, kc vc |edycl fcnxk  
'zsjcnxagcnxkvc l zm[wv ugi hl `av`n. C; sxkc u, fegc jcscmmi n  
evxnvx ;x, |edycl fcn zbi zb xagcnxkx rhdvhdh shgh[hr mc  
phl `vhk suknh mthj evc[c;vx. Suknh vevx... âHgghp Zb  
;xjhfk` sxbxk hnhk`bvhd rudl wavwn. Pcl xk ;xjhfk ;x,  
|edycl fcnx ukwkgh pxvhdcj ejl xavxn. C'cn ukh shn`gshk`b,  
Hgghp sxbx vc ukwk ;xl x pxvhdcj evc[c;vx. Hgghp sxbxk  
xaxkxbx x]cnxkxbvc ck dhoad` ughk`k`b`k zpvcsxkc rudl wavwn...  
|edycl fcnxk (l hyhnhvh;`) dugvha` mc l i shpxfx! Fegc xsc,  
hdhyh rhgo`k mc ukwkgh fed/cj evxk.B

Fegcgx;gc, Scrxtcvc;x fed/cjvck suknh [hl hhj i l wl x  
ac;xgvc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvxgcn.

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc fegc dhh`g`n... Ukghnvhk (l cs[xvvc xajxnh;  
evckgcnvck) fxn rnw`w fwkvhk cmmcg Fckx-Shxvc scrxtcsxkvc  
Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl xavxgcn. Gh;xk ukwkgh evxgck i l wl x  
fed/cj l xkfcncv fha menvx. Ckcs xfkx L hgx; vel xavxn...Zl cnxk  
u 'i kvc Cfw Fc;nc âL xkfcnc ]`olß vevxdxkx mc fw szbi vhl  
jc;nghghv`y`k` eajvxl . Kcphdcj, u, l xkfcnc ]`ov` mc [hl hhj`k  
phl `s` ukwkgh fed/cj ejvx.

Suknh Cfw Fc;n szpfcjc fhaghv`, Hgghph pcl v-sckh  
ejvx;vck suknh vevx... âHl l h fc/v. Ed [hl hhj! L ck egc fxn  
phgvh sxbxk ncpfcnxkxb ugvtl ;x, sxbxk ck dhoad`k`b vedxgcl ...  
Fegc xsc, c'cn l ckvck dhoad` fxn cl cg `znvi ki bsc, ;zl c; evxk,  
c'cn \xs xa `znsckxb, ukw xsghp evxf vi bcgvxk. Hgghph mc Ukwk  
Ncswgwkh xjhcy evc[cdxl mhojh rcvcl l ckc xjhcy evxk. C'cn  
Hgghph mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh rhna` xjhcsxbgx; ejvxl sc, l ckc  
xjhcy ejl c; phrr`k`b duovwn. Hdhyh rhgo`k mc khl hbh  
phb`ngha`k, Hgghp sxbx ncpl cj ejsxk!ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCg-l i mettrxddhjß, scp.578â âCnxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.164â  
âJhnxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.188.

<sup>2</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.340â âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv,  
scp.203, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1829â âl dwkwg-cofhnß (Xfkx Ri jedfc), 2-[x

# I LWLX FED/CJVCK SUKNH

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki 'i kunjh ]hy` mcthj ejvx, [hl hhj vh jc; 'i ki hoahl ]hy`kh rcvcn vhdhk`f pe] fxn xa 'znl cvxgc. Cmmcg[c Scrxtcvc; x xagcnc l caywg ugvwghn, suknh Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj ejvxgc, vphph suknh i l wl x fed/cj fhaghkv`.<sup>1</sup> Zl cngc ukwk ]`o`a` Cfw Fc; nxk [hl hhjh khl hb r`gv`y` mhojh rcvcn vhmhl ejvx.

Vel xagcn... Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj xax rwnjhnv`rvhk suknh [hl hhj jc; 'i ki |edycl fcnx dhvh shgv`ghn mc u pcbncjxk vctk xagcnxkx 'znl c; i ]i k dugh vi avigcn.<sup>2</sup> Fwkvhk suknh |edycl fcnxk emxkc vhoxx ugvwghn ; x, ukh khl hb r`gs`kghn.<sup>3</sup> |edycl fcnc xl hl s`b khl hb r`g`kv`. Fegc ; x, l i scgl hkghn vcsjc-vcsjc vhoxx ugwf (xl hl ugl hvhk) u pcbncjc [ckhbc khl hb r`g`nv`ghn.<sup>4</sup>

|EDYCLFCN j -XK VCTK LCNHSXLXKVC XAJXNH: EVCKGCN

Vel xagcn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl x l cpb ukh rwsq menckgc n rcfnc rudvwghn... Hffhs, Cgx, Tcbg mc |edycl fcnxk hbbv ejvxdx acos – Shgep. |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnx xsc ukwk l i fhnc; [ckhbcsxkx mc hxgcsxkx jc; rudvwghn mc ukghn |edycl fcnx

---

[xgv, scp.234æ åCnnxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.167æ åJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.248æ åJhnnoxg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx), scp.47æ å: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.129, pcvxs, 2253æ åCssxncji g-Pcgcfxddcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.397æ Fwohnx zbi ki k åScpxpß ; xjh`f`k`k 4-[i [xgvxkxk 165-[x scpxtcsxkvc Zl cnxk oi jfcsxkx hbh`r` tcnrgc Ckcsxk vxgxkvck ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Cfw Fc; nxk oi jfcsxkx ncmhdcj evckgcncvck fxnx vc Cfw Fc; n {umpcnxvxn ; x, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv fwkw åKcp[i g-fcgghycßkxk acnpkxk 1-[x [xgvxkxk 134-[i scpxtcsxkvc ukwk dhbv`y` åScrxtcß ; xjh`f`kvhk ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk åScttcji s-scttcß, 1-[xgv, scp.98.

<sup>1</sup> åCj-Jcferhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.78. Gxvck ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> åSxnexd xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.343æ åJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.453, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1830æ åJhnnox xfkx Csxnß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126æ åJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.248æ åCssxncji g-Pcgcfxddcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.392 mc 394. U, Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjxk kc mhoj sukh ]hjl hs`k` mc ukghn`k |edycl fcnxk [ckhbcsxkc jcnct kc mhoj `ejl cgcnxkx fcdhk ejl cl xavxn.

<sup>3</sup> åSxnexd xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.343.

<sup>4</sup> åCj-Jcferhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.70æ å: hl xgß (Xfkx Csxn), 2-[x [xgv, 11-[x px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcncxkvc.

jc; gx; vc vctk ejvxcn.<sup>1</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vel xagcn... Cgx <sup>TM</sup>, Tcbg mc Hffhs`k uygw Rcscl mc ukwk, dhowv l shl c xfkx Bedvxx hbhv ejvxdx Acrnhkgh fxngx; vc rcfnc vhoxx ugvw. Pcl xk ; csgcn ; x, |edycl cnxk rwsq, ; ctck mc s. Xagcnxk denxkc dejxnxvxcn.<sup>2</sup> Cfw Fc; ngc Zl cn |edycl fcnxk vctk l cnhsxl xkvc xajxnh; ejl cvxcn.<sup>3</sup>

Hdxac vedxn... â|edycl fcnxk vctk l cnhsxl xkvck dhgk`b ]cnackfc `i ki, hoahl i sji feggcnxk scsxkvck h'hp ugvwr.<sup>4</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vel xagcn... U pcbncjxk dho`k rupwl ghn`kvhk fharh pe] ; cs ukwk vctk l cnhsxl xkvc xajxnh; ejl cvx. Zb emgcnxkvck ughk Fckx-yckcl jhdths` vctk bhl hk` feggcnxk scsxkx eavxnvxcn.<sup>5</sup> Fckx-yckcl jhdths`kvhk ughk ckshn fha]`ghn` vh vevxcn... âFeg scsgcnxkx `e[ckxk ho`n mhojghn`kvh eajvx; .<sup>6</sup>

|EDYCLFCN ; -XK VCTK UGWKLHS-KVHK SUKNH: -  
PHVXSCGN

Sc/v xfkx l fhvc mc ukwk hvhl ghn` l hj-l ccjjcg rhgl `av`ghn. Cgx mc ukwk ; zl c; ]xgcx hbg`rvh rhgv`rvhk suknh Cfw Fc; nxk rhgxf vcsjcsx xgc l i fhnxbcdx faghv`ghn. Ukghn`k

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx Sc/vxk ha; hn fcdhk` (2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.70) l cpb redv ugwkhhghnvhk xfhncjvxn. âCg-fcv/w mcj-jhnxoß ; xjhfk`kvh fwkwk uoahn` redv ugwkwn. â: ckbi g-i l l hgßvh (2-[x [xgv, scp.54 mc 60) âU pcbncjxk vctk ugwkl hs` vznv kctcn ; xaxkxk mhsxjcsxgc denxkc dejxnxgvxß - vevx; vck suknh fxbxl l cjkvck redv ejvx; gcxnl xbx dhbl `av`n.

<sup>2</sup> âXrvi g-tcnxvß, 3-[i [xgv, 61. Pcl xk l cbl wkwk uoahn`k` Bcpcfx redv ejl xavxn. âJhnxox Bcpcfxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.321, 324, 326.

<sup>3</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.140.

<sup>4</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.344â âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.452, 455. Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1833 mc 1837â âJhnxox xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.270â âWsvwg-yhfcbß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.34. Fharh ncmhdcjgcncv redv ugwkwn ; x, feggcnxk scsx jc; `i ki, hoahl i sji eavxgl xavxn. âCj-Jcfcrhjß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.78â âJhnxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.191â âJhnxox Bcpcfxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.327. Vhph vi b'i ki fwvwn ; x, u pcbncj ]cnackfc `i ki vctk ugwkl wavwn. âLiskcvx Cpl cvßxk 6-[- [xgvxkxk 62-[x scpxtcsxkvck vedxgn...âFw, ]cnackfc `i ki hoahl fha menvx.ß Pcl xk ; xjhfk` 242 mc 274-[i scpxtcgcncxkvck fegc redv ugwkwn... âPhnhvh vctk ugwkhh[hy`k` fxgl xnvx; , kcphtcj feg scsgcnxkx eajvx; .ß

<sup>5</sup> âCj-Jcfcrhjxß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.78.

<sup>6</sup> Dekc unvh.

pcn fxx ckshn` zbi kc vuynw [cgf ejl cdc ]hg`a`nv`. Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn zbi ki k âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß ; xjhf kvh dhb`n... Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj evxgvx; vck mc ukwk xax rhdvhdh vi avi ; vck suknh ckshnvhk ]uoghn` ukwkgf fe/dcj ejl cgcnxkvck `leal hk ugvgwghn mc fxx-fxxkx vkhghd`f l cbl l cj ejl cdc, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvck vkh`a`f ukw jc/nxtgcl cdc fhaghv`ghn.<sup>1</sup>

Dc/rwfx dhb`n.<sup>2</sup> âL i ph[xn mc ckshnvhk fxx rnw\w Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvxgc mc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc jcnct `ejvxgc. Ukghn`k x]xkvc Hffhs xfkx Cfv i g-L i jjcgxf, Tcbg xfkx Hffhs, Bi fedn xfkx Cmhl , Ohgxv xfkx Scxv, Lxrvhv xfkx Zl cn,<sup>3</sup> Shgl hk Thnsx, Cfwbcn Rctthnx, Cl l hn Dhsxn, Fcnh xfkx Hbxf<sup>4</sup> mc l fedd xfkx : c/f vc mhn vxv.<sup>5</sup> Fwkh `znc vc Cfw Fc; n

<sup>1</sup> âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß, scp.583.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.124, 125. Cfw Fc; n {umpcnxkxk âScrxtcß ; xjhf kvh, xfkx Cfxg-pcvvxk âKcp[i g-fcghycßdc dhbv`y` acnpxkxk 2-[x [xgvxkxk 13-[i scpxtcsxkvck kcrgek. Ukwk cjnhtg`xbhp`k` vh 1-[x [xgvxkxk 74-[i scpxtcsxkvck redv ejl xavxn. âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.14-vc fwkh dho`k l cbl wk redv evxgl xavxn.

<sup>3</sup> Lxrvhv xfkx Cl n, dhowv Lxrvhv xfkx Csmcv : xkvx – Sc/gcfj xfkx L hgx; xk uygvvwn. Hjhs` zb rzml -rcfxgcsxkvck rcjg xaxkc l i njc; xf ugl wa, âOcbn L umjßh `ejl xa mc : xkvc rcfxgcsx xgc cpv-`edl hk fhyghl `av`. Suknh ukghnvhk emgckl xa mc fw hxgcvc Lxrvhv vuywgl wavw. Lxrvhv fzdi vi ; vck suknh Cfw Axl n xfkx Pc[cn : xkvx xgc vhmh-vhgha ejl xa, r`g`k[gh mwnwf ukwk hdhy`k` ; csl xa mc L c; ; cdc rh]l `a, unvh vh Csmcv xfkx Cfv Dcywswk pcl `edl hk` ugl wavwn. Csmcv ukw uywggwyh `zji nl i a mc suknghn Lxrvhv xfkx Csmcv : xkvx hv` xgc jhk`kl `av`. âCpbhfß swncsxkxk 5-[x hdcx – âukghn` zb hjhghn`k` hv` xgc ]hy`n`kß khbxg ughk bhl hk ukw Lxrvhv xfkx Cl n hvghkv`nv`ghn. |edycl fcn j fwdwnvw... âHghp l ckc tcnl hk menl xavxn ; x, scphfcgcnl vck vzv kctcn semcl , pcl vc l ckr h`hp ejl xavxn ; x, U vh pcl xk ; csgcnx semin.ß Scphfcgcn âUkghn ; xl gcnvxñß - vedc sunwavwrvh fwdwnvw... âCg, Lxrvhv, Shgl hk, Cfwbcnß Lxrvhv px[ncjxk 33-[i xgxkvck mcthj ejvx. Fho... âXsjxd/hfß (âCg-xshfckxkß phaxdcsxkvck), 3-[i [xgv, scp.451âCg-xshfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.433-434.

<sup>4</sup> Fcnh xfkx Hbxf u ; csgcnvckvxñ ; x, Fcvn vzdi ai kvck dha`k`k hb ugvywvkh `znc |edycl fcn ukw `enx rhdjhn l `av`. |edycl fcn j -gc uk fxx rcbmvc, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh {cl cg, Sxttedk mc Kcpncmhk l i phnxfcgcnxkvck xajxñ; ejl xavxn. Suknh : wtcvc l cs; wkghal `a mc unvh fxx em jx; l xavx. L i s/cf xfkx l l ednxk pz; wl cjx vzmi kvck vi kdhvhk `ejl xavxn. âXsjxd/hfß (âCg-xshfckxkß phaxdcsxkvck), 1-[x [xgv, scp.143-144âCg-xshfcß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.146

<sup>5</sup> l fedd xfkx : c/f Crcfcvc |edycl fcngc fed/cj ejl xa, Fcvn mc ukvhk suknh; ` vzdi agcnvc vc xajxñ; ejl xavxn. U, |edycl fcnxk ; hjxfcgcnxkvck fxx

Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf, Cfw l fedvc {cnhnp` mc Li yednc xfkx Az/fckx ]hy`n`f vevx... âKc ejl cgxdx;?ß Vevxgc... âFxbxl ohjxnxl xbc Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jcgxfgc 'zni ai f pz;wl cjvc ukh fxn l crhl menl cgxsck ;x, ukwk zbi kvck suknh;` zmghvghn`kh vh ]hjs`k. C'cn Hffhs sxbxk jcnctxkxhc 'cgsc, Cgxkxk [cfpcsx bcxtgcdc[c; mc ukghn`k cgedpxkc ughk vcgxgxkxb 'i [gckc[c; vxn.

Suknh Cfw Fc;n, Zl cn, Cfw l fedvc mc Li yednc 'e[c x; ck Hffhs`k emxkc 'ejvxcn.<sup>1</sup> Cfw Fc;n Hgghp pcl v-sckh ejvx; vck suknh vevx... Hgghp Li pcl l cvx Zbi ki k Ncswgw, l z/l xkgcnxk mcgxsx mc ncpfcnx se]vx. Fw xagc ukghnh epshk ejvx, ukwk shdcxkx l z/l xkgcnxk i sji kvck csxn`cl cvx. Kcphdcj, ukw Zb vcn`hp`kh ]hy`nv` mc [hl hhj`k xaxkx ukghn`k zbi kc pcmhgc ejvx ;x, pcn ;csx l csgpcj fxgscgc – i l l cj i]i k i ncdx dhkhk ugvwyw phgvh – zbgcnxkc ncpfcn se]sxkgcn. Ukghn vh l ckx zbgcnxkc ncpfcn mc xagcnxkxk ;eax;]xsx jc/dxk ejvxcn. L ck fw mcbxtckx zpvcl c hgv`l mc Hgghp`k ;zl cdx xgc si sji ;vck, scn`cnvhk]g`rvhk mc xbjxnhfvhk runol hv`l . Lckxl l imctterxddcjl dhgk`b Hgghp`k cgxkvvcvn. Dhgk`b Ukh jcmc;;ig evxn mc dhgk`b Ukh jcnct rhd`v`nhl . Xkvx l ckc l i kjcbcl swncjvc fegc ofcngcn ]hj`n ;x, jc/kc mwnhk fxn acos i l wl l i scgl hkghngh l i ohgxtcjvck szb h]`n. U, sxbx zbi kc s`y`kh[hr denx se]l xavxn ;x, sxb ukwk i]i k hg`kl hb fxn rhgh, jcbc fxn pcvct ughs`k`b. Fegc xsc, dh [hl hhjgh, ukghn`k x[jxl h ejvx;gcnx (tx;xn fxngdxkvc ugvwrghn`) aedvc fxn ugwk, dh vh ukghn` 'ejvx;gcnx dugvhk rhdjhn`k. Fwnh 'cgl xax; ;x, fw cl nvck (pz;wl cjvck) fxn \hd` sckxk mc zmghvghn`k i]i k hd`nhr. }i k;x sck |edycl fcnxk cl xsxsck. Ai fpcsbx ;x, [hl hhj sckxk mc sckxk vusjwkww (Cgxkxk) l crhl `k` 'znl i agcn (mc fwkwkgh fegc, pz;wl cjx sxbvck fharhs`kh mel xagcn).<sup>2</sup> Ed Fckx-Phaxl ! Fxbxl gc l i vnh evxk! }i k;x |edycl fcnc pcl fxbvck,

---

xvx. Zl cnxk oxghtcjxkxk ho`nghn`kvh, dhowv Usl hk`k oxghtcjxkxk cmmcgcnxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âXsjxd/hfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.27, 30æ âCg-xshfcb, 1-[x [xgv, scp.31-32.

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv dhn`n ;x, fw xax |edycl fcnxk mcthj ejvxdx 'e[c denxkc dejxnvxcn.

<sup>2</sup> Fw hnj`r pxssc Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvx acnpkvc mc âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjwß ;xjh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.



pcl vc sxbvckvxn.

Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf vevx... Vx'cn fxn l cscgc vc fwvwn ; x, fxb  
sxbxk dhk`k`bh epjxdh[ i bi kvck 'cgl cl xax;. C;sxkc, shvc[c  
ughnhr l i scgl hkghn`k tx; xn fxngxdxvc ugvwyw aedgcnxk sxbxk  
jcnetxkxbvck jc/kcdc mc xnhvh l c/nwb rhgl hs`k` xsjcl c-  
vxdxl xb i ]i k fwnhdh 'cgl xax; æ ]i k; x ukwk bxdhk` sxbc mc  
ukghnh rhd`vhn. Fegc xsc, zbi ki b i ]i k fxn ]`o`a dugw tx; xngcaxk!

Hffhs Hgghph pcl v-sckh evcnc; vevx... Hgghp L i pcl l cvx  
– sck vevxdxk ; xl x – Zbi ki k |edycl fcnx, l z/l xkgcnxk  
mcgxsc rcnhr menvx, ukwk mhsxjcsxgc Zb i l l cjxkc epshk ejvx.  
Kcphdcj, ukw Zb vcn'hp`kvh oi swsx denc h\hnhv, [hl hhj`k  
xaxkx vc zbgcnxkc pcmhgc ejvx ; x, zbgcnx i ]i k phrr` se]sxkgcn,  
kcxk; x hby`kg`r l edmcx vcnsxkgcn! Sck vc c'cn |edycl fcn  
dho`kg`y` fcpkvc evcnc; ukw xsjcdxnscksc, ukvh dekc vc fxbxl  
phrr`l `b` rcsf ejl xsck! C'cn l z/l xkgcnxk mhsxjcsxgc ukw cgc  
hgl `shksh, fxg ; x, fxb vc l z/l xkgcnvck fxnxdx; mc sckxk  
cgedpxkc pe] fxn jcvfxn 'znl cl xax;. Hl l h fha menck  
xagcnvck pcgc vc rcbcfgxdx;! C'cn fw rcfwg ejl ckxk sckc,  
l z/l xkgcnxk xajxnh; ejl csx scfcfx xgc mh[xf ugvwywkx  
vedxnscksc, ukvh fxg ; x, fw dughh mh[xf ugl hl `av`n, ]i k; x fxb  
fwkw rcfwg ejl cl xax;! Sck fxn jcnctvck vedxnsck ; x, ukghn  
sckc jc/kc mwnwnghn, vx'cn jcnctvck vc vedxnsck ; x, sckx  
se]l xagcn mc sckc jcnct l edg ejl xagcn! Fxn-fxnxc bxxv ughk fw  
x; x szb fxn denc ke[c d'y`ah (vi b ugh) fxgcn?! Pcl ]xkxk, fxn  
jcnctvck zbi ki |edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsx mc [hkxaxkx shd`nshk,  
vx'cn jcnctvck vedxnsck ; x, u, [hl hhj`k xagcnxkx zbgcnxkc  
pcmhgc ejl xavxn ; x, xsjcvvdx acosx se]sxkgcn. Ukghn sckx  
se]vxgcnl x?! Hl l h sck xsjcdxnsck ; x, oxghtcjvck fxbxl i ]i k  
vc fxn \hd hd`nshk. C'cn fw, l z/l xkgcnxk phrr`v`nsh, sckxk  
ukh vcohgj ejl cdc phrr`k duovwn. C'cn fxbxl  
phrr`l `bv`nsh, fxb ukwk hb fxn pxsscsxkc nhb` vedxgx;. Fegc xsc,  
fxbxl gc l i vnh ej, ]i k; x |edycl fcn egc fxn ac[cncvckvxn ; x,  
fxb ukwk ahocgcnxdx; , sxb xsc ukwk rukawghn`s`k`b!

Fw szbvck suknh ukghn`k phl `s` rhgo`f ' ejvxgc.

E/JXNHB CGHLCJX UGHNHR THJXLEDX-BCPNH ☼ --K EMXKVC  
D-Y-GLH

Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf vedxn... â|edycl fcnxk mthj`kvhk suknh  
fxbc ocfc n ]hjv` ; x, Cgx, Bi fedn mc ukghn`k cjhnt`kvh ughkghn

fxbvck hdn`ghnhr Thjxl ckxk emxkvc fxn denc d`y`al `aghñ.B<sup>1</sup>

Jhnxo]xgcñ Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh evck mc e/jxñhb  
cghl cjx ughñhr Cgx mc Bi fedngc fxngx;vc Thjxl edx Bcphñ <sup>(alcyha-  
salam)</sup>-  
`k emxkvc d`y`ahkgñh`k hv`k` fegc redv ejl xagcn...

1-Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxfæ

2-Crcfc xfkx Cfx Gpcpfæ

3-Shgl hk Thnsxæ

4-Cfwbcñ Yctthnxæ

5-CI I hn Dhsxnæ

6-L xrvhv xfkx Csmcvæ

7-Fcnnh xfkx Hbxfæ

8-I fedd xfkx : c/fæ

9-Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsæ

10-Jcgpc xfkx I fedvwgghp.

Fckx-Phaxl vck, I i ph[xngcnvck mc ckshñvhk fxn rnw\w vh  
ukghñ`k x]xkvc xvñ.<sup>2</sup>

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> mc ukwk jcnctvhñghñ`k`k Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjvck  
xl jxkh evcnc; Thjxl edx-Bcphñk`k emxkvc fxn denc d`y`gl hghñ`  
sxnc, jhnxo, I i skcv, sxphp, cvcfxddhj, ;cghl , jcn[i I edx-phg mc  
s. ; xl x ; xjhfgñhñvh I i jcmhjxn ac; xgvc redv ugwkl wavwn. Gh; xk  
oi gcth I c; jcfxkxk hñv`[`gghñ` e/jxñhb evckgcngc rhgxf vcsjckxk  
hñhs`kvñ fha menck phvxscgcñx redv ejl cdx ouaghl hv`rghñ`kh  
'znc u phvxscgcñx jctsxghj` xgc duo, dhgk`b oi ghsc ac; xgvc redv  
evxngcn. U [i I gcvcck, Fcghbunxkxk ncmhdcjxkx redv ejl c; ughñ.  
U, fegc dñb`n... âCgx Cfw Fc;nc fed/cjvck xl jxkh evck bñl hk

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.55æ âJhñxox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.466,  
Hmnu\h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1822æ âJhñxox xfkx Csxñß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.124æ âJhñxox  
xfkx : csxñß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.246æ âSctmcjws-sctmcß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.97æ âKcp[i g-  
fcghycßkxk acñpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.123æ âJhñxow oi gcthß  
(Si dwjx), scp.45æ âSxñedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.338æ âJcdsxnwg-mi swgß, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.41.

<sup>2</sup> Cmmcgvc redv ugwkñk I ckfcgcñvck cghmc, hahy`vh;` I ckfcgcñvc vc  
redv ugwkwn ; x, fw rnw\ Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh evcnc; Thjxl edx  
Bcphñ <sup>(alcyha-  
salam)</sup>-`k emxkvc fxn denc d`y`al `av`ghñ. Ukghñ`k fc/bxgcñxkxk hvghñ`k`  
mc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh fed/cj evc[c;gcñxkx redv evckgcñ fwkgñhñv`n... âCññxdñbwk-  
ki bñcjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.167æ âJhñxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.188æ âXrvi g-tcnxvß  
(Xfkx Cfvw Ncfxfp), 3-[i [xgv, scp.64æ âJhñxox (Cfxg-txvh), 1-[x [xgv, scp.156æ  
Xfkx Azpñc âCg-; hl xgß ; xjh`k`k phaxdcxkvc, scp.112æ Cfw Fc; n { umpcñxkxk  
âScrxtcß ; xjh` (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvñ ncmhdcjxkc 'znc), 1-[x [xgv, scp.130, 134æ  
âCñsññcj i g-Pcgcfxddcß, scp.394, 397.

Cfw Fc;n ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf ukwk hnv`k[h 'zkcvcvx mc fegc  
'zsjcnxa menvx... âUkw mhn-'i [i kgc, jhl ;ufwvgrgh mc ncpl  
ejl cvck jwjwf l ckxl dhk`l h 'cjxn!ß ZI cn Cgxkxk dhk`kh  
'cgvx mc ukghn`k hnhs`kvh fc/bx szbgcn vkh`a'gv`. Cgx ho`nvh  
ukh vevx...

اٰخْلَبْ حَلْبًا لَكَ شَطْرُهُ وَاللّٰهُ مَا حَرَصَكَ عَلٰى اِمَارَتِهِ الْيَوْمَ اِلَّا لِيُؤْثِرَكَ غَدًا

âFw sivi dhoa` shyæ]ik;x ukwk fñ psscsx (shfhp) sckc ]hjh[hr! Hgghph hkv  
ugswk, sck ukwk pz;wl cjxkc dhgk`b fwkh 'znc pcnxsx; evxnsck ;x, shfhp sckc  
isjikgi; mensxk!ß<sup>1</sup>

Cfw Fc;n mcthj evcn;ck fegc vedxnvx... âH'hp ugwk! L ck  
vi kdhvh 'znvi di l xagcnvck dhgk`b i] aedc rcl gckxnci ;x,  
;ha ukghn` denxkc dejxnl cdcdvxl ... Denxkc dejxnvxdxl i] xa  
fwkghnv`n... : ha |edycl fcnxk r`b` Thjxl ckxk rh`s`k` pe] fñ  
mc[pgc h]l hbv`l , pcjjh ukw l i phnxfc i]i k fhyghshdv`ghn  
fegc...ß<sup>2</sup>

âJhnnox Dc/rwfxßvc ukwk fegc vevxdx redv ugwkwn... â: ha,  
|edycl fcnxk r`b` Thjxl ckxk emxkx jctjxa ejl cdcdvxl ; xagcnx  
u emc vhoxg ejl cdcdvxl , pcjjh l i phnxfc i]i k fxbxl  
i bi l i bc fhyghkshdv` fegc.ß<sup>3</sup>

Jhnxo]xgcñ Thjxl edx-Bcphn <sup>(alayhu-salam)</sup>-`k emxkc vhoxg ughkghnvkh  
hahy`vh;`ghn`k hvghn`k` redv ejl xagcn...

1-ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhfæ

2-Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvæ<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.587.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcñß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.619æ Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2140æ  
âL i nw[wb-bcpcfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.414æ âXrvi g-tcnxvß (Xfkx Cfvw Ncfffxp),, 3-[i  
[xgv, scp.69æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.135æ âL i kjcocfw : ckbi g-  
i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.171æ âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.18æ âCg-  
: hl xgß (L i fcñncv), Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvck kcrgekæ 1-[x [xgv, scp.130-131æ Cfw  
Fc;n {umpcnx âCs-Scrxtcß ;xjh`kvh, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvck kcrgek, 9-[w [xgv,  
scp.130æ âGxshkwg-l xbhkß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.189æ âJhnnox xfkx Csh;xnß mc  
âLxn/hjwb-bcl hkß (Sxfj xfkx {ubx), Cfw Fc;n x jcn[i l edx-phg`kvhæ âJhnnox  
Bcpcfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.388.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.115.

<sup>4</sup> Cfw Si gedl hk Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxv âPi vedfxddcß si gpi kvck suknh  
L cvxkcdc px[ncj ejl xa mc L c; ;ckxk tcjpxkvc vc xajxnh; ejl xavxn. Cfw  
Fc;n ukw unvw scn;cnvcsx jc/dxk evcnc; âHgghp`k sxdnxgl xa r`g`k[ß  
hvghkv`nv`. Px[ncjxk 21-[x, dhowv 22-[x xgxkvc Pcl svc, dhowv L cvxkcv  
mcthj ejl xavxn. Fho...âXsjxd/hfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.405-408

- 3-Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtæ
- 4-Shfxj xfkx Reds Axl hsæ
- 5-Bxdhv xfkx Gcfxvæ
- 6-L cpcl l cv xfkx L csgcl cæ
- 7-Bedv xfkx Shfxjæ
- 8-Scgl cj xfkx Scghl cj xfkx Mcraæ
- 9-Scgl cj xfkx Csgcl æ
- 10-I sedv xfkx Pi bedn.<sup>7</sup>

Thjxl edx-Bcphnk`k emxkc pi [wl evxgl csx mc pi [wl evckgcncx unhdh d`y`ahkgghgh ke[c nctjhn ejl cgcncx hahy`vh; `ac; xgv c fcdhk ugwkwn...âL i ph[xngcncvck Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf mc Bi fedn ; xl x ; xaxgcnc Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj ejl cdx f rcbcfgckl xa, cgc sxghp hghnhr Thjxl edx-Bcphnk`k emxkc d`y`al `av`ghn.<sup>8</sup> Ukghn`k e/jxnhb cghl cjx ughnhr fw emvc d`y`al hghn`k`k ocfcncx

<sup>1</sup> Shfxj xfkx Reds Axl hs Ckshnx l pi vvc mc ukvhk suknh; `l i phnxfcgcnvc xajxnh; ejl xa, Dcl hl c l i phnxfcsxkvc Ohgxvgc fxngx; vc zgvi ni gl i avi. âXsjxd/hfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.193æ âCg-xshfcb, 1-[x [xgv, scp.197.

<sup>2</sup> Bxdhv xfkx Gcfxv Ckshnx L cvxkcvck L c; ;cdc `ejl xa, |edycl fcn L cvxkcdc px[ncj evck mhojh rcvnc ukwkgh fxn`c ugl wavwn. Crcfcvc mc ukvhk suknh; `phvxscgcncv xajxnh; ejl xa, L i hmxdcxk oxghtcjxkxk cmmcgcnxkvc vi kdhvhk `ejl xavxn. âXsjxd/hfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.545æ âCg-xshfcb, 1-[x [xgv, 540æ â{ cl pcncji g-ckshfß, scp.356.

<sup>3</sup> L cpcl l cv xfkx L csgcl c Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc mc ukvhk suknh; `vzmngcnvc ugl wa mc Cgx<sup>TM</sup> xgc fed/cj ejl cl xavx, pcl ]xkxk u pcbncjxk h`hnhv`y` l i phnxfcgcnvc vc xajxnh; ejl cl xavx. 43, dhowv 46, dhowv 47-[x xggcnvc vi kdhvhk `ejl xavxn. âXsjxd/hfß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.315æ âCg-xshfcb, 3-[i [xgv, scp.363, 364æ â{ cl pcncji g-ckshfß, scp.341.

<sup>4</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.585.

<sup>5</sup> Cfw Umt Scgl cj xfkx Scghl cj xfkx Mcra Ckshnx 1-[x mc 2-[x Crcfcgcncv xajxnh; ejl xa, fwkvhk suknh vh Fcvnvc mc ukvhk suknh; `vzdi agcnvc xajxnh; ejl xavxn. 45-[x xgv L cvxkcv mcthj ejl xavxn. âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.84æ âCg-xshfcb, 2-[x [xgv, scp.63.

<sup>6</sup> Cfw Scxv Scgl cj xfkx Csgcl Ckshnx Fcvn rcbmcsxkvc mc ukvhk suknh; `rcbmcgcncv xajxnh; ejl xa, 14-[i px[nx xgxkvc âCfw l fedvß ; zn`i si phvxscsxkvc zgvi ni gl i avi n. âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.83æ âCg-xshfcb, 2-[x [xgv, scp.61.

<sup>7</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv. scp.433 mc 444æ Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk âKcp[i g-fcycßdc acnpx, 1-[x [xgv, scp.130-134, 2-[x [xgv, scp.819.

<sup>8</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.218æ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.132, 6-[` [xgv, scp.293æ âJhnxoi g-ocl xsß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.169.

Cfw Fc;n mc ZI cnc ]hvj` mc fegc vedxgvx... L i ph[xn mc ckshn-vhk fxn rnw\w |edycl fcnxk r`b` Thjxl edx-Bcpnhk`k emxkc d`y`al `agh. Ukghn unhvh Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx cjhnt`kvh-v`nghn<sup>1</sup> mc ukwkgh fed/cj ejl c; xsjcdxngcn.<sup>2</sup>

Cfw Fc;n ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf` 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ukghn` Thjxl ckxk emxkvck ]`ohnjs`k, suknh ukh vevx... âC'cn xl jxkh ejscgc ukghngh mwnwalß ZI cn fxn \hn]h uv 'zji ni f ukghnh jcnc` 'ejvx ;x, ukghn x]cnxvc ugh-ugh emx dhkv`ns`k. Thjxl c ukghn`k rhfhy`k` ;csxf vevx... âEd Ocjjhf`k uygw! "cgl xsck ;x, fxbxl emx dhkv`nhshk?ß ZI cn vevx... âFcgx! Dhgk`b u bhl hk dhkv`nl hnhl ;x, i l l cjxk mhnv uvvwrghn` denc mhnv ughs`k`b.<sup>3</sup>

âCkshfwg-canhtß ;xjh`kvh vedxgx... Thjxl c rh`k`k hyb`kvh ZI cngc rhna`gha`f vevx... âEd Ocjjhf`k uygw! Lckxl emxl x dhkv`nl hr xsjcdxnsck?ß U âFcgxß - vedc [hmhf menvx.<sup>4</sup>

I nmcj xfkx Bi fedn zb rhnvha` Cfvi gghp xfkx Bi fednxk xaxkc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nl hr xsjcvxdx bhl hk fw l cscgcdc xahnc ejl xavxn. (Fegc ;x, Cfvi gghp xfkx Bi fedn, ph; xl xddcjc ]hjl hr i ]i k rxdhl ejvxdx bhl hk Fckx-Phaxl x âAe/fx Cfx Jhgxfßvc pcfs ejl xavx mc ukghn` dhkv`nl hr i ]i k uvwk ju`ghd`nv`.) U, vedxn...âRhnvha`l fw xax shvc[c ukghn` runowjl hr l crscvx xgc 'znl i avi ;x, ukh xjhcj ejsxkgcn. (Fw xa jcbc fxn aed vedxgvx, fwkwk uoahn` cmmcggn vc l zm[wv ugl wavwn, ]i k; x) fw phvxscvck cmmcg vc Fckx-Phaxl x – Cfw Fc;nc fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvx; gcx bhl hk – runowvnhhr ukghn` dhkv`nl hr i ]i k emgcxkxk cjhnt`kh uvwk ju`ghd`nv`ghn.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126.

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.134æ Xfkx Azpkc âCg-: hl xgßxk phaxdcxkvc, 11-[x [xgv, scp.13.

<sup>3</sup> âXrvi g-tcnxvß (Xfkx Cfvw Ncfxp), 3-[i [xgv, scp.64æ âJhnnox Cfxg-txvhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.156.

<sup>4</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.586æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.140æ âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.167æ âCs-Scrxtcß (Cfw Fc;n {umpcnx, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvxk ncmhdcjxkc cshsck), 1-[x [xgv, scp.132 mc 134, 6-[` [xgv, scp.2æ âJhnxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.178æ âJhnxow xfkx Azpkcß, âCg-: hl xgßxk phaxdcxkvc, 11-[x [xgv, scp.113.

<sup>5</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.100æ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvx), 20-[x [xgv, scp.481, Xnhk ]h`, xl hl Cgx™ -`k âBifedn, uygw (Cfvi gghp xfkx Bifedn) fzdidck rcvcn fxbvck vxß – szbi ki k acnpxkvc.

Ahxn Phtxb Xfnhpxl fw fhncvc vedxn...

وَقَوْلَةٌ لِّعَلِّيَّ قَالَهَا عُمَرُ  
أَكْرَمُ بِسَامِعِهَا أَعْظَمُ بِمَلْقِئِهَا  
حَرَقْتُ دَارَكَ لَا أُبْقِي عَلَيْكَ بِهَا  
إِنْ لَمْ تُبَايِعْ وَبِنْتُ الْمُصْطَفَى فِيهَا.  
مَا كَانَ غَيْرُ أَبِي حَفْصٍ يَفُوهُ بِهَا  
إِمَامَ فَارَسٍ عَدْنَانَ وَحَامِيَهَا

âZI cnxk Cgxdc vevxdxkc kcbcn shg.

Eaxvckx cbxbgc, vedckx fzdi ; shd...

âFed/cj ejl csck c'cn emxkx dhkv`nhnhl .

Sckxk i ]i k pe] kcdx shy-shghl hj rudl hnhl –

Pcjjh L i sjcthk`k r`b` unvh ugsh vh!ß

Fwkx vedck duo xv – Cfw Pctsvck fharh,

Cvkhk si mhnxcnxxk \cpghmk` mc ukwk pxl hdc]xsxkxk

I i rhfxgxkvcß<sup>1</sup>

Dc/rwfx dhb`n... âUkghn fxn rnw`gh 'cgxf u emc pi [wl  
ejvxgc...ß Suknh vedxn... âUkwk (Cgxkxk) r`g`k[` s`kv` mc ukghn  
emc vhoxg ugvwghn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Jcfcnx dhb`n... âZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf Cgxkxk emxkc 'cgvx. Jcgpc,  
Bi fedn mc l i ph[xngcnvck ughk fxn ke]c kctcn unhvh xvxcn.  
Bi fedn r`g`k[`k` sxdnxf ukh jcnct [wl vw, hl l h jxjncvx mc  
r`g`k[` cgxkvck vi avi. Ukghn vh ti nscjx xjxnl cvck vcnphg  
ukwk i sji kc hj`g`f ukw jwjvwghn.ß<sup>3</sup>

Cfw Fc; n {umpcnx dhb`n... Cgx vedxnvx... âL ck Hgghp`k fckvcsx  
mc Ncswgwgghp`k rhnvha`dhl !ß Kcphdcj, ukw Cfw Fc; nxk  
dhk`kh 'cjxnvxcn. U vevx... âFed/cj ejß Cgx vevx... âL ck fw  
l crhl h sxbvck hnj`r ghdxrc l mc sxbxkgc fed/cj ejl cncl ! Sxb  
l ckc fed/cj ejl cdc vph ghdxrsxkxbl Sxb fw l crhl `ckshnvkh  
hgl `s`k`b mc ukwkg h epjx[h[ evcnc; |edycl fcxk rupwl ghn`  
ugvwywkwbw vedxnsxkxb. Ukghn sxbc jcsxgl ugvwghn mc  
pz; wl cjx sxbc jcrvxl ejvxgc. L ck vc ckshngh pz[cjgcavxdxkxb  
; xl x, sxbc vcgxg 'cjxnxcl . Xkvx c'cn zbi ki b fhncvc Hgghpvkh  
runownswkwvsh, fxbxl gc xshtgh nctjhn evxk, ckshn`k sxbxk

<sup>1</sup> Phtxb Xfnhpxl xk vxmhk`, L xsxn ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.433, 444 mc 446, Hmnu`h ]h` , 1-[x [xgv,  
scp.1818, 1920 mc 1822æ âCfrcnxddcjw ZI cnß (L cpl wv Crrhv), scp.173æ  
âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.167æ âJhnxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.188æ  
âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.122, 132, 134, 58, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.5æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.128.

i ]i k ncsl xddcjgc jhk`v`y` phrr`, sxb vc fxbxl i ]i k  
ncsl xddcjgc jhk`d`k. C;s phgvh, fxgc-fxgc mc h'hpgr`r i bi kvck  
bi gl c l i fjcgh ughns`k`b.ß

Zl cn vevx...âFed/cj ejl cdxk[c, sckx fwnhol hdh[hy`r!ß

Cgx ukghnh vevx... âZl cn! Fw si vi dhoe` shy (oxghtcjvck  
dhoe`-dhoe` jwj), ]i k;x ukwk fxn pxsscsx sckc ]hjh[hr. Fw 'i k  
ukwk pz;wl cjxkxk si jwkghn`k` l zp;cl gcj ;x, shfhp sckc  
rhdjhs`k. Oedn, Hgghph hkv ugswk! Kc sckxk szbi ki rcfwg  
evxncl , kc vc sckc jhfe ugnhl !ß

Cfw Fc;n ukh vevx... âC'cn l ckxl gc fed/cj ejl csck, ukvh  
sckx fw xac l c[fwn ejl cnx; .ß

Cfw l fedvc {cnhnp ukh vevx... âEd Cfcg-Pcsck! Sckxk dha`k  
hbn`n, fwkghn xsc Rinedaxk – sckxk zb rzml i ki k  
hyshrrhgghn`v`n. Sck ukghn`k fw xavc l hgx; ugvwrghn` jc[ni fc  
mc h'hpgy`h l hgx; vedxgsck. Lck Cfw Fc;nx fw l crhl i ]i k  
vhph ri mmcgx, scfxngx mc h'hp peshf evxncl . Fw xax ukh pcmhgc  
ej mc ukvhk nhb` ug. C'cn sck shy rhgshk mc zl ni k wbwk ugsh,  
fw xac dhgk`b sck ghdxrgx ugh[hrshk. } i k;x sck |edycl fcnxk  
dhoe` scphfcsxsck, ukwkgh rupwl shk mc Xsghl vh [xphv  
fhncsxkvc 'zbcg ;e]l xac l hgx; sck.ß

Cgx vevx... âEd l i [hpxngcn! Hgghpvhk runowk! Hgghp` kcbnc  
hg`k mc L i pcl l cvxk pz;wl cjxkx ukwk emxkvck mc hxgcsxk-  
vck (j`ohn`f) zb emxkxhc mc hxgckxhc h`hnl hd`k! {hl hhj hnh-  
s`kvh ukwk cpgxkx zb phrr`kvhk, l crhl mc l ckbxgcjxkvck  
;ckhngghav`nl hd`k! Vedxk 'zni l , Rwn/hk`k rhnxsx mc jctsn]xsx,  
Hgghp`k vxkxkvc tcrxp, |edycl fcn si kkcxsckc hgx l mc nxd-  
dcjxk xagcnxkc h'hp ughkghn fxbvck vedxgl x?! Hgghph hkv ugswk  
;x, u fxbxl hnhl `bvhv`n! Fegc xsc pcmhdx-kctsc xjhcj ejl cdxk,  
c;s phgvh fw xa sxbxk phrvhk wbrghal hy`k`bh scfcf ugh[hr-  
v`n.ß

Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v vevx... âDh Cgx! C'cn ckshn fw szbgcnx Cfw  
Fc;ngc fed/cjvck rhfhr sckvck eajscdvxgc, ukghnvhk pe] fxnx  
sckxk fhncxvc xojxght ejl cbvx. Gh;xk hnj`r ukghn fed/cj  
ejl xagcn...ß

Cgx emc rhd`vnhhr fed/cj ejl cvx.<sup>1</sup>

Cfw Fc;n {umpcnx fegc vedxn... Thjxl c Cgx mc Bi fednc rhna`

---

<sup>1</sup> Cfw Fc;n {umpcnxkxk âScrxtcß ;xjhfa` Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk âKcp[i g-  
fcghycdc acnpßkvck kcrgck, 2-[x [xgv, scp.2-5.

ncmh 'zni gckgcx I i ahpxvc ejvx;vc pi [nckxk rh`s`kvh  
vhdhk`f vevx... âEd Cfw Fc;n! Kc jeb |edycl fcxk Cpg-fedjxc rhna`  
dina ejvxkb?! Hgghph hkv ugsxw ;x, Hgghph 'zniackc rcvcn Zl cngc  
vhk'al hdh[hyhl !B<sup>1</sup>

Fharh ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxgx... âThjxl c hyghdhk, tcndhv  
evck mc [hl hhj` 'enx rhdjnhk phgvh emvck ]`ov`.B<sup>2</sup>

Dc/rwfx dhb`n...Thjxl c emvck ]`o`f vevx...âDh emvck ]`o`k, dh  
vh Hgghph hkv ugsxw ;x, fha`l ` h]hn, Hgghp vcn'hp`kh khgc  
evcncl !B Ukghn vh, emxk rh`s`kvh ughkghn vh emvck ]`ov`ghn.<sup>3</sup>

L cs/vwx dhb`n...Scrxtcv Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj evxgvx;vck mc fw  
fed/cj jc; 'i ki dekxgcavxngxvx;vck sukn Cgx emvck ]`o`f  
vevx...âFxbxl xaxl xbx cgedpxl xbc ughnhr \w] ejvxkxb, fxbxl gc  
l camcncj ejl cvxkxb, pe] fxn phrr`l `bh nxhdcj ejl cvxkxb!B  
Cfw Fc;n vevx...âFcgx, gh;xk l ck txjkcvc runovwl .B<sup>4</sup>

Lcpb fw phvxscgcncvck sukn Cgx pcn 'e[c Thjxl c xgc  
fxngx;vc ckshn`k rh`ghn`kh 'evxn mc ukghnvkh ;zl c;  
xsjcdxnvx, gh;xk ukghn fegc [hmhf menxnvxgc...âEd |edycl fcxk  
r`b! Hnj`r fxbxl fw ;xax xgc fed/cjxl xb sukh ]hj`fv`n. C`cn  
cl x uygw Cfw Fc;nvck rhfhr fxbc jcnc 'cgscdvx, fxb ukvhk  
i b ]emxnl cbvx;.B Cgx vevx... âDuosh, l ck |edycl fcxk  
[ckhbcsxkx emvc rudwf, ukwk rwsq;ctck xagcnxkx denxkc dejxn-  
l cvck [hl hhj`k dhk`kh 'cgl cgx mc ukghngh pz;wl cj  
fhncsxkvc l i khrxac h`hnl hg` xvxl ?!B Thjxl c vevx... âCfwg-  
Pscck ukh ghdxr ughk xagcnvck fharh pe] kc ejl cdxfvxn...  
Ukghn egc xagn 'znvi gcn ;x, ukghn`k xaxkc Hgghp dejxac[c;vxn.B<sup>5</sup>

L i hmxdc vc Ahl vh ph;xl ughk bhl hk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fxn  
l c;jwf dhb`f pcl fw l cscgckx, pcl vc Dc/rwfxkxk redv  
ejvxdx fharh fxn l cscgckx ohj`nghvnhhr vedxn...âSckxk vi kck;x  
mcbxddcjxkx dhv`l h shg`nhi ... Sxvvr Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycbkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.134, 2-[x [xgv, scp.2-5.

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycbkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.134, 2-[x [xgv, scp.2-5.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxB, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126.

<sup>4</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfB, 1-[x [xgv, scp.414âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjB, 1-[x [xgv, scp.12-14, hbh[`r tcnrgc.

<sup>5</sup> Cfw Fc;n {umpcnx âScrxtcB ;xjh`kvh Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk âKcp[i g-fcgcydc acnpbkvck kcrjck, 6-[` [xgv, scp.5-28.



ugwkhk bhl hk emxkvc ujwnhk` fxn wghyh l xkvxnvxk, ugwk  
Pcsck mc Pisckxk cgxkvck jwjwf Fcvn vzdi ai ki k  
xajxnh; ]ghn`k`k mc vxkvc rhfhr[`gghn`k fxn-fxn emgcnxkc `evxf,  
ukghn` zbi kc jcnct ]hy`n`nv`k. Zb pcdhj dugvha`kgh `evxf  
ukghn` zb jcnctxkc [cgf ejl c; xsjcdxnvxk. Uyghkghn`kgh ukghn`k  
rh`s`kh `evxf |edycl fcnxk shpxfx xgc l i fhxvcdx ;zl c;  
xsjcdxnvxk. Gh;xk vzhv-fea kctcnvck fharh pe] fxn ;cs sck  
l i sfcj [hmhf menl cvx. Zb [hk`l h hkv ugsck! C`cn sck phrr  
ugshdv`k, ukghn sck l i sfcj [hmhf mencnvx. Gh;xk sck fhjxg  
fxn xvvh ejvxk, khl c/gwl mc jhk`kl hb fxn szb vevxk mc  
kcpdcdj redx-l i l ;ik ughk fxn pcvctx xbgcvxk. Lck sckxk  
pcn szbi ki wkwjshl vh, Cfw Si tdhkh vevxdxk szbi  
wkwjl hdh[hyhl . Cfw Si tdhk sckx (Cfw Fc;nxk cgedpxkc)  
jcpnx; ejvx; vc vevxk...âC`cn ukghn`k x]xkvc l zp;cl xnhvc mc cbl shpxfx  
ughk r`no kctcn jh`shdv`l , fw rzml gc l i fhxvcdx evcnvxl !<sup>1</sup>

L i cl l cn Bzpcnxvck ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Hdxac Thjxl edx-  
Bcpnhk`k |edycl fcnx l xnh`s` xgc cghrcvhn Cfw Fc;ngc h`hvn`y`  
l i fhpxscgcnxk fhncsxkvc fegc vedxn! xa...âThjxl c Cfw Fc;ngc  
cghrcgcnxkx ;csvx mc vi kdvhk `evck mhojh rcvcn ukwkg  
vhk`al hv`. U, |edycl fcnvck suknh hjj` hd dhahv`, mthj  
ejvxdx bhl hk cnx ukh jc;gx; vc khl hb r`gv`, suknh vctk ejvx  
mc Cfw Fc;nc ofcn menl cvx. Thjxl c pcdhjvh ughk mhojh  
rcvcn Cgxkxk [hl hhj hnhs`kvh pzn! cjx mhn vx. Hl l h Thjxl c  
mthj evckvck suknh [hl hhj Cgxvck i b ]emxnvxgc.β L i cl l cn  
vedxn... Fxn kctcn Bzpcnxdc vevx...âCgx Cfw Fc;nc hjj` hd  
l i vvcjxkvc fed/cj ejl cvx?β Bzpcnx vevx...âOedn!<sup>2</sup> Kc u, kc vc  
Fckx-Phaxl vck fxn ;cs ukwkg fed/cj ejl cvx. Ukghn Cgxkxk  
fed/cj ejvx;gcnx mhojh rcvcn Cfw Fc;nc fed/cj ejl cvxgc. Cgx  
[hl hhj`k ukvhk i b vzkvcnvxdxkx `znvi ;vc, Cfw Fc;ngc  
nhb`ghal hr l c[fwnxddcxkvc rhgv`.β<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycβkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.67ââMcv/cjw  
Sxttedkβ (Kcsn xfkx L i bhpvl ), scp.182.

<sup>2</sup> âJcdsxnwg-mi swgβ ;xjh`kvh fegc vevxdx redv ugwkw...âOedn, Hghph hkv  
ugswk! Kc u, kc vc Fckx Phaxl vck fin kctcn fed/cj ejl cvx.β

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.448, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, 1825ââScpxpx  
Fwohnxβ, l cyhbx ;xjh`f, 3-[i [xgv, scp.38ââScpxpx L i sgi l β, 1-[x [xgv, scp.72,  
5-[x [xgv, scp.153ââJhnnox xfkx : csxnβ, 5-[x [xgv, scp.285, 286ââXrvi g-tcnxvβ  
(Xfkx Cfvw Ncfxp),, 3-[i [xgv, scp.64ââXfkx Csxnb, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126â

Fcghbunx dhh`n... âCncfgcn l i njcv ugvyw bhl hk Usl hk Cgxkxk dhk`kh 'evcnc; vevx... âEd cl x uygw! Sck Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl cdxc[c, pe] ;cs fw vi al ckgcngc l i phnxfcdc 'ejl cdc[c; ß Fw szbi u rcvcn jc; nhn ejvx ; x, ho`nvh Cgx Cfw Fc; nxk dhk`kh 'evxf ukwkgh fed/cj ejvx. Fw bhl hk l i scgl hkghn ouaphg ugvwghn, [hl hhj l i phnxfc xaxkc [xvvxddcj 'zsjcnvx mc unvw vi bcgxf dugh vi avi .<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Thjxl ckxk mcthj`kvhk mc [hl hhj`k ukvhk i b vzkvcnl csxkvck suknh Cfw Fc;ngc nhb`ghav`, gh; xk fwkwkgh edkx bhl hkvh zb oxghtcjx vzmn kvc |edycl fcnxk mcthj`kvhk suknh ukh rhna`ncmh 'zni gck cl cggcnvck ax;hdcj ejvx. U zbi ki k fc/bx ax;hdcjgcnxkx l capwn âAxraxddcß oi jfcsxkvc fcdhk ejl xavxn ; x, ukw ; xjh`k ho`n`kvh redv evc[cdx; .

---

âAx; hdcjwj-jhgxfß, scp.225-226â âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.122â âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.414â âCj-jckfxpw mcg-xanhtß, scp.250â âCs-scmhxrwg-l wpxrcß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.12â âJhnxowg-ocl xsß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.193â âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.14â âXsjxd/hfß (âCg-xshfcßkxk phaxdcsxkvc), 2-[x [xgv, scp.244â âJhnxox Cfxg-txvhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.156â âCg-fcv/w mcj-jhnxoß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.66â âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.586â âWsvwg-yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.332 (Rhpnc ]h`â âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126â âCg-rcvxnß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.102 (Xfkx Pcbi xk âCg-tcsßßxkvck kcrngck), scp.96-97. Fxb fw pcvxsx r`sh ac; xgv redv ejvx; .

<sup>1</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.587.

# CFW FC: NC FED/CJVCK XLJXKH EVCKGCN

## 1-Tcnmcj xfkx CI n

Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß ; xjhƒ kvh dhb`n... Tcnmcj xfkx CI n Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh evckgcncvck xv. U, pcl xk ; csvxn ; x, |edycl fcnxk zki kvc [xphv evxn mc Hgghp dugwkvh [xphvh zbi xgc x; x hj h\hn`nv`. Pcn xg Kcogcvc l xk vcmc di ; i ownl hk` scvcr, dhowv bc; hj menxnvx. Tcnmc zb rzml i ki k fzdi di mc Cgx ™ -`k scphfcgcnxkvck xv mc {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkvc ukwgh fñ'c xv.ß Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn fwkvhk suknh vh l nmckxk Cfw Fc; nc fed/cj xaxkvc ukh ; zl c; evck fc/bx ckshnghn` l cbcl l cj ejl csxkx vc redv ejl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

## 2-Ohgxv xfkx Scxv CI cmx

U, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk Dcl ckxk Sck/h acpcnxkvck; x xa]xgcncvck xv. |edycl fcn mthj evckvck suknh u x; x rhnvha` Cfhk mc Zl cngc fxngx; vc zb xaxkvck hdn`g`f`enx rhd`jv`. Cfw Fc; n ukghnh vevx... âSxhc kc ugl wavwn ; x, xa denxkbvck rhd`jl`s`k`b? Pe] ; cs |edycl fcnxk jc/dxk ejvxdx xa]xgcncvck vhph ghdxrgx vedxgvxn, zb xa denxkxhc rhd`v`k!ß Ukghn vevxgc... âFxb âUmpedpcß zmghvghn`kvhk`r mc |edycl fcnvck suknh pe] ; csgc xagcl xnx; .ß<sup>2</sup>

Ohgxv mc ukwk rhnvha` Cfhk fñ l i vvcj Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvxcn. Ohgxv Fckx-Phaxl c vedxnvx... âSxb hyh[` c; xf l edmcxkx vcnl xsxkxb, fxb dhgk`b sxhc jhfedx; .ß<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß, scp.590â âWsvwg-yhfcßvc vedxgn... Tcnmcj xfkx CI n Ckshnx Crcfcvc, Fcncv mc ukvhk suknh |edycl fcngc dhkha` ugl wavw.

<sup>2</sup> Ohgxv xfkx Scxv xfkx Hs Xsghl` rcfwg evck i ]i k[i, dhowv vzni k[i hvhl v`n. Xfkx Ri jedfc dhb`n... âU, Cfw Fc; nvck rhfhr xl hk`cjxnl xavx.ß Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv vedxn... âU, pcl xk ; csgcnvckvxn ; x, Pcfcaxsjkh px[ncj ejl xavx, |edycl fcn ukw mc rhnvha`k` Dcl ckxk Sck/h acpcnxkxk mc Lcbpc[xk scvcrccgcnxkx ju`ghl hr i ]i k jc/dxk ejl xavx. Suknh phl`s` fñ denvc rhd`jv`ghn. Suknhghn Ahl h`ejvxcn mc unhvh zgvi ni gvi gc. Ohgxv 13-[i xgxk [cl hvxdwg-cmmcg hd`k`k ho`n`kh x; x`e[c rhgl`a fhbhn`i ki l [khvxkvc acphvcjc ]hjv`. Fho...âXsjd/hfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.398, 400â âCg-xshfcß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.406â âWsvwg-yhfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.82â âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 6-[` [xgv, scp.13 mc 16.

<sup>3</sup> âWsvwg-yhfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.82â âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.135, L xsxn ]h`.

Ohgxv x; x hd Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvx. U vedxnvx...  
å|edycl fcn l ckc cl xngx; menl xavx mc Hgghp ukwk [hk`k`  
hghkh rcvcn l ckx fw xavck 'zji nl cl xavx.ß

Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfgc Usl hk 'zni ackvc Ohgxv ukghnh  
vedxnvx... åEd Cfvi Lckht zmghvghn! Pcrxrcjck, sxb zb  
phrr`k`bvhk cg ]c; vxkxb ;x, fharhghn` ukh ph; xl ;csxgsxk!ß  
Cfw Fc; n fw szbc ]uo vh cpcl xddcj menl cvx, gh; xk Zl cn zb  
rcgfkvc ukh rhna` ;xk shoghv`.¹ Fxn 'i k Ohgxv Cgx ™ -`k  
dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx...å" cg sckxkgc fed/cj evxl , Hgghph hkv ugsww  
;x, fw [hl hj hnhs`kvh pe] ;cs Li pcl l cvxk l crhl `kh  
sckvck hnj`r ghdxr vedxgvxn.ß²

Fckx-Phaxl Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj evck bhl hk Ohgxv vc ukwkgh  
fed/cj ejvx.³

Fwkvhk suknh Cfw Fc; n unvwkw Ahl h 'zkvcnvx, Ahl `k  
vznvc fvxkc xg; vctc Ohgxv xfkx Scxvx mhgx jc/dxk ejvx. Zl cn  
pcl xac ukh vedxnvx... åSckc txghk-txghk szbgcn vedck fvn hvhl `  
ph; xl mc mhgx jc/dxk evxnsck?!ß Cfw Fc; nc u rcvcn jcbdxr  
'zsjcnvx ;x, ho`nvh Cfw Fc; n ukw xavck 'zji nvi mc Bedv xfkx  
Cfw Si tdhk` ukwk denxkc jc/dxk ejvx.⁴

3-Sc/v xfkx l fhvc⁵

---

¹ åJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.586, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2079æ  
åJcpbxfw jhnxox xfkx Csh; xnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.51æ åCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, 588-  
[x scpxtcvc vedxgvxn... åOhgxv xfkx Scxv fvn l i vvcj Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck  
xl jxkh ejvx.ß

² åJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126.

³ åWsvwg-yhfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.82. Fwkwk cjnhtg` xbhph` åKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk  
acnpxkxk 1-[x [xgvxkxk 135-[x scpxtcxkvc, Cfw Fc; n {umpcnxkxk åScrxtcß  
;xjh`kvk kcrgek redv ugwk l wavwn.

⁴ åJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.586, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2079æ  
åJcpbxfw jhnxox xfkx Csh; xnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.51æ åCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv,  
scp.588-vc vedxgvxn... åOhgxv xfkx Scxv fvn l i vvcj Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjvck  
xl jxkh ejvx.ß

⁵ Sc/v xfkx l fhvc Crcfcvc mc |edycl fcnxk fi ji k rcbmcgcnxkvc –  
Fcvnvck fharh – xajxn; ejl xavx. Fcvn vzdia kvc vc ugwf-ugl hl hs`  
fhncvc xojxght mhnv`n. U, scohmcjgx mc cgxh]`r fvn ;xax vxv. Lc; ;ckxk  
tcjpxkvc ckshn`k fhdnhrvhn` ugl wavw. U, åfw 'i k l i phnxfc 'i ki vi n, egc  
fvn 'i kvi n ;x, Pcnc l cpgx csxn ugh[hrß – vedckvc |edycl fcn fhdnhy`  
ukvhk hg`f ukwk uygw Redsc menl xavx. U, Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj ejl cvx mc 15-  
[x xgvx x; x uo mhsxjcsxgc zgvi ni gvi , suknh vh Pcmhnxkvc vctk evxgvx. Fho...

Dhbl `aghn ; x, oxghtcjxk rhgxf vcsjcsx fxn l i vvcj Sc/v xfkx l fhvcdc cpcl xddcj menl cvx, hl l h suknh ukwk hnv`k[h hvhl 'zkvcnvxgc n ; x, 'cgxf fed/cj ejxsk. U vevx...âH'hp ugwk! Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, fijik uoghn`l` sxbxk rcgfkxkbc shk[l hd`k[h, kxbcl xk w[wkw rhk`k`bh suol hd`k[h, cgxl vc; x r`g`k[l` fha`k`bh ekvxn l cdxk[c, hxgcl mc hnv`[`g`l ughk rupwl ghn`l gh fxngx;vc sxbxkgc mwnwal hd`k[h fed/cj ejl cdc[cdcl . Hgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn fijik [xkgcn mc xkshkghn sxbxkgc fxn ugshghn vh, sxbxkgc fed/cj ejl cdc[cdcl ! Hgghp`l`k 'zni ai kc 'evxf Ukwkgh peshf`l` fxgl cdxk[c, sckxkgc fed/cj ejl cdc[cdcl .<sup>1</sup>

Fw szbgcn Cfw Fc;nc ]hjkh bhl hk Zl cnc vevx...âFed/cj ejl cdxk[c ukvhk cg ]c;l clß Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v vevx...âU, i sdhk; hng`r mc xkhv; hng`r evxn, zgi k[cdc rcvcn sxbxkgc fed/cj ejl cb. Ukwk cpgx-cdhg` mc ; zl c;]xgcnx zgl cdxk[c, u vh zgvi ni gl cdc[c;vx n. Fegc xsc, ukw fuaghd`k, fw xa sxbc fxn bxdhk ]hjv`n l hb. U jc; fxn kctcnvx n.ß Ukghn vh Fcaxn xfkx Sc/vxk tx; nxkx rcfwg ejvxgc n mc Sc/v xfkx l fhvcdc cpcl xddcj menl cvxgc n. Cfw Fc;n zgvi; vck suknh mc Zl cn oxghtcj ]hjv`y` mhojh rcvcn Sc/v ukghngh fxngx;vc [hl hhj mc [i l c khl hbghn`kvh, pc[vc mc fharh sctcnvc xajxn h; ejl xnvx.<sup>2</sup>

Zl cn oxghtcj ]hjkh bhl hk L cvxkc dugwkvh ukwkgh rhna`gha`f vevx...âEd Sc/v! Fw rcvcn xagcnxk fcs vedxgl x?ß

U vevx...âSckxk fw xagcnxk fcs vedxgl x?ß

Zl cn vevx...âU szbgcnx sck vel xavxkl x?ß

Sc/v vevx...âFcgx, l ck pcl xk acoscl . Xkvx oxghtcj sckc ]hjl`av`n, Hgghph hkv ugswk, sckxk vusjwk sckvck vhph semxl gx xvxl Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, l ck sckxkgc dhkha` ugl hy` xsjcl xncl !ß

Zl cn vevx...âFxn xgc rukaw ugl hr xsjcl cdck unhvhk 'ejl cgxvxn!ß

---

âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.23-37ââCg-xshfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.27-28ââ{ cl pcncß (Xfkx Pcbl ), scp.65.

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.459, Hmnu`h ]h` , 1-[x [xgv, 2844ââJhnxox Xfkx Csx nß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.126ââ: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.134, 2296-[`pxvxsââCg-xl hl cjw mcs-sxdhscjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.101ââCssxncj i g-Pcgcfxddcß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.397.

<sup>2</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.168 mc fharh l ckfcgcn.

Sc/v âLckxl fw xac e/jxnhb`l duovwn, hl l h jebgx; gc sckvck dhoa` fxn acosxk rukawgwywkh 'evc[cdcl ß - vevx mc ]uo ;e]l cvck Ahl h jcnct dugh vi avi.<sup>1</sup>

Fcghbunxkxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx... Sc/v xfkx l fhvc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl cdx f Ahl h jcnct 'ejvx. Zl cn ukwk vhg`k[h fxn kctcn 'zkvcnvx mc vevx ;x, ukwk dugw i bcnxkvc vhdhk`f fed/cj ejl cdc ]hy`n. C'cn xl jxkh ejsc, Hgghpvhk ukw zgvi nl cdc ;zl c; xsjc.

Pcl xk acos dugh vi avi mc Sc/vx Pcmhnxk fhyghn`kvhk fxnkvck 'znvi.<sup>2</sup> Ukw Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjc vc/mcj ejvx; vc, u vevx... âLck Ri nedagc pe] mhoj fed/cj ejl cncl !ß U ;xax vevx... âSckx zgvi ncnc! !ß Sc/v vevx... âPcjjh l ckx zgvi nsck vclß U ;xax vevx... âl l l cjxk tx; xn fxngdxkvc ugvwyw aedgcnvck ohnx[ ugl wshkl `?ß Sc/v vevx... âFed/cj fhncsxkvc, fcgx, l ck ohnx[ ugl wahl !ß Fw bhl hk u ;xax fxn uo ]`ohn`f Sc/vx rcjgc dejxnvx.<sup>3</sup>

âJcfsxncji g-cmhl ß ;xjh`f kvh vedxgx... Ukghn Lcpcl l cv xfkx Lcsgcl c Ckshnxkx 'zkvcnvxgcnc mc u, Sc/vx fxn uogh mwnwf zgvi nvi .

Vedxgl xavxn ;x, u bhl hk Ohgxv xfkx MCGXV Ahl vh xv x mc fw xavc ukh ;zl c; ejl xavx.<sup>4</sup>

Lcs/vwx dhb`n... Sc/v xfkx l fhvc fed/cj ejl cdx f Ahl h jcnct 'ejvx mc px[ncjxk 15-[x xgxkvc unhvh rcjgc dejxnxgvx.<sup>5</sup>

Xfkxw Cfvx Ncfxpxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx... Sc/v xfkx l fhvc khl c/gwl fxn acos jcnctxkvck hj`ghk uoh pcvct ugwf zgvi , [xkgcn ukh hyghd`f vevxgcnc...

وَقَتَلْنَا سَيِّدَ الْخَزْرَجِ سَعْدَ بْنَ عُبَادَةَ وَرَمَيْنَاهُ بِسَهْمَيْنِ فَلَمْ نَخْطِ فُرَادَهُ

Fxb Ocbnc[xk fzdi di Sc/v xfkx l fhvckx

Rcgfxkc x; x uo shk[hnh r zgvi nvi ; , scpmc vc dug menl cvx; ß

Xfkx Sc/v fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Sc/v xfkx l fhvc, hdhr dugwkh

<sup>1</sup> âCj-Jcfcrhjxß (Xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x pxssc, scp.145â âJcpbxfw jhnnox xfkx Csh; xnß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.90â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.134, 2296-[` kzl nc... âCsshxncji g-Pcgcfxddcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.397.

<sup>2</sup> Pcgcf l ckjcrcsxkx l capwn fxn dengcnxkvckvxn. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvhkß).

<sup>3</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.589â âCg-xrvi g-tcnxvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.64-65, hbh[`r xojxgthgh.

<sup>4</sup> âJcfsxncji g-cmhl ß, Jephnhk ]h` , scp.32.

<sup>5</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.301, 304.

<sup>6</sup> âCg-xrvi g-tcnxvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.259-260.

'ejl c; i]i k ]wown fñ denvc ujwnvwyw bhl hk ukh swx-rcsv  
evxgvx mc egc unhvh vh [hk menvx.<sup>1</sup>

âWsvwg-yhfcßvc fegc dñb`g`n... Sc/v kc Cfw Fc;ngc, kc vc  
Zl cngc fed/cj ejl cdx f Ahl h 'ejvx mc px[ncjxk 15-[x xgxkvc  
vi kdhvhk 'ejvdx mhojh rcvcn Pcmhnxkvc rhgv`. Ukwk  
'zdcnl xa mc rhnhgl `a [ckhbcxkxk ujwnvwyw denvc  
jh`gl hs`kvh xojxght duovwn. Ukwk zgi l i kvck dhgk`b  
rwdwvhk fñ kctcnxk ----- vevxdx mhoj ofcn jwjvwghn. ...Hl l h  
pe] ;csx 'znl cvxgcñ.<sup>2</sup>

Fegcgx;gc, Sc/v xfkx l fhvckxk zl ni sukh ]hjv`. Ukwk rcjgc  
dejnxgl csx oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk jhnxo]xgcñxkxk kcbcnxkvc  
ouah`cgl cb fñ xa ugvywkvvhk ]uoghñ ukw redv ejl cl xa,  
fc/bxgcñx vc ukwk ke[c rcjgc dejnxgl csxkx fcdhk ejl cl xa mc  
ukw [xkgcñxk fudkwkh hjl `aghn.<sup>3</sup> Fwkwkgh fegc, ukghn [xkgcngc  
Sc/v xfkx l fhvc hnhs`kvh vial ck]xgdxk scfcfxkx fcdhk  
ejl cl xa, ukghn`k uow kc i]i k Sc/v xfkx l fhvckxk i ncdxkc  
shk[v`y`k` vel cl xa, fharh scphfcgcnxk kc i]i k fw uovhk  
hl hkvh rhgl hs`kh csgh juowkl hl `aghn! C`cn ukghn fw  
ctshkckx ;hl xggcavxnf â[xkgcñxk shgepgcnx Sc/vxk xl jxkh  
ejl csxkx ouaghl hv`rghn`kh 'znc ukh x;x uo mwnvwghn mc ukwk  
rcgfoxkx pcvct jwjl hrvh scpmc dug menl cvxgcñß - vescdvxcñ,  
vph dhóa` ughnv`...

Sc/vxk fedcj ejl cl csxkx ncmhdcj evckgcñ...

1-Xfkx Sc/v zbi ki k âJcfcñhjß ;xjh`kvh, 2-Xfkx {cnxn  
âJhnxoß ;xjh`kvh, 3-Fcghbunx âCkshfwg-canhtß`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc, 4-  
Xfkx Cfv i g-Fxnn âXsjxd/hfß ;xjh`kvh, 5-Xfkx Cfvw Ncf fxp  
âXrvi g-tcnxvß ;xjh`kvh, 6-Xfkx Ri jedfc âCg-xl hl cjw mcs-  
sxdhscjß ;xjh`kvh (1-[x [xgv, scp. 9)æ 7-L cs/wvx âLwnw[wb-  
bcpcfß ;xjh`kvh, 8-Xfkx Pc[ñ Csrcghkx âCg-xshfcß ;xjh`kvh  
(2-[x [xgv, scp. 28)æ 9-L wpxffwvvxk Jcfcnx âNxdhbwk-ki bñcjß  
;xjh`kvh (1-[x [xgv, scp. 168)æ 10-Xfkx Csxñ âWsvwg-yhfcß  
;xjh`kvh (3-[i [xgv, scp. 222)æ 11-âJhnxowg-ocl xsß ;xjh`kvh, 12-  
Cgx xfkx Fwnphkwvvxk âCssxcjwg-Pcgcfxddcß ;xjh`kvh (2-[i

<sup>1</sup> âCj-Jcfcñhjxß (Xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.145æ âCg-l chnxtß (Cfw  
Pckxtc Vxkcmcnx), scp.113.

<sup>2</sup> âWsvwg-yhfcß, Sc/v xfkx l fhvckxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

<sup>3</sup> L cscgck, L i pxffwvvxk Jcfcnx âNxdhbwk-ki bñcjß ;xjh`kvh, Xfkx  
Cfv i g-Fxnn vc âXsjxd/hfß ;xjh`kvh.

[xgv, scp. 369 mc 397)æ 13-Cfw Fc;n {umpcnx âCs-Scrxtcß  
;xjhƒkvh Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvxk âKcp[i g-fcghycßdc dhbv'y  
acnpvck kcrgek.

Redv ugwkhhghn Cfw Fc;nk oxghtcjx mc ukwkgk ke[c fed/cj  
ugwkl hs`k`k oi ghscsx vx.<sup>1</sup>

#### ZLCNXK OXGHTCJX MC UKWKGH FED/CJ

Cfw Fc;n [hk i sjc ughkvh Usl hk` ]hy`n`f ocgmcjvc ukh  
vevx... âDhb... Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpxl . Fw, Cfw Ri phtckx  
uygw Cfw Fc;nk I i scgl hkghn ughk mcsxddcjvx. HI I h  
fc/v... Sukn pwavhk 'ejvx. Usl hk fegc dhbv`... âHI I h fc/v...  
Lck ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf` sxbc [hxxaxxl jc/dxk ejvxl mc sxbxk  
phrr`k`bv pe] kcdx csxn'cl cvxl .ß

Cfw Fc;n hd`ghkvh vevx... âDhbv`rghn`k` I ckxl i ]i k uow!ß  
Usl hk dhbv`y`k` uowvwrh Cfw Fc;n jc; fxn vedcnc; cghmc  
ejvx... âVe 'zni I , I ckxl pwavhk 'ejvxdxl mc epjxl hg i bnc  
zgi I i I 'zbgckxgvdx mhoj [hl hhj`k (oxghtcj fhncsxkvc) xojxght  
evc[cdxkvck runovw?ß Vevx... âFcgx.ß Cfw Fc;n vevx... âHgghp  
Xsgl mc I i scgl hkghn`k jcntxkvck sckc c[nx-oedxn mensxk!ß  
Fwkvhk suknh pcl xk dhb`k` jcsvxrgcvx.

ZI cnxk fhncsxkvc vc dhbl `aghn ;x, u, [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvh  
zbi ki k cg hyh[` xgc ujwnl wavw. Cfw Fc;nk rwghl ` oxghtcj  
I c;jwfw xgc ukwk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx... âEd [hl hhj! Eaxvx mc  
Ncswgwgghp`k ocgxtcsxkxk szbgcnxkc xjhcj evxk. U vedxn ;x, I ck  
sxbxk fhncxbvc pe] fxn oednx csxn'cl cl xacl .ß<sup>2</sup>

Cfw Pcts ZI cnxk fwnhvh jwjvwyw I zmre xgc |edycl fcnxk  
mcsxddcjxkxk dhb`gl hs` bhl hk` jwjvwyw I zmre hnhs`kvh kc  
rcvcn ;cs; xk tcnrgcn mhnv`n!!!

#### USL HKGH FED/CJ MC AWNH

Xfkx Cfvx Ncfxp âXrvi g-tcnxvß ;xjhƒkvh dhb`n... Ocghtc  
ZI cn bcncfjgckvx; vck suknh ukh vevxgc.â: ha zbi k i ]i k fxn  
[hxxaxk jc/dxk evcdvxk!ß U vevx... âC'cn Cfw I fedvc {cnnhp shy  
ugshdv`, ukw [hxxaxk jc/dxk evcnvxl , Hgghp vh I ckvck (kc  
i ]i k fegc ejl xa ugvywyl w) sunwashdv`, vedcnvxl ... Sckxk

<sup>1</sup> Ukwk cjhgt` xbhph`kh âCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhß ;xjhƒk`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc  
fhoh fxgcnxkxb.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2138.



|edycl fcnxk fwdwnl wavwn ;x, âu, fw i l l cjk  
 cl hkcjvhn`v`n.ß C'cn Cfw Pi bedtckxk rwghl` Shgx shy  
 ugshdv`, ukw [hcxaxk jc/dxk evcnvxl . Hgghp vh l ckvck (kc  
 i]i k fegc ejl xa ugvwywl w) sunwashdv`, fegc [hmfh mencnvxl ...  
 Sckxk |edycl fcnxkxk fegc vevxdxkx eajvxl ...âShgx Hgghp` egc  
 semxn ;x, c'cn Ukvhk runol hshdv` vh, dekc vc xjhcxsbxg;  
 ejl cbvx.ß¹ Ukh vevxgc.âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! : ha mcsxddcj  
 evcdvxlß U vevx... âSxbxkgc ejvxdxl szpfcjgcncvck suknh fegc  
 kc]x[cdc 'cgl xavxl ;x, sxbxk i]i k sxbx phrr dugh h\hnh[hy`kh  
 i l xvmhn ugvwywl fxn acosx ncpfcn jc/dxk evxl (fwkwkgh Cgx  
 ™ -h xahnc evxnvx), hl l h 'znvll ;x, kc shyg`y`l vh, kc vc  
 zgckvck suknh fwkh scfnxl ]hjl hb, vzbc fxgl cncl ...ß

Fcggbunx kcrj evxn ;x, Zl cn fegc vevx...âCgx, Usl hk, Jcgpc,  
 Bi fedn, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt mc Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs`  
 l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k.ß Ukghn` ]hy`nv`ghn, hl l h Zl cn  
 ukghn`k x]xkvc Cgx mc Usl hkvhk fharh pe] ;csgc vkh`al hv`.  
 Cmmcg[c Cgxdc vevx... âEd Cgx! Fcg;c vc fwkghn sckxk  
 |edycl fcngc ughk rupwl gwykw, ukwk ;i nc;ckx ugl hy`k`,  
 Hgghp`k sckc menvdx egl mc txrp l crhl `k` jeb fxn bhl hkvh  
 wkvwvf ukw ncl x ac;xgvc jhk`l hs`kghn. Fegc xsc, c'cn oxghtcj  
 ]hjv`ksh, ukwk fhncsxkvc Hgghpvhk runolß Suknh Usl hk`  
 ]hy`n`f vevx...âEd Usl hk! Fcg;c fw rzml sckxk |edycl fcnxk  
 ;i nc;ckx ugl hy`k` mc sckxk dha`k` ncl x ac;xgvc jhk`dhghn.  
 Fegc xsc, c'cn fw l crhl h ]hjshk, Hgghpvhk runo mc Cfw  
 L i edj jhdths`k` [hl hhj`k fudkwkh l xkvxn cß Suknh vevx...  
 âSi pedfx l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k.ß U 'cgvx; vck suknh Zl cn  
 vevx... âl ] 'i k [hl hhjgh fxngx; vc khl hb r`g, fw acosgc vc  
 ocgmcj fxn emvc rhgl hg`v`nghn ;x, zb x]gcnxkvck ughk fxn  
 kctcnxk oxghtcj fhncvc nhb`g`yh 'cgsxkgcn. Pcn ;cs ukghngh  
 l i ohgxtcj ejsc, fudkwkw mwnwkß Ukghn Zl cnxk dhk`kvhk  
 'ejvx; vck suknh vevx...âC'cn hgk` h]`r ughk acos (dc/kx Cgx) fw  
 xax zpvcsxkc hgsh, [hl hhj` vi b dugh pxvhdcj evc[c; vx.ß²

âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß ;xjh`kvh vedxgn ;x, Zl cn fegc vevx...

<sup>1</sup> âXrvi g-tcnxvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.284, fxb ukw r`sh ac;xgvc redv ejvx; .

<sup>2</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.16. Fwkh dho`k ughk fxn l c/kh Xfkx  
 Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ;xjh`kvh (3-[i [xg, 1-[x pxssc, scp.247) Zl cnxk jcn[i l edx-  
 phg`kvhæ âXsjd/hfß ;xjh`kvh mc âL i kjcocfi : ckbi g-i l l hgß, 4-[i [xgv,  
 scp.429-vh l zm[wvwn.

âHggph oedxn mensxk, c'cn ukghn l sedgc/kx (dc/kx Cgx) ph;xl  
 jc/dxk ejscgc ukghn` phrr dugh ke[c pxvhdcj ejvxdxkx  
 'znc[c;gcn. Pcjjh c'cn r`g`k[ ukghn`k fudwkghn`kvh ugsh fegc!ß  
 Lcpcl l cv xfkx : c/f vedxn ;x, l ck sunwavwl ...âUkwk fegc  
 ugvywkw fxgc-fxgc kc i]i k fw mcbxtcdc jc/dxk ejl xnsck?ß  
 Zl cn vevx...âUkghn` fwnhol hy`l `k scfcfx fw vxv ;x, l ckvck  
 dhoo` ughk acos ukghn` fuaghl `av`.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fcghbunx âCkshfwg-canhtß ;xjh`kvh Mhrxvxc kcrgek  
 ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Zl cn zb [hkxaxkx fhncsxkvc fxn szb vevx. Ukh  
 vevxgc...âUsl hk` ke[c, l csgpcj 'zni nsck?ß Vevx...âC'cn ukw  
 se]scl , Cfw Lwedj zmghvghn`k` [hl hhj`k fudkwkh  
 l xkvxnc[c;vxnlß Vedxgvx...âBi fedn ke[c?ß Vevx...âNhb` ughk  
 phgvh l z/l xkvxn, rcbcfgckckvc ;htxn!ß Ukh vedxgvx...âJcgpc  
 ke[c?ß Vevx...âUkwk fwnkw hxl hkghnvh, zmncjx xsc swvhv`n!ß  
 Vedxgvx...âSc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs ke[c?ß Vevx...âU pcl xac  
 i sdhk;hn vcsjc xgcvxnl Ukwk i]i k fxn ;ckv fegc hnj`rv`n.ß  
 Sunwavwghn...âCfvi n-Ncpl hk ke[c?ß Vevx...âUkwk i]i k zb  
 hxgcsxkx vughkv`nl hs` ;xthdcjvxnl.ß<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf bcncfjgckck  
 bhl hk Si pedfc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, l i ph[xn mc ckshn  
 fzdi ;gcnxkx ukwk dhk`kh ]hy`ns`k. Ukghn 'cgvxdx bhl hk vevx...  
 âL ck sxbxk xaxkxbx hgj` kctcngx; l i ph[xn awnhs`kh pcmhgc  
 evxncl ;x, |edycl fcn mthj evck bhl hk ukghnvkh nhb` vxv.  
 Fwkghn` fxn denc ju`ghdh[hyhl ;x, zb hnhghn`kvhk sxbxk i]i k  
 fxn xl hl se]sxkgcn.ß Suknh ukghn`k hv`k` shdv` mc Cfw Jcgpc  
 Bedv xfkx Scpg Ocbnc[xdc vevx...âCkshnvkh cggx kctcnx se] ;x,  
 scxkxgc fxngx;vc ugswkghn. Lck mthj evckvck suknh fw hgj`  
 kctcnx mhvhn evxk ;x, zb hnhghn`kvhk fxnxkx i l l cjc xl hl  
 se]sxkgcn. Zb xaxkxbx i ] 'i kvck hnj`r jc/oxnc shgl hd`k.ß

Si pedfc vc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ukghn fxn xl hl se]l c;vc  
 nhb`g`yh 'cgxk[cdc rcvcn i ] 'i k [hl hhj khl hb` r`gs`k. Fw  
 bhl hk Jcgpc unhvh vedxgvx mc zb l i g;i kvc – Scnhjvh vxv.<sup>3</sup>  
 Fwkh 'znc vc Zl cn vevx...âC'cn fw i ] 'i k cnbxkvc Jcgpc 'cgsc

<sup>1</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x ]h\, 2-[x [xgv, scp.95, L xsxn ]h\, 1373-[i px[nx  
 rcl cnx xgx.

<sup>2</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.17.

<sup>3</sup> Scnhj Jhxt scl jxkvc ughk fxn vhy`k hv`v`n. Fharh fxn zg;ckxk fw hvvh  
 ugvywkw redv ejl xagcn. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkh.ß)

pe], c'cn 'cgl csc, ukvhk suknh 'zbgcl cdxk mc xax sukh  
 ]hjv'n'f nhb`ghav`y`k`b acosgc fed/cj evxk. Pcn ;cs sxbxkgc  
 l i ohgxtcj ejsc, fudkwkw mwnwk.ß Nhm x vedxn... Jcgpckxk  
 hnv`k[h fxn kctcn 'zkvcnvxgc ;x, ukw ]hy`ns`k mc jc/[xgx ughnhr  
 zbi ki dejxnsxk. Gh;xk u, Zl cnxk mthj`kvhk mc [hl hhj`k  
 Usl hkgh fed/cj ejl csxkvck suknh Lcvxkcdc ]hjv` mc emxkv  
 ujwnwf vevx... âLckxl ;xl xgcngc bunh;`g`rgh vkh`al hr ughn?ß  
 Usl hk ukwk dhk`kh 'cgckvc, Jcgpck ukh vevx...âC'cn ukw rcfwg  
 ejl cscl , ncvv evc[c; sck?ß Vevx...âFcgx.ß Jcgpck vevx...âFegc xsc,  
 l ck ukw xl bhghv`l .ß Suknh Usl hkgh fed/cj ejvx.<sup>1</sup>

Ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, Cfvi gghp xfkx Sc/v xfkx Scncp fegc  
 vedxn l xa... Lck pcl xac fw xaxk \ubwgh[hy`kvhk runownvwl .  
 Kcphdcj, Jcgpck fegc ejvx mc rupwl gwr cghrcgcnx dhnhjv`.  
 Usl hk vhl ukw cbxbgcdxnvx, hl l h l i phsxncdc vi avi ;vc,  
 [hl hhj x]cnxsxkvck ukwk cgedpxkc ck ]uo vi al ck ;csxgck acos  
 Jcgpck ugvw.<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Sc/vxk fegc ncmhdcj ejvxdx kerg ugwkwn... Zl cn vevx...  
 âAwnhk`k hbg`rvh ughkghn` ]uogwrvh ughkghn`kh jhfe ugl hg`v`n.  
 Pcn ;cs sxbxkgc l i ohgxtcj ejsc, fudkwkw mwnwk!ß<sup>3</sup>

Cfw Liokctvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... âZl cn awnh  
 i bmgcnxkc 'zsjcnxa menl xavx ;x, i ] 'i k zb xagcnx fhncsxkvck  
 l camcncj h`hns`kghn. C'cn x;x kctcn fxnxkc mc vx'cn x;x kctcn  
 fharhs`kh nhb`g`r menscgcn, dekxvck l camcncjc fhaghs`kghn.  
 C'cn vznv kctcn fxnxkc nhb`ghash mc fxn kctcn xl jxkh ejsc, u  
 vznv kctcngc ugswkghn. Hl l h c'cn i ] kctcn fxn jcnctvc, i ]  
 kctcn xsc fharh jcnctvc ugsh, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Utmwk  
 ugvwyw vcsjcvc ugswkghn. } i k ;x u, vxkvck mc zb nc/dxkvck e/jx-  
 l hvg`acos mc l i scgl hkghn i ] i k se]xgl c;vc cl hkcjvhnv`n.ß<sup>4</sup>

Pi ahl xfkx Sc/v, Bedv xfkx Csgcl vck, u vh hjhs`kvhk  
 ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Zl cn fegc vevx... âl ]-i ] nhb`g`yh 'cgscgc,

<sup>1</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.18. Pcl xk l cbl wk âXrvi g-tcnxvß  
 ;xjh`kvh vh (3-[i [xgv, scp.72) mhnv`n.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.20.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.18.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.19. Pcl xk l cbl wkh dho`k fxn xthvc âXrvi g-tcnxvßvc  
 (3-[i [xgv, scp.74) vc redv ugwkl wavwn.

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k ugvyw vcsjcdc xjhcj evxk.<sup>1</sup>

Dc/rwfxkxk âJhnxoß ; xjhfkvh (2-[x [xgv, scp.160) mc Fcghbunxk  
âCkshfwg-canhtß ; xjhfkvh (5-[x [xgv, scp.15) ncmhdcj evxngcn ; x,  
ZI cn vevx... âFzdi ; gcnvck fc/bxgcnx vedxngcn ; x, âCfw Fc; nxk  
fed/cjx tcgjc (zg]i gi f-fx]xgl cl xa) ugvw mc Hgghp ukwk acnnxkx  
i l l cjvck wbhrgHAV`nv`. ZI cngc fed/cj vc l camcncjsxb ugvw.ß  
Fwkh 'znc vc l ckvck suknh fw xa awnhdh pcmhgc evxgl cgxvxn.  
C'cn vznv kctcnxk nc/dx fxn ugsh, rhghk x; x kctcn vc u vznv  
kctcnc jhfe ugl hg`v`n. C'cn i ] kctcn-i ] kctcn ugshghn, Cfvi n-  
Ncpl hk`k ugvyw vcsjcdc jhfe ugwk mc ukwk szbgcnxkx eavvxf  
xjhcj evxk. C'cn Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fxn cgxkx vx'cnxkc mwnsh vh,  
ukh xjhcj evxk.ß

L i j j c r x P x k v x â: ckbi g-i l l hgß ; xjhfkvh (3-[i [xgv,  
scp.160) L cpcl l cv xfkx {i fednvck, u vh hjhs`kvhk ncmhdcj  
evxn ; x, ZI cn fegc vevx... âC'cn Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fxn cgxkx  
vx'cnxkc mwnsh vh, ukh fed/cj evxk.ß

Csgcl vck ncmhdcj evxn ; x, ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf vevx... âU ; csgc  
fed/cj evxk ; x, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt ukwkgh fed/cj  
ejl xavxn. Pcn ; cs vc xl jxkh ejsc, fudkwkw mwnwk.ß

Fi j i k fw j c / ; xvgcnvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, ocgxtc ZI cn oxghtcjc  
khl xbcvgx; xaxkx mc ocgxtc se]xgl csxkx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx  
Umtwk xojxdhn`kh menl xa mc ukwkgh nhb`ghal `av` ; x Aed-  
oedkxk (Cfw Fc; ngc ZI cnxk) jwvvyw dugw fed/cjxk acnjx rcnbn  
mensxk. Ukghn dhoe` fxgnvxgcn ; x, XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Aedoedkxk  
cl cg mc nctjhn`kh cl cg ejl cdx Hgghp`k : xjhfk mc |edycl -  
fcnxk si kkcsxkc cl cg ejl c;gc edkx scmxdccvc jwjl hrvhk  
xl jxkh evc[c; , hl l h Usl hk ukw rcfwg evc[c; vxn. Fwkh  
cshsck, Usl hkgh fed/cj ugwkhl[hr mc XI hl Cgx ukghngh l i oh-  
gxtcj ejvxdxkc 'znc zbi ki r`g`k[ghn rhna`s`kvh 'znc[c; vxn.

Fw l i vvchl `b`k vcgxgx dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghnvhk cghmc,  
Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ; xjhfkvh Scxv xfkx Hsvhk kcrj ejvxdx  
ncmhdcjvxn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn... Scxv xfkx Hs ocgxtc  
ZI cnxk dhk`kh 'cgvx, emxkx 'ekxagckvxn l c; i ] i k ukvhk vph  
hnj`r jun\hr shpcsx xsjcvx. Ocgxtc ukh mc/vc menvx ; x, si fp  
khl hb`kvhk suknh menc[c; vxn. Scxv vedxn... U, l ckc ]uogw  
jun\hr shpcsx menvx mc ukwk scnpcvcgcnxkx zb hdnrgn` xgc

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvha pcl ]xkxk, âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, 1-[x pxssc,  
scp.43.

jc/dxk ejvx. Vevxl ...âEd I z/I xkgcnxk cl xnx! Fxn hb vh hnj`n ; x, zmghvghn`I mc hxgcl hnjI `av`n.ß U vevx...âFcsxkvxn. Fw sxnnx pe] ; csc h]I h...I ckvck suknh oxghtcjx fxn ; cs cgxkc hgh[hrv`n ; x, zb rupwl -crncfhs`kh ]uogw pcvxddcgcn menc[c; , sckxk epjxdh[`k` hnhvhk rhgv`nh[hr.ß U vedxn... ZI cnxk oxghtcjx vzmni kvc 'zbgcvxl , kcpkdcj Usl hk oxghtcjx ]hjv`. Fw bhl hk I ckc ]uo pznI cj ejvx mc pcvxddcgcn menvx, epjxdh[ghn`I ` hnhvhk rhgv`nv` mc I ckx zb oxghtcjxkvc acnx; ejvx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Vel cgx, ocgxtc ZI cn Scxv xfkx Hsh ocfcn menI xavx ; x, ukvhk suknh Scxvuk rupwl ghn`, dc/kx Usl hk oxghtcjx ]hjh[hræ pcl vc ukvhk xsjcdxn ; x, fw sxnnx pe] ; xl c vel csxk. Fw szpfcjvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, Usl hk`k oxghtcjx egc ZI cnxk pcdhj` vzmni kvc xl bhghkl `av`. Hgj` kctcngx; awnhk`k jc/dxk ugwkl hs` vh fwkh 'znc vxv ; x, fw xa [hl hhj hnhskvh fcdckxgck fxn xa ; xl x [xgmcgckvxnxsxk! HI I h XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k [hk`k`k r`g`k[gh jcpvxx ugwkl hs`kh 'cgvx; vc xsc, fw fhncvc dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhghnvhk cghmc, dekc vc Xfkx Sc/vxk zb ; xjhfkvh (Scxv xfkx Hs`k jcn[i I edx-phg`kvh) 'c]xnvxdx ncmhdcjx redv evxnx; ... ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf Scxv xfkx Hsh vevx...âSckc kc ugl wavwn ; x, fxbvck i b vzkvcnl xsck?! Duosh jcscm-mi n evxnsck ; x, I ck sckxk hjhk` zgvi nl i acl ? L ck ukw zg-vi nl cl xacl , c; sxkc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf ukw zgvi nl i avi n.ß<sup>2</sup> XI hl ukwk hjhs`k` Fcvn vzdi ai kvc rcjgc dejxnl xavx.

"zncsck, fw szbgcn XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh vi al ck]xgxdc jcpnx; ejI c; , ukwk cgedpxkc ; xk-; i vwncj dnhhjI hr I crscvx vha`-I `nl`?

XLHL CGX <sup>TM</sup> OXGHTCJXK UKVHK WBHRGHAH{HY-K-FXGXNVX...

XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> oxghtcjxk fxn vphv ukvhk wbhrghah[hy`k` fxgxnvx, awnhvh vh dhgk`b fwkh 'znc xajxnh; evxnvx ; x, âukwk zbi oxghtcjx xsjcl cvxß – vel csxkgcn. Fw I i vvch hahy`vh;` phvxscvck hdv`k ugwn...

<sup>1</sup> âJcfcrrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Scxv xfkx Hs`k jcn[i I edx-phg`, 5-[x [xgv, scp.20-22, Hmnu`h ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> âJcfcrrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 5-[x [xgv, scp.20-22ââSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.277. |edycl fcnx C; ncl i mcthj evcn; ck Scxv xfkx Hs`k jcrnxfck vurrbw dha` mhn vxv.

Fcgfbunx âCkshfwg-canhtß ; xjhfkvh (5-[x [xgv, scp.19) fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Cgx zb cl xsx Hffhsh ax; hdcj evcnc; vevx ; x, âZl cn vedxf ; x, u ; csgcngc ugwk ; x, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt ukghn`k hnhs`kvhv`nß. Suknh vevx... âHggphph hkv ugsww, mxghdcj (dekc vc) fxbxl cgl xbvck ]`ov`ß Hffhs vevx... âEd rhnvha ugw! Fwkw phnhvhk vedxnsck?ß Xl hl vevx... âSc/v xfkx Mcrrhs zb cl xsx ugw Cfvi n-Ncpl hkgh l i ohgxtcj ejl cb. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk Usl hkgh fxn scmddcvc mc ukwk ; i nc; ckxvx, ukghn pe] mhoj fxn-fxnxc l i ohgxtcj ejl cbgcn. Pcjjh Jcgpc mc Bi fedn l ckxl jcnctxl vc ugshghn fegc, dekc vc thdvhs` ugl hdh[hrv`n. } i k; x Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt u i ] kctcnxk x]cnxsxkvcvxn.ß

Xfkx : cgfx dhn`n... âCfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt Crcfc xfkx Cfw L wedjxk r`b` l l l i " i gsil i k cnx vx ; x, ukwk hkhs` vh Cnmh vx. Cnmh vh Usl hk`k hkhs` vx. Fwkh `znc vc Xl hl ukw Usl hk`k ; i nc; ckx hvghkv`n`n.ß<sup>1</sup>

Cfw L i okct fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Zl cnxk vctk ugwkvwyyw `i k awnh i bmgcnx cg shoghv`ghn mc fxn xa `znl cvxgc. Cfw Jcgpc [hl hhj khl hb`kv ukghn`k xl hl `ugvw. Suknh; ` `i k si fp en; ck Cfw Jcgpc ukghn` l camcncj h`hnl hr i ] i k fedji g-l hg shoghkhk denc h`hmv`. (Zl cn bcncfcjgckvx; vck vznv `i k suknh zgvi mc vctk evxgvx, Si pedf xfkx Sckhk vh ukh khl hb r`gv.) Vel xagcn ; x, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukghn`k `]`gvhal hs`k` `znvi mc hkghv` ; x, pcn fxnx vx`cnxk oxgxtcjvck wbhrghav`n`n. Ukh `znc vc vevx... âEd [hl hhj! Lck zbi l i mc Sc/vx ]`o`nhl ; x, sxb vznv kctcnvck fxnxkx se]cl . } i k; x szpfcjgc ]uo wbhkv` mc [hl hhj zb ocgxtc mc xl hl ghn`k` jhk`l hr i ] i k `zbgcdxngcn. Ukghn wbhr dugvhk `cgl xagcn mc fw xaxk [hmf`k` `zbgcdxngcn, zb mcjckgcxkc rhd`jl hg`v`nghn.ß Suknh ukwk jc; gtx phl `g`rgh rcfwg evxgvx. Hl l h Cgx <sup>TM</sup> rcfwg ejl cdcnc; âl ck pcgc tx; xngcaxnc l ß – vevx. Fwkvhk suknh Cfw Jcgpc ukghn`k dhk`kh `cgvx, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukw zb jc; gtxkvck h`hp ejvx mc vevx ; x, Cgxvck fharh phl `fwkw rcfwg ejl xavxn. Cfw Jcgpc Cgxdc i b jwjwf vevx... âDh Cfcg-Pcsck! Cfw L cpcl l cv (Cfvi n-Ncpl hk) sckxk mc l i scgl hkghn`k e/jxl hv ejvxdx hvhl v`n. Sckc kc ugwf ; x, l i ohgxtcj evxnsck, phgfw; x u zbi ki ; ckhn [c; l xavxn mc pe] mhoj fharhs`k`k `i khp`k` zpvcsxkc `zji nl i n?ß

---

<sup>1</sup> Pcl xk l cbl wk... âXrvi g-tcnxvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.74.

Fwkvhk suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk` hkv x]vxnvx ;x, zb pcmhdx-  
kctsxkc x]hcj ejl csxk, phrr` rhfhyh shgs`k, i l l cj i ]i k  
]hg`as`k, rupwl ghn`kvhk pe] fxnxc i sji kgi ; menl csxk.  
Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vh hkv x]vx mc Cfw Jcgpc vevx... âXkvx  
l zp; cl ac; xgvc se].ß

Suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukghn` fxn-fxn, zbi vc ]uo [xv vx  
; cgl cgcngc hkv x]vxnvx mc ukghnvhk cpv-`edl hk hgv` ;x, c`cn  
ukghnvhk fxnx xgc fed/cj ejscgc, ukwkgh l i ohgxtcj ejl csxkgc  
mc ukwk l i ohgxtgcxkxc cgedpxkc l i jpcpxv ugsxkghn. Ukghn  
vh fw fhncvc hkv x]vxgc. Fwkvhk suknh Cgxkxc cgxkvck jwjwf  
vevx... âHggp`k cpv-`edl hk` sckxc zpvckc ugsxk ;x, c`cn  
sckxkgc fed/cj ejsc, Cfvi g-L i jcgxf zmghvghn`k` [hl hhj`k  
]xdkxc l xkvxl cdcsc, |edycl fcxc sxncsxkc cl cg evsc,  
ukvhk ;cknh ]`ol hdhshk, ukwk pe] fxn aedxcv scpgck; hng`r  
ejl cdcsc.ß Cgx vevx... âHggp`k cpv-`edl hk`k` zbil i k mc  
(l ckvc fharh) pe] ;csxk zpvcsxkvck 'cgl cvxdx aedgcx  
zpvcl c hgl `nhl . : xl |edycl fcxc sxncsxkx cl cgx ughnr  
pcdhjh ;e]xnc fxgc?! Gh; xk l ck fh[hnv`y`l , l i l ; i k ughk mc  
egl xl xk ]hjv`y` rcvcn u pcncjxc sxncsxkc cshsc pcnc; cj  
evc[cdcl .ß

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukwk cgxc fwnhov`, vph suknh Usl hk`  
hkv x]vxnvx mc ukvhk cpv-`edl hk hgv` ;x, Fckx-l l cddcx  
[hl hhj`k ]xdkxc l xkvxl csxk, |edycl fcxc sxncsxkc, Cfw  
Fc;ngc Zl cxc i sgfwkh cl cg ejsc, ukghngh pe] fxn aedvc  
l i ohgxtcj ejl csxk. Usl hk vh ukwk i ]i k hkv x]vx mc pcncj  
Cgx Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh vevx... âCfw Lcpcl l cv (Usl hk) xsjcvdxk  
aedgcnc nhb`g`r menvx. Fegc xsc, zb xaxkc fhagh mc ukwkgh fed/cj  
ej!ß

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk dekvck Cgxc jcnc rhd`jv` mc ukwk  
cgxkvck jwjwf jc;gxt ejvx ;x, Usl hk ;xl x hkv x]xf  
|edycl fcxc-C;nc l xk, Cfw Fc;nxk mc Zl cxc sxncsx mc  
vnmhk`a` xgc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc[cdxc vesxk. Cgx vevx...  
âFh[hnv`y`l rcvcn ]hg`al hy`l mh[xfvxn.ß Usl hk xsc vevx...  
âFcgx, Hggp`k cpv-`edl hk` mc `edycl fcgcxc zb i bcgcxc  
'zji nvi ;gcxc cpv-`edl hkgghn`k ck axvcjgx l ckxl zpvcl c  
ugsxk ;x, |edycl fcxc-C;nc l xk, Cfw Fc;nxk mc Zl cxc sxncsx  
xgc pe] fxn aedvc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc[cdcl , ukvhk fxn aed  
hbhjl hdh[hyhl .ß Suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukwkgh fed/cj evcnc;

I i shtxpc ejvx, awnh scphfcgcnx vc ukwkgf fed/cj ejvxgcn. Hdhr i sjc ughk Cgx ujwnvw mc Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukh vevx...âFed/cj ej, c;s phgvh fudkwkw mwnhnhl !ß U 'i kvc ukghn`k pe] fxxkxk dhk`kvh r`g`k[ duo xvx. Vedxgl xavxn ;x, Cgx rcbcfgx phgvh ]zgc ]`ov` mc awnh i bmgcnx ukh ]hj`f vevxgcn...âFed/cj ej, c;s phgvh scxkxgc mwnwah[hy`r!ß U pcbncj ukghngh fxngx;vc rhd`v`f 'cgvx mc Usl hkgh fed/cj ejvx.<sup>1</sup>

Fw ncmhdcjxk x;x pxsscsx jcpnxt ugwkhnhr vcdxavxnxgl xavxn... Fxx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h ejvxdx fxxk[x jc; gxtvxn ;x, ukvh âAedoedkxk sxncsxß szbi xojxshnh shg`kl `av`n. Vx`cnx vc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k szbi vi n ;x, ukwk fc/bx pxsscgcnxkx xojxshnh shghnhr dhgk`b ho`n`k` vel xagcn. Fi ji k fw ncmhdcjgcnx Dc/rwfx zb âJhnxoß ;xjh`f kvh (1-[x [xgv, scp.162) fegc redv evxn...

âCfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfgc ocgmcjvc vkh`ahnhr vevx...âHgghp` sckxk i ]i k ahpxv jwjwnwr ;x, c`cn pz;wl cjc ]hjshk fxbxl hnhl `bvH Hgghp`k : xjh`f, |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx, Cfw Fc;n mc Zl cnxk sxncsx cshs`kvh cl cg evcsck.ß Xl hl vevx...âSxbxk hnhk`bvH fh[hnv`y`l rcvcn Hgghp`k : xjh`f mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx cshs`kvh cl cg evc[cdcl .ß Fwkvhk suknH Usl hkgh ocgmcj c;c;xgcnc; vevx...âHgghp` sckxk i ]i k ahpxv jwjwnwr ;x, c`cn pz;wl cjc ]hjshk, fxbxl hnhl `bvH Hgghp`k : xjh`f, |edycl fcnxk si kcsx, Aedoedkxk – Cfw Fc;ngc Zl cnxk sxncsx cshs`kvh nctjhn evcsck.ß Usl hk vevx...âSxbxkgc cpv fhyghd`nhl ;x, hnhk`bvH Hgghp`k : xjh`f, |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx, Cfw Fc;ngc Zl cnxk sxncsx cshs`kvh nctjhn evcl .ß SuknH Cgx xgc ocgmcj c;c;xgcnc; cmmcg;x szbgcnxkx fxn vph j;c;nH ejvx mc egc pcl xk [hmhf` vh eajvx. Fwkvhk suknH Usl hkgh ocgmcj evcnc; pcl xk szbgcnx j;c;nH ejvx mc pcl xk [hmhf` vh dekvck eajvx. I ]i k[i vctc ughnhr Cgx xgc ocgmcj ejvx mc pcl xk szbgcnx j;c;nHghv`. Cgx vc vevx...âHgghp`k : xjh`f mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx ;xl xksc hvcj mc i sgwfwkh epjxdh[g` vedxgvxn! Sck ]hg`a`nshk ;x, fw pz;wl cjc I ckvck wbhrgfav`nshk.ß Cfvi n-Ncpl hk suknH Usl hkgh ocgmcj evxf pcl xk szbgcnxkx j;c;nHghv`. U vh cmmcg;x szbgcnxkx vevx;vc, ukwkgf fed/cj ejvx.ß

Jcfcnxkxk âJhnxoßkvc (3-[i [xgv, scp.297) mc Xfkx Csxnxk

---

<sup>1</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.21.



âJhnxoßxkvc (3-[i [xgv, scp.37) 23-[i px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcnx redv  
ugwkhn; ck ncmhdcj ugwkwn ;x, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk i ]i k[i 'i k  
Usl hkgh fed/cj ejvxdx bhl hk XI hl Cgx ukh fwdwnvw...

حَبَوْتُهُ دَهْرَ لَيْسَ هَذَا أَوَّلَ يَوْمٍ تَظَاهَرْتُمْ فِيهِ عَلَيْنَا فَصَبْرٌ جَمِيلٌ وَاللَّهُ الْمُسْتَعَانُ عَلَى مَا  
تَصِفُونَ وَاللَّهُ مَا وَلَّيْتَ عُثْمَانَ إِلَّا لِيُرِدَّ الْأَمْرَ إِلَيْكَ وَاللَّهُ كُلَّ يَوْمٍ فِي شَأْنٍ

âFxn l i vvcj i ]i k ukw fhy'aghv'l ... Fw sxbxk l ckxl cgedpxl c cgfxn  
ugvwywkwb fxnxk[x vctc vedxgvxn. Lck 'zbcg scfnx zbil c \eac evnccl ;x, Hgghp  
sxbxk [xgmcgckvxnvdxxb aedvc l ckxl ;zl c;]xl vxn. Hgghph hkv ugsww, Usl hk'  
dhgk'b fwkh 'znc pz;wl cj ]hjv'nv'k ;x, ukw sckc rhdjhns'k. (Phgfw;x) Hgghp'k  
pcn 'i k fxn jcrvnx mhnv'n.ß<sup>1</sup>

XLHL CGX™ -GH FED/CJ

Usl hk rcjgc dejxnxgvx;vck, l i scgl hkghn`k xax ukghnh  
rhd'jv`rvhk mc il xvvcn pcn aedvck ;csxgvx;vck suknh  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc jcnct pi [wl 'cjxnvxcn mc ukwkgf fed/cj  
ejl cdc xsnhn ejvxcn. Jcfcnx dhh'n... â|edycl fcnc scphfcgcnx  
Cgxkxk dhk`kh 'cgnc; vevxcn... Fw ;xax zgvi ni gvi , [hl hhj`k  
pz;l ck fxn xl hl ` ugl hg`v`n. Fxb fw 'i k oxghtcj i ]i k sckvck  
ghdxrgx fxn ;csx jhk`l`n`r. Kc Xsgl vh;` ;e]l xa 'zbcg  
tchgxddcjcgnxkvc, kc vc |edycl fcngc rupwl gwrvh fxn ;cs  
sckvck ghdxrgx vedxgvxn.ß XI hl fwdwnvw... âFegc fxn xa  
'znl cdxkæ ]i k;x l ck cl xn ugl hrvhk vphph ]uo mcbxn  
(;zl c;]x) ugl hr xsjcnvxl .ß Vevxcn... âOedn, Hgghph hkv ugsww  
;x, fxb sckxkgc fed/cj ejl cdxk[c pe] fxn xa 'znl cdc[cdx;ß  
XI hl vevx... âFegc xsc, l cs[xvvc ugwk ;x, l ckxl gc fed/cj 'xbgx  
ac;xgvc ugl hs`k mc l i scgl hkghn`k nhb`g`y`kvhk fharh fxn  
l crscvgc fha menl csxk...ß<sup>2</sup>

U, fharh fxn sckcvgc ncmhdcj evnc; vedxn... âJcgpc mc  
Bi fedn vc hnhghn`kvh ugl hrgh l i ph[xn mc ckshn fxn denc  
d`y`a`f Cgxkxk dhk`kh 'cgvxcn mc fegc vevxcn... âDh Cfcg-Pcscck,  
'cg sckxkgc fed/cj evc;ß XI hl vevx... âLckxl sxbx pz;wl cj  
ejl cdc epjxdh[`l duovwn. Lck sxbxkgcdcl , pcn ;csx se]sckxb  
ukh nhb`dhl , se]xk.ß Vevxcn... âHgghph hkv ugsww, fxb sckvck

<sup>1</sup> Fw ncmhdcj âXrvi g-tnxvßvc vc (3-[i [xgv, scp.76.) 'cgl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.152-153. Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.306æ  
â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.161, 2471-[x pcvxsæ âJhnxox xfkx C/sc l ß,  
scp.160-161.

fharh pe] fñn ; csx se]l cdc[cdx; lß

Nhmx vedxn... Usl hk`k rcjgc dejxngl csxkvck suknh vctcgcngc  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k dhk`kh 'cgvxgcñ, ho`n`k[` vctc u pcbncjc vevxgcñ...  
â{hl hhj pz;wl cjvck fharh fñn dugggh xsghp ugwk l hb mc fw xa  
]uo wbwk ]c; vx.ß xl hl Cgx ukghñh vevx... âSxb vñxl l ckxl  
dhk`l h 'cgxf-'evxnsxkxb. Lck xkvx sxbc fñn szb vedc[cdcl æ  
c`cn ukw rcfwg ejscxk, sxbc ph;xl ugl hy` rcfwg evcncl , c; s  
phgvh ukh epjxdh[`l duovwn.ß Vevxgcñ... âPcn kc vesck,  
xkahnghghp, ukw rcfwg evcnx; .ß Sukñh l cs[xvc 'cgxf l xkfcnc  
]`ov` mc [hl hhj cñht`k` jwjhk phgvh vevx...âLck pz;wl cjx mc  
sxbc ph;xl ugl hy` xsjcl xñvxl , gh;xk sxb dhgk`b l ckxl sxbc  
ncpfcñ ugl hy`l ` rcfwg ejvxkxb. H'hp ugwk... sxbxsb pe] fñn xa  
'zñl cdc[cdcl . H'hp ugwk ;x, sxbxk l hg-vzmgcjxkxbxk h]ñn`  
l ckxl cgxl vcvñ. H'hp ugwk ;x, sxb ugl hvhk l ckxl ukvhk  
fñn vxñpcl 'zjñl cdc phrr`l duovwn. Fwk rcfwg  
evxnsxkxbl x?ß Vevxgcñ... âFcgx.ß xl hl vevx... |cnmcñvx'hñh,  
fwkghñh ahpxv uglß Sukñh ukghñ`k fed/cjxkx rcfwg ejvx.

Fcgñbunx ncmhdcj evcn; vedxn... Cgx ]zgc ]`o`f emxkc jcnct  
'ejvx. {hl hhj`k phl`s` – |edycl fcñxk scphfcgcñx mc  
fharhghñ` ukwk hñv`k[h jcgcsvxgcñ. Ukghñ vedxñvxgcñ... âDhgk`b  
Cgx l z/l xkgcñxk cl xñvññlß Sukñh ukwk emxkc vñoxg ughñhr  
vevxgcñ... âCgxkx h], sckxkgc fed/cj evc; , ]i k;x i l l cjxk  
pz;l ck fñn cl xñx ugl hg`v`ñ.ß Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vevx... âFw sxbxk  
se];xkxbgc vedxg, dhgk`b Fcvñ cpgxkxk xojxdhñ` xgcñvñ. Fcvñ cpgx  
pcñ ;csc nhb` ugsh, ocgxtc u ugh[hrv`ñ.ß Fcvñ cpgxkvck egc fñn  
hvhl rhgl hv` ;x, Cgxkxk dhk`kh 'cgcñ; âFxb fw xac (oxghtcjc)  
sckvck vc ghdxrgx fñn ;csx jhk`l `n`rß - vel csxk. Cgx mcbxddcjx  
fegc 'znvi ;vc, l xkfcnc ]`ov`. L xkfcñvc ukwk dhk`kh rhgohk  
mc ukwkgh fed/cj evck xg; acos Jcgpc xvñ. Ukwk fñn fhñl hy`  
axg xvñ. Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukw \xs thgh dubhñhr vevx...âKc rcvñ dwl ahr  
mc s`kv`n[`v`ñ.ß<sup>1</sup>

Jcfcñx fegc ncmhdcj evñ...âJcgpc fed/cj evck bñl hk Pcfxf  
xfkx Bi edf ukh fho`f vevx...âFed/cj evck xg; cg axg xvñ, fw xa  
ho`ñh ]hj l hdh[hrv`ñ...ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCkshfwg-canhtß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.70æ âL i sjcvñ; x Ph;xl ß, 3-[i [xgv,  
scp.114. Jcgpcxk fed/cj ejvxdx bñl hk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k \xs thg jwj l hs`k` ncmhdcj  
ejl xavñ.

<sup>2</sup> âJhñxox Jcfcñxß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.153, Hmñu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3068.

Xsghl `k cmmcggnxkvc pz;wl cj jca;xg evxgl csxkxk jhnox  
'en]c;gx;gcxkx hnhav`nv`rvhk suknh, kzmfcjx fzgl cvc x;x  
l c;jcfxk oxghtcj mc xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcgcxkx  
h]'rghdh[hy`r. Cmmcg[c oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk kcbngcnxkx fcdhk  
evxnx; ...



X: XK{X TCSXG...

OIGETH LC: JCFXKXK XLHLCJ FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNX

Oigeth l c;jcfxkxk kcbcnx mc ukghn`k vcgvgcnxæ

Oigeth l c;jcfxkxk hnv`gghn`k`k kcbcnxæ

Xl hl h, pcjjh |edycl fcngc l iohgtcj ejsc fegc, xjhcj ejl cdxk mh[xfgvdxæ

Oigeth l c;jcfxkxk suk dib xggx;vc vcgvgcnxæ

Xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fcpsxkxk xsjxghpgghn`æ

Oigeth l c;jcfxkxk oxghtcj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcsxkxk hnhav`n`gl hs`æ

1-Awnhdh vcgvg `cjxnl cdxk hnhav`n`gf jckrxv evxgl csx

Hgghp`k : xjhf mc |edycl fcn sikkcsx xgc awnhdh xsjxvghg evxgl csx

2-Fed/cjc xsjxvghg`k hnhav`n`gf jckrxv evxgl csx

3-Scphfckxk cl cgxkc xsjxvghg ejl cdxk hnhav`n`gf jckrxv evxgl csx

Awnhdh xsjxvghg mc scphfckxk cl cgxkc fed/cj evxgl csxkc jckrxvgcn

4-âOxghtcj bunggh mc rcgcfc xgc fcncnchn ugwkwnß – szbiki k hnhav`n`gf jckrxv evxgl csx

|edycl fcn sikkcsx xgc l iohgxt ughk bhgl xl hl h xjhcj

Fcpsxk oighscsx



OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK KCBCNXDDCSX MC UKGHN-K  
VCGXGGCNXKXK CSHS-

1-Ocgtc Cfw Fc;nk kcbcnx

U vedxn...âFw cl n (xl hl cj) Ri nedaxk fw ahocsxkvck fhahs`  
i ]i k ncmh vedxgvxn. Fwkghn l cn;cb dengcn mc cncfgcnxk  
l epmcnvvxn, l ck vc fw x;x kctcnvck fxnxkx (Cfw l fedvc  
{cnnhp` mc Zl cnx) sxbxk i ]i k fcdckxncl . Ukghnvhk pcn fxnx  
xgc xsjcdxnsxkxbsc, fed/cj evxk.ß<sup>1</sup>

2-Ocgtc Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf k kcbcnx

U vedxn...âFxn ;cs hgvhkhnhv vel cl cgxvxn ;x, Cfw Fc;ngc  
fed/cj vi ai ki gl cvck ugwf ;e]l xa mc rwnjhn l `av`n.ß Fcgx,  
ukwkgh fed/cj fegc ugl wavwn, gh;xk Hggghp ukwk acnnxkc  
kcbhncj ejvx. Sxbgcncvck pe] fxn ;cs Cfw Fc;n ;xl x [hl hhj`k  
vxrrcj l cn;cbxkvc vedxgvxkxb. Xkvx fxn ;cs l i scgl hkghn`k  
l camcncjx ugl hvhk fharhs` xgc fed/cj ejsc, pcn x;xsx – pcl  
fed/cj evck, pcl vc fed/cj ugwkxhk hgvhkhkhghnv`n ;x, rcjgc  
dejxnxgl cgcnx mh[xfvxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, pi vvv ;xjh f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.120. Cfw Fc;n Cfvi ggghp  
xfkx Cfw Ri phtc Jedl x. Ukwk hkhs` l l l i g-oedxn Scgl h, dhowv Gedgh  
fxkx Scon Jedl x vxv. Cfw Fc;n Hl wg-txgvck x;x-i ] xg suknh vi kdhdh  
'cgl xavxn. |edycl fcn Lcvxkcdc px[ncj evcn;ck u pcbncjgc fxngx;vc vxv mc  
Si kpvc l cs;wkghal `av`. Ovghtcjc ]hvj`y` mhojh rcvcn [hl hhj`k  
rudwkghn`k` shy`n mc fw dugggh vh l cxacj ocn[gcnxkx jc/l xk evxnvx. Suknh  
Lcvxkcdc ;z]vi mc px[ncjxk 13-[i xgxkvc vi kdvhvk `ejvx. âScpxpß  
;xjhfgghn`k` l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 142 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Ukwk  
jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc, âJhnnox xfkx Csxnbvc (2-[x [xgv, scp.163) mc  
â{cmhl xws-sxncßvc (scp.278) l zm[wvvwn.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, pi vvv ;xjh f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.120. Cfw Pcts Zl cn xfkx  
Ocjjhf xfkx Ki teg Ri ncax Cfvx. Ukwk hkhs` Phaxl , dhowv Pxahl xfkx  
L i yednc Lcobwl xkxk r`b` Pckl c vxv. Zl cn fe/scjvck jcrnxfck fea xg  
suknh Lc; ;cvc Xsghl `rcfwg ejl xa, Fcvnvc mc suknh;` rcbmcgcncv xajxn;  
ejl xavx. Cfw Fc;n zgi l i xgc kcjx[cgckck ocsjcgx;vc ukw zbi ki k [hxxaxkx  
jc/dxk ejl xavxn. U, 24-[i px[nx xgxkxk Lcpcnnc l hd`kvh Cfw Gz/gz hvg` fxn

3-Oigcth l c;jcfkxk hnv[ghn`k`k kcbcnxddcsx

Rhbxg-ri bhj L hmcnvx (450-[x xgvc mc mthj evxf) mc bhl hk`k cgghl csx rhbx Cfw Dc/gh (458-[x xgvc mthj evxf) pcn x;xsx zbi ki k âCp;hl ws-swghjkxddcß hvg` ;xjhfkvh dhn`ngn... âXl hl cj x;x duggh 'en]c;gcaxn... Fxnx i l l cjxk se]xgl xa acosxddcjgcnxkxk jc/dxk ejl csx xgc, vx'cnx vc cmmcg; x xl hl `k mcsxddcj mc xrnhn ejl csx xgc. Hl l h hgxl gcn xl hl cj se];xsxkx 'en]c;gcavxnck l ijccssxsgcnxk shd` fhncsxkvc xojxghth vi ]hn ugl wagh. Ukghnvhk fxn rnw\w fegc vedxn... âXl hl cj, zg; c l ijccssxsgcnxkxk phl `s`k`k tx;xn fxngxdx ugl hvhk 'en]c;gcal cb. }i k;x xl hl `k xl hl cjx i l wl [hl hhj`k rcfwg ejl csx cshs`kvh ugl hg`v`n.ß Fw kcbcnxddc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj mc ukwk dhgk`b unvhv phb`n ughkghn`k jcnctxkvck oxghtcj se]xgl csx xgc ncvv ugwkwn. }i k;x ukghn Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejl c;vc fharhghn`k` 'zbgcl cvxgc.

Fharh fxn rnw\ vh vel xagcn... Xl hl cjxk 'en]c;gcal csxkc scfcf ugh[hr ck hb shd fea kctcnvxn ;x, dh ukghn`k phl `s` fw fhncvc tx;xn fxngxdxkvck ugwn, dh vh ukghnvhk fxnx vx'cn vznv kctcnxk nhb`g`y` xgc ukw pcdhjh ;e]xnxngcn. Fwkwk vcgxgx x;x aedvxn... Fxnx fwvwn ;x, Cfw Fc;nk fed/cjx cmmcg[c fea kctcnxk tx;xn fxngxdx xgc ugl wavwn... Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf, Cfw l fedvc {cnnhp<sup>1</sup>, l sedv xfkx Pi bedn<sup>2</sup>, Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v<sup>3</sup> mc Cfw

kctcnxk mwnvwyw dnhn kcjx[csxkvc zgl i a mc Cfw Fc;nk dhk`kvh vctk evxgl xavxn. âScpxpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 537 ncmhdcj kcrge ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß, âWsvwg-yhfcb mc â{cmhl xws-sxncß ;xjhfgghn`kvh l zm[wvvn.

<sup>1</sup> Cfw l fedvc Hl xn xfkx Cfv i ggph xfkx {cnnhp Lc;;cvc rcfxn rhbhk fxn acos xv. Fcvnvc mc fharh rcbmcgcnvc xajxnh; ejl xa mc 18-[x px[nx xgkvc Fedji g-l i rcvvcxk dho`kg`y`kvh dengcack Cl mhs l ckjcrsxkvc dh`ghk jhwk kcjx[csxkvc mthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cggtgcnx ukvhk 14 pcvxs kcrge ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcb, â{cmhl xws-sxncß (scp.284) mc âJcfcjhjß ;xjhfgghn`kvh (2-[xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.74, Hmnu\h ]h`) redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v xfkx Sc/gcfc Ocbnc[x. Vedxgl xavxn ;x, Sc/v xfkx l fhvc xgc pcscv h`hny`y`kh 'znc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj evck xg; acos u xv. U, Edkwj-jcl n l i phnxfcsxkvc rcjgc dejxngvx. Ukwk pcvxsxkx Kcshx zbi ki k âSi kckß ;xjhfkvh kcrge ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`k` âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ;xjhfkvh (1-[x [xgv, scp.96) mc âJcrnxfwj-jcbpxfßvc (1-[x [xgv, scp.103) 'znc fxgcnxkxb.

<sup>3</sup> Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` cmmcgvc redv ugwkvw.



Pi bedtckxk rwghl ` Shgxl .<sup>1</sup> Suknh [hl hhj ukghnh xjhcy ejvx. X; xk[ xsx fwvwn ; x, Zl cn hgj` kctcngx; awnhk` jca; xg ejvx ; x, ukghnvhk fxnx rhghk fea kctcnxk nhb`g`y` xgc xl hl cj l crhl `kh se]xgsxk. Fw, Fcsnc l i jc; cggxl gcnxkxk mc tcrxpgcnxkxk c; scnxddcjxkxk kcbcnxvxn.B

: wtc hgxl gcnxkvck fharh fxn rnw\w vel xavxn... âXl hl cj i ] kctcnxk mhsxjcsxgc 'en]c; gcaxn mc ukghnvhk fxnx x; x kctcnxk nhb`g`y` xgc xl hl ugwn ; x, i sj-i sjc fxn ph; xl mc x; x ahpxv ugswkghn. Ke[c ; x, kx; hp crvx vc fxn mcgx mc x; x ahpxvxk mhsxjcsxgc scpxp ugwn.B<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn rnw\ vh xkhk`n ; x... Xl hl cj jc; [c fxn kctcngc 'en]c; gcaxn. } i k; x Hffhs<sup>3</sup> Cgxdc (nxbmhkwghp cgedpxl h) fegc vel xavx... Cgxkx h], sckxkgc fed/cj evxl ; x, [hl hhj â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk cl xsx ukwk cl x uygsw xgc fed/cj ejvxâ

<sup>1</sup> Cfw Cfvxgghp Shgxl – Cfw Pi bedtc xfkx l jfc xfkx Ncfxc Cl cmckxk rwghl ` xv. U, Thns cdhgjxkvc dengcack Xsjcon cphgxskvckvxn. Ukw Cfw Pi bedtckxk pcdhj dugvha` hbhv ejl xavxn, Cfw Pi bedtc vc ukw uygwgyh 'zji nl i avi, fwkh 'znc vc l i ph[xngcnvck shd`g`nv. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -vck rhfhr Lcvxkcdc ; z]l i a mc Rwn/hk` ukghn`k phl `s`kvhk dhoa` fxgvdxkc 'znc l i ph[xngcnc, u [i l gcvc Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhfh \xakhl hb ugl wavw. |edycl fcn ukwkgh L chb Ckshnxkxk hnhs`kvh rhnvhag`r crvx fhyghl `av`. Dcl hl c l i phnxfcsxkvc zgvi ni gvi. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc mc âCg-xshfcßvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-cp; hl ws-swgjhkxddcß (L hmcnvx), scp.7-11, 2-[x ]h\, 1356-[` px[nx rcl cnx. Ukwk l i cggxtx Ahtex tcrxpgcnxkxk fzdi ; acosxddcjgcnxkvck vx mc ]uogw ; xjh f dhbl `av`. Pcl ]xkxk âCg-cp; hl ws-swgjhkxddcß (Cfw Dc/gh Pckfcgx), scp.7-11, 1-[x ]h\, L xsn, 1356.

Fxb oi gcth l c; jcfx hgxl gcnxkxk ; xjhfgghn` hnhs`kvh fw x; x ; xjhfh l cpb fwkh 'znc e/jxl hv evxnx; ; x, fw ; xl x ; xjhfgghn Cfw Dwsxtxk dhbv`y` âOcnh[B ; xjh f` ; xl x dhgk`b pz; wl cj pz; l gcnxkx rcgcl c hgl hr mc oi gcth l c; jcfx kcbcnxkvck cl cg evxgl c; l crscvxgc dhb`gl `av`n. Hl l h shxn ; xjhfgghn cl cg ejl c; l crscvxgc vedxg, dhgk`b egl x l i fhpxsc i ]i k dhb`gl `av`n.

<sup>3</sup> Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf. Ukwk hkhs` Kcjxgc fxkxjx Ocfffh Kcl xnxvxn. Hffhs Crcfcvc |edycl fcngc fed/cj l cnhsxl xkvc xajxnh; ejl xa, Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc csxn jwjwgl wa, zbi ki k mc rhnvha` uygghkghn` Crxg mc Kutcgxk oxghs ugl hs` i ]i k txvh mencnc; hbhv ugwkl wavw. L c; ; ckxk tcjpxkvck cmmcg Lcvxkcdc px[ncj ejl xa mc fw tcjpvc xajxnh; ejl xavxn. Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf rcpcjgx; xggcnxkvc ukwk mhsxjcsxgc Hgghpvhk dhy`a xsjcdxnvx. 32-[x px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âScpxpß l i cggxtgcnx ukvkh 35 ncmhdcj kcrq ejl xagcn. Jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc mc â{cmhl xws-sxncßvc (scp.281) redv ugwkl wavwn.

– vesxkgcn. Fwkvhk suknh vh, sckxk fhncvc x; x kctcn fegc xojxght ejl cb. } i k; x fw pz; l vi n mc fxn kctcnxk pz; l i vc ri mmcvcvxn.β<sup>1</sup>

Hl l h xl hl cjxk cmmcg; x xl hl `k xrnhn mc mcsxddcj ejl csx xgc 'en]c; gcal csxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, fw vh scpxp mc [hxbvxn. L i scgl hkghn fw fhncvc l i jjctxr tx; xnvcvxnngcn mc ukh cl cg evxngcn, pcl ]xkxk x; x scfcfc 'znc ukw xk; hn vh ejl cl xagcn... Fxnx fwvwn ; x, Cfw Fc; n ukw (oxghtcjx) Zl cnc mcsxddcj ejl xa, l i scgl hkghn vh Zl cnxk xl hl cjxkx l cpb ukwk mcsxddcjxkc 'znc rcfwg ejl xavxgc. Vx'cnx fwvwn ; x, Zl cn ukw awnhvh rcnhn menl xavx...β Kcphdcj fegc vedxn... Zl cngc fed/cj ugwkl hs` scphfcgcnxk nhb`g`y`kh fhvg` vedxgvx. } i k; x xl hl ukghnh vhph hnj`r phrr shpxfxvxn.β<sup>2</sup>

Suknh hgxl gcnxk xl hl ` jhk`l hy`k gi bwl w fhncsxkvc xojxghtvh ugvwrghn`k` fcdhk evcnc; vedxn... āUkghn`k fc/bxgcnx vel xagcn ; x, Hgghp` mc Ukwk |edycl fcnxkx jhk`l hr phl`dh mh[xf ugvwyw ; xl x, xl hl ` vh hv` mc cghl cjgcnx xgc jhk`l hr fi ji k xkshkghnh mh[xfvxn.β Suknh vedxn... āFi ji k xkshkghn`k tx; xn fxngdxkvc ugvwyw l cscgc fwvwn ; x, xl hl ` [i b/x mc jctsxg ac; xgvc vedxg, i l wl x ac; xgvc jhk`l hr fi ji k xkshkghnh mh[xfvxn.β<sup>3</sup>

Rhbxg-ri bhj Cfw Dc/gx Pckfcgx cghmc evcnc; vedxn... āXl hl cj l cscgcsx bun 'i [i kc vc pcdhjh ; e]xn, ukwk phks`sh rcnhn mc cpv`ledl hkh vh epjxdh[` duovwn. Pcn ; cs r`g`k[ 'i [i xgc i l l cjc rcgcfc ]hg`f ocgxtc ugsh mc ācl xncg-l z/l xkxkβ hvghkv`n`gsh, Hgghph mc rxdhl cj 'i ki kc xl hkg` ughk fxn acosxk ukw xl hl peshf ejl cvck hswvc dhjl hs` ncmh vedxgvxn – xsjcn dhoa` cl cg shpxfx ugswk, xsjcnc vc fcv cl cg shpxfxæ pcn fxn phgvh, u, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnxvxn.β<sup>4</sup>

Xl hl `k cgedpxkc rxdhl evcnc; ph; xl xddcjx cgc ; e]xnl c; xsjcdck, pcn fxnx vc zbi xgc fxn rnw` 'zji nckgc fhncsxkvc xsc

<sup>1</sup> āCg-cp; hl ws-swghkxdddcb (L hmcnvx), scp.6-7.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.10. Ukghn`k szbgcnxkvck mc kcbngcnxkvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, zb vxkgcnxkx fha menck phvxscgcnvck cob ejl xagcn, rhna`dh 'cgckgcnc vc egc ukghn`k vxkxvxn ; x, fw fhncvc pe] fxn xojxght ejl cl xagcn. Ukghn`k xojxght` dhgk`b phvxscxkx ke[c xncgx 'cgl csx xgc cghrcvhnv`n.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.15

<sup>4</sup> āCg-cp; hl ws-swghkxdddcb (Cfw Dc/gx Pckfcgx), scp.7-11.

fegc vedxn... â{i i l c khl hb` rcgcfc ]hghk jcnctxk mhsxjcsxgc  
fcnrncnhn ugwk[hhrv`n.ß U, zb l i vvchs`kh fegc vcgxcg 'c]jxn...  
â}i k;x Cfvi ggph xfkx Zl cn âPxnncß phvxscsxkvc Lcvxkc  
cphgxsc xgc khl hb r`gv` mc âFxb rcgcfc ]hghkghnghd`rß - vevx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xl hl wg-Pcncl edk {i medkx (478-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn)  
zbi ki k âXnahvß ;xjh`kvh dhh`n... âFgxk ;x, xl hl cjxk  
'en]c; gcal csxkvc i l l cjxk tx; xn fxngxdxkvc ugl hs` acnj  
vedxgvxnæ Xl hl cj i l l cjxk tx; xn fxngxdx ugl hvhk vh  
'en]c; gcac fxgc. Vcgxgl xb vc Cfw Fc; nxk cl cgxvxn ; x, oxghtcjc  
]hjhk bhl hk vcnphg l i scgl hkghn`k pz; l gcnxkx xl bhghv`,  
fwkwk Lcvxkvck ;ckhnhv ughk scphfcgcnc ]hjl hs`k`  
'zbgcl cvx. Pe] ;cs vc ukh xnhv jwjl hv` mc fxn hb  
'zbgcl csxkx xsjcl cvx. Vel cgx, c'cn xl hl cjxk  
'en]c; gcal csxkvc x[l h acnj vedxgsc, ukwk i ]i k l i cddck mc  
jc/dxk ugwk l wa fxn shd vh redv ugwk l hl `av`n. Scpxp kbcn  
fwvwn ; x, fegc vedc;... Xl hl cj l i jcocssxsgcnvck ughk fxn  
kctcnxk rcnhn` xgc vc 'en]c; gcaxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Xl hl Xfkx Cncfx (543-[i xgvc mcthj evxf) dhh`n... âXl hl gh  
fed/cj l cnhsxl xkvc phl `k`k xajxnh; `kh epjxdh[ duovwnæ  
c; sxkc u l c[gxvc x; x, dhowv fxn ke]c kctcnxk phb`n ugl hs` vh

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.7-8. Fharh fxn ]h\vh scp.20, 23. Xfkx Zl cn – Cfvi ggph  
xfkx Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhfv`n (ukwk hkhs` Bedkcf fxk]x Lcb/wkvwn).  
|edycl fcnc-C; ncl dha` hb ugvywvkh 'znc ukwk l pi v l i phnxfcsxkvc  
xajxnh; ejl csxk l hke ugvw. Hl l h fwkvkh fharh rcbmcgcncv xajxnh;  
ejl xavxn. U, zbi ki k mc hjhs`k`k jc/nxtxkvc ]uogw ncmhdcjgcnc kcrgejl xavxn.  
U, |edycl fcncvck hgjl `a xg suknh pc[[ l cnhsxl xkvc tcjmh menvx. Vel xagcn  
; x, pcvxsx dhov`n, gh; xk txrpx dhov` vedxgvxn. Pe] fxn l i phnxfcv Cgx  
™ -`k jcnctxkvc ugl hl `av`n. Zgvidi bhl hk fw xaxkvck `eal hk  
ugvwywkw fxgvxncnc; vel xavxn... âVi kdvhk pe] fxn ]cjxkgxdx zb nwpwl gh  
h`hnl `nhl , ]cjxkgxdx dhgk`b fwvwn ; x, Cgxkxk ;ckhn`kvh âtxcjwk-fhyxdcß  
xgc – bhg`l ghng – mwnwal hv`l .ß Zgi l i ki k scfcfxkvc vel xagcn... Pc[[h[  
'zsjcnxa menl xavx, fxn kctcn [hl hhj`k xbvxp`l `x]cnxsxkvc w[wkh bcpcn  
devxbvxnagl xa kxbscxk ukwk fwvwxh fhj`nv` mc 73-[i px[nx xgxkvc mcthj  
ejvx. âSxphß l i cggtgcnc ukvhk 2630 pcvxs kcrgejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-  
phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc, âSxdcn k-ki fcghßvh mc â{cmhl xws-sxncßvc (scp.275)  
l zm[wvwn.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-xnahvw txg-; cghl ß (Xl hl wg-pcncl edk Cfvi g-l cgx; xfkx Cfvi ggph  
{ i medkx), scp.424, Rhpnc ]h`, 1369.

; xthdcjvxn.β<sup>1</sup>

Aedo, tcrxp, xl hl mc cgghl c Rwnjwfx (671-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) āxkx [hxgw tkq-cnbx ocgxcjckβ hdxsxx (āFcrncβ swncsx, hdx.30) jctsn evcn; ck 8-[x l cscgcvc fegc vedxgx...āC'cn l i jcocssxsgcnvck fxn kctcn ukw (ocgxtc ugh[hr acosx) jcsvxr evxf xl bhghsh, zb denxkvc rcnhngha`n mc fharhghn` vh ukh jhfe ugl hg`v`n. Fw vh āxl hl cj dhgk`b l i jcocssxsgcnvck ughk fxn rnw\ hvhl `k mhsxjcsxgc 'en]c; gcaxnβ – vedckgcnxk kcbcnxkxk c; sxkcvxn. Fxbxl vcgxxl xb fwvwn ;x, Zl cn Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx, scphfcgcgvck pe] ;cs vc fwkw xk;hn ejl cvx. Fwnhvhk vh hdv`k ugw n ;x, xl hl cjvc, shxn crvgcn ;xl x, l i cddck fxn shdh epjxdh[` duovwn. Xl hl Cfwg-L chgx vedxn...āFxn kctcnxk fed/cjx xgc xl hl ughk acosxk xl hl cjx shfxjvxn, pcn phks` fxn vcgxx ugl hvhk, phvxsc fha menl cvck ukw xavck ]`ohnjl hr, fxnx xgc vcdxavxn l c; [hxb vedxgvxn. Fw l cscgc x[l hvxn.β

Pcl xk hdxkx jctsnxkvc, 14-[i l cscgcvc vedxn... āC'cn xl hl cj l i jcocssxsgcnxk xjjxthr mc tx;xn fxngxdx xgc, dhowv cmmcgvc vedxgvxdx ;xl x, fxn kctcnxk mhsxjcsxgc 'en]c;gcacnsc, [hl hhj`k phl `s`k`k ukh xjhj ejl csx mh[xfvxn.β<sup>2</sup>

Rhbxg-ri bhj Cbwvxxvxx Xd[x (756-[` xgvc mcthj evxf) āL cmhrxtβ ;xjhfkvh dhn`n... ā...l ]i k[i l cscgc u xagcn fhncsxkvcvxn ;x, ukwk mhsxjcsxgc xl hl cj si fwjh dejxn. Ukwk oi ghscsx fwvwn ;x, xl hl cj pcl |edycl fcnxk, pcl vc cmmcg; x xl hl `k kcscx (ha;hn fcdhk`) xgc xsfhj ugwkwn. Egc[c vc l i jcocssxsgcnxk fed/cj ejl csx xgc vc si fwjh dejxn. Fw vh axcgcnxk kcbcnxkxk c;sxkcvxn. Fxbxl vcgxxl xb Cfw Fc;nxx xl hl cjxkxk fed/cj mhsxjcsxgc si fwjh dejl csxvxn.β Fharh denvc vedxn... āC'cn xl hl cj se];x mc fed/cj dugw xgc phsxg ughnsh, x[l hdh epjxdh[` duovwn. } i k;x fw fhncvc kc crg, kc vc acnxcj jcnctxkvck vcgxx 'cjxnxgl cl xavxn. C;sxc, l i jcocssxsgcnvck fxn-x;x kctcnxk fed/cj ejl csx ;xthdcjvxn. } i k;x, scphfcgcgv vxkvc l hgx; ugvwrgn` scghpxddcjgc fegc, ukwkgh ;xthdcjgckxnvxgc. Fegc ;x, Zl cn Cfw Fc;nc, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk

<sup>1</sup> āSi kckx Jxnl xbxkxk acnpx, 13-[i [xgv, scp.299. L i cggt... Xl hl Cfw Fc;n L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi gghp Cafxkx (Xfkx Cncfx hv` xgc l capwnvwn).

<sup>2</sup> ā{hl xw cp;hl xg-Rwn/hkβ, dhowv āJctsnx Rwnjwfxβ (Xl hl Cfw Cfvgghp L cpcl l cv xfkx Cpl cv xfkx Cfx Fc;n Ckvugusx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.269-272, L xsn ]h`, 1287.

xfkx Umt vh Usl hkh fed/cj ejvx mc ukw kcxk; x Xsghl  
i l l cjxkxk, pe] Lcvxkvc phb`n ughkghn`k tx; xn fxngxdx xgc vc  
acnjgckvxn l cvx. Ukghn fegc ejvxgc n mc pe] ; cs vc ukghnh xnhv  
jwjl hv`. Fw, jhnxo fudwkvh ugl wa mc fxbxl vzmni l i bc  
rcvcn vhmhl ejl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

Rhbxcg-ri bhj Xd[xkxk âLcmhrxtß ; xjhfk` acnp evckgc n, u  
[i l gcvck Seddxv Acnxt { i n[hkx (816-[` xgvc mcthj evxf) ukwk  
fw kcbcnxddcsx xgc nhb` ugl wavwn.<sup>2</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL ; -GC LIOHGXT UGVWYW PHGVH  
FEGC, XLHLH XJHCJ EJLCDXK MH{XFGXDX

L i sgi l zbi ki k âScpxpß ; xjhfk`kvh Pi bedtcvck fegc kcrg  
evxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl fwdwnl wavwn... âLckvck suknh egc  
xl hl ghn `cgc[c; vxn ; x, kc l ckxl pxvhdcj dugwl vh `evc[c; ,  
kc vc l ckxl si kkcl c jhfe ugh[hrghn. Ukghn`k hnhs`kvh egc  
; csgcn ri vncjc ]hjh[hrghn ; x, rcgfgcnx aedjhkv`n, hl l h xkshk  
[xgvxkvcvxn.ß U vedxn ; x, sunwavwl ... âDh Ncswgcgghp! C`cn u  
bhl hk` `znscl kc evxl ?ß Fwdwnvw...âCl xnxk tcnl hk`k` eavvxf  
xjhcj evxnsckæ pcjjh sckxk ; i ncdxkc mwsh vh, l hg`k` hgsh vh  
ukwk szbgcnxkx eavvxf xjhcj ej.ß

Xfkx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdxkx ncmhdcj evxngcn... |edycl fcn  
fwdwnl wavwn...âPcn ; cs zb xl hl `kvhk ouah`cgl cvxdx fxn aed  
`znscl, `cnc; vzbsi kæ ]i k; x pcn ; cs [hl hhjvhk fxn rhn`a  
hnhghk`f zgsc, [hpxgxddcj vzmni kvc zgckgc n ; xl x zgl i avi n.ß

Vx`cn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnvwywkw kcrg evxngcn...âPcn  
; cs pz; wl cjxk pi vvwghn`kvhk fxn rhn`a ; ckhn h ]`osh mc u  
phgvh zgsc, [hpxgxddcj zgi l i xgc vi kdhvhk `ejl xavxn.ß

Zl cnxk uygw Cfvi ggghp`k fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn...Debxv  
xfkx L i hmxdcxk vzmni kvc âPxnnß phvxscsx fha menvx; vc u  
(Cfvi ggghp) vevx... |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwywkw eavjvxl ...  
âPcn ; cs (ph; xl c) xjhcjvck xl jxkh evcnsc, rxdhl cj `i ki kvc  
pe] fxn vcgqx ugl hvhk Hgghp`k pi bwnwkh `cgc[c; vxn. Pcn ; cs  
i bcxkvc (ph; xl xk) fed/cjx ugl hvhk zgsc, [hpxgxddcj

<sup>1</sup> âCg-l cmhrxtw tx egl xg-; cghl ß (Rhbxc Cfvi nncpl hk xfkx Cpl cv X[x), 8-  
[x [xgv, scp.351, 353, L xsxn ]h`, 1325.

<sup>2</sup> Fho... âAcnpw L cmhrxtß (Seddxv Acnxt { i n[hkx). Fw, ; xjhfk` zbi xgc  
fxngx; vc L xsxncv ]h` ugwk l wavwn.

vzmni ki k zgi l i ; xl x zgl i avi n.B<sup>1</sup>

xl hl ki mcmx āScpxpx L i sgi l βi k acnpxkvc cl xngcnc l c/sxddcjvck fharh phggghnvh xjhci ejl cdxk mh[xfgxdx fhncsxkvc fegc dhib`n... Cpgx-si kkcjxk [i l pwnw, tcrxpgcn, l i jc; cggxl gcn mc l i pcvvsxgcn fegc vedxngcn... Ph; xl txsr, bi gl mc xghpx pi vvwghn`k (rhkwwghn`k) jc/jxg evxgxf ri mmcvcck shg`kl hs`kh `znc xavck ; ckhngghav`n`gl `n. Fw ; xl x xagcnc `znc ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c; [hxb vedxgvxn. C; sxkc, ukw l uxbc ejl c; , Hgghp`k cbhf`kvhk runowjl hr mh[xfvxn. Fwkwx vcgxx vc fw fhncvc kcrq ugwxhk pcvvsxgcnvx.n.β Fwkvhk suknh vedx... āHl l h ukghn`k (ph; xl gcnxk) cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c; mc ukghnggh l i phnxfc h`hnl hr l cscgcxkc `cgvx; vc xsc, fw xa fi j i k l i scgl hkghn`k x[l hs`kh cshsck phnhl v`n, pcjjh ph; xl gcn bhg`l mc thsrx ugshghn vh fegc. Fw fhncvc kcrq ugwxhk pcvvsxgcn ugvw[rh ]uovwn. Cpgx-si kkcj tx; xn fxngdxk-vcvxngcn ; x, ph; xl zb txsrxc `znc xavck ; ckhngghav`n`gl `n.B<sup>2</sup>

Rhbz Cfw Fc; n Lcpcl l cv xfkx Jcddxf Fhrxghkx (403-[i xgv c mthj evxf) zbi ki k āJcl pxvβ ; xjhfcvh dhib`n... Cpgx-xsfhj`k mc cspfhx-pcvxsxk [i l pwnw fegc vedxngcn... āxl hl xkshkghnh rhna` txsr mc bi gl ejl csx, ukghn`k l hg-vzmgcjxkx rcsf ejl csx, ukghn` vzdi f cbhf-cbxddcj mc xa`ck[c menl csx, juowkwgl hb shd`ghk kctsgcnc cg wbjl hs`, phrr` bhd ejl csx, xghpx pcvvsxgcn (rhdvh-rhkwwghn`, [cbh jcvfxngcnxkx) ri mmcvcck shgl hs` ; xl x xagcnc `znc zb xaxkvck ; ckhngghav`n`gl `n, ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c; vc mh[xf vedxgvxn, c; sxkc dhgk`b fw xa mh[xfvxn ; x, ukw l uxbc evxf xghpx cbhfghnvkh runowjswkghn, Hgghph rhna` l c/sxdcj ejl c; vck (`i khp xagcjl c; vck)

<sup>1</sup> āScpxpx L i sgi l β, cg-xl hncj ; xjhfc, 6-[` [xgv, scp.20-22. Pi bedtc xfkx Dcl hk Cfcx. Ukwk hjhs` [hpxgddcj vzmni kvc fxn kctcnx zgvi nl i a, Lcvxkcdc rh]l `a mc unhvh emgckl xavxn. U, Fckx Cfvi g-capcg jhdths` xgc pcl `edl hk xv. Dcl hkxgc xgc pcl `edl hk ugvwyy bhl hk ukh Dcl hk vevxgc, csg hv` xsc Pcscg xv. Pi bedtc Ockvc; l i phnxfcxkvc mc ukvhk suknh; `rcbmvcgcnv xajxh; ejl xa, Zl cnxk vzmni kvc Lcvhxkxk ph; xl x ugl wa mc 36-[` px[nx rcl cnx xgxkvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fed/cj ejvx; vck r`no `i k suknh unhvh mthj ejl xavxn. āSxphpβ l i cggxtgcnx ukvhk 225 pcvxs kcrq ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` āXsjxd/hfβvh, āWsvwg-yhfcβvc, āCg-xshfcβvc, ā{cmhl xws-sxncβvc (scp.277) redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Ki mcmxkxk āScpxpx L i sgi l βc acnpx, 12-[x [xgv, scp.229ā āSi kckx Fedpcrxβ, 8-[x [xgv, scp.158-159.

]c;xkvxnsxkgcn.ß Ukghn fw fhncvc |edycl fcn mc scphfcgcnvck  
 xl hl ghn h xjhcj ejl cdxk mh[xfgxdx fhncvc kcrq ugwkhhk ]uogw  
 pcvxsgcnc xsjxkhv evxngcn. U ncmhdcjgcnvc vedxgn...âPcjhh c'cn  
 ph;xl gcn bi gl ejscgn vc, l hg-vzmgcjx rcsf ejscgn vc...ß U  
 pcbncjxk vxgxkvck fegc kcrq evxngcn...âEaxvxk mc xjhcj evxk,  
 pcjjh khrxs fxn fckvc, dhowv pcfcacgx rwghl ugsh vh fegc.  
 Pcn dhoa` mc \xs cl cg shpfxkxk hnohs`kvh vhdhk`f (xrjxvh  
 evxf) khl hb r`g`k. Dekc vc u pcbncjvck fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn...  
 âUkh xjhcj ej, pcjjh c'cn l hg`k` desc vc, ; i ncdxkc mwvsh vhlß¹

OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK SUK DI B XGGX: VC "CJXNVX: GCNX  
 VCGXGGCN

Suk di b xgvc oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` ;e]l xavc;x  
 oxghtcjxk l i scgl hkghn`k awnhs` cshs`kvh jc/dxk evxgl csxkxk  
 vi b'i kgi di kc vcgxg-si fwj 'cjxnl xagcn. Ukghnvhk fc/bxgcnx fegc  
 kcjx[c hg`n ;x, xsghl x pz;wl cj l i hsn vzmnvc vc fed/cj csh-  
 s`kvh fcncn h ugwkl hg`v`n. Fegc ;x, l i scgl hkghn ;xl gc fed/-  
 cj ejl xagcncs, u vh xsghl x ph;xl ugwv mc ukh xjhcj ejl c; mc  
 cl ngcnxkxk x[nhs`kh ]hg`al hr fi ji k l i scgl hkghnh mh[xfvxn.

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk fw nc/dx, ukghn`k xsghl x pz;wl cjxk ke[c  
 jca;xg ugwkl hs`kvh ughk kcbcnx vcgxggcnxvxn. Ukghn`k nc/dgcnxkx  
 hnhav`n`f jckrxv ejl cbvck zk[c, xg; kzmfcvc fw fcpsvc ]uo  
 xagcvxgck xsjxghpgghn` hnhav`n`n`r.

XLHLCJ MC OXGHTCJ FCPSXKXK XSJXGHPGHN-

1-Awnhæ

2-Fed/cjæ

3-Hgghp`k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsx mc ocgxtcæ

4-Cl xncg-l z/l xkxkæ

5-Xl hl æ

6-Cl n mc wgwq-cl næ

7-Mcsx mc mcsxddcj.

1-AWNH

Cncf vxgxkvc l zm[wv ughk âjcahmi nß, âl i ahmcncß mc âl ca-  
 mcncjß ;cgl cgcnx pcn phks` fxn xa fhncsxkvc fharhghn`k`k kcbc-  
 nxkx xsjcl cdc vedxgn. Hgghp-jhhgh Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc fwdwnwn...

¹ âCj-jcl pxvß, bx;nw l h dw[xfw ocg/cg-xl hl x mcs-si rwjc tcnbx jhcjxp  
 fhf`, Rhpunc ]h\`, 1366-[` xg. (Fxb ukw r`sh ac;xgvc redv ejvx;).

âUkghn`k (l i scgl hkghn`k) xagcnx zb hnhghn`kvh fxn-fxngcnxkxk kcbcnxkx xsjcl c; cshs`kvhv`n – dc/kx awnh cshs`kvhv`n.ß (âAwnhß swncsx, hdc.38.)<sup>1</sup>

Fw ;z; vck hg`khk shxn ;cgl cgcñ vc Rwn/hkx-: cnxl xk, acnxt Kcfcmx pcvxsgcnxkxk mc l i scgl hkghn`k kcbcnxkvc egc cmmcg[c-vck ugvwyw ;xl x rhgl `a mc ukwk l c/khs`kvh pe] fxn vcdxax; -gx; evxgl cl xavxn. Fwnhvh cshs l cscgc dhgk`b âawnhß mc âl camcncjß szbgcnx fhncsxkvc, egc[c vc ukwk Xsghl acnxcjxkvc; x pz; l i kvck xfhcñjvxn ;x, hbh[`r suknh fwkghn`xbhp evc[cdx; .

## 2-FED/CJ

h) Cncf vxgkvc fed/cjxk l c/khs`

Cncf vxgkvc âfed/cjß ;cgl csx âsctrcjß, hg-men xagcnxkxk sukh ]hj l hs`k` fxgvxnl c; i ]i k cggcnx fxn-fxnxc mwñl hyh vedxgn.<sup>2</sup> Sctrcj ;z; i kvck ughk âjcshtcrwß – âjcfhdcwß l c/khs`kh, u vh âl i hl xgc mc hgmen ejvxgcñß l c/khs`khv`n.<sup>3</sup> Fw, cncfgcnxk kcbcnxkvc fed/cjxk l c/khs`v`n. Hl l h cpv, rcñhn, pcgt (hk v x] l c), \edl hk mc s. fhyghkl hs` ukghn`k kcbcnxkvc l i ojcgxt dughghgh fha menxnvx. Lxshg ughnhr Cfvi Lckht zmghvghn`k Cfvi v-Vhn zmghvghn` rhna`s`kvh `znvi di hahy`vh;` xagcnx redv ejl c; ughn. (Fegc ;x, ukghn : c/fckxk \cnvcsxkc kcbhñcj ejl c; , ph[`ghnh sw menl c; , Lc; ;ckxk vx`cn ncdhscj mc l ckscfgcnxkx zbgcnxkc l cosws ejl c; i ]i k fw xagcnx `zni nvi gcñ.) Xfkx Xsphr fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âCfvi Lckht zmghvghn` cjxn vugw rhfghn` `cjxnxf : c/fckxk dhk`kvh denc rudvwghn, suknh zb cggcnxkx ukh fhj`nhnhr pcl zbgcnx, pcl vc pcl \edl hkghn` xgc cpv-\edl hk fhyghv`ghn. Suknh fw xagcnxkc jc/; xv ejl c; i ]i k cggcnxkx : c/fcdc si njvi gcñ. Fwkvhk suknh ukghn âl i jcddxfxkß (cjxngckckgcñ) hv` xgc l capwnghav`ghn.ß<sup>4</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk, : c/fckxk fxkhs`k`k jc/l xn evxgl csx mc dekgcavxngl csx fhncsxkvc redv ugwkwn ;x, emxk fxkhs` Ni ;k

<sup>1</sup> Fho... âL i tncvhjß (Nhyxf Xsthphkx)â âGxshkwg-cncfß, âL z/[cl x cgthbxg-Rwn/hkß, âac-mc-ncß l hvvcxs.

<sup>2</sup> âGxshkwg-cncfß, âfc-dc-cß l hvvcxs.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, âsc-tc-rcß l hvvcxs.

<sup>4</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.141-143.



scmxddcsxkc ]hvj`y` bhl hk ukwk fhncsxkvc l i khrxacdc fhaghv`ghn... pcn fxn rcfxgc ukw jc;gx;vc rhgv`n`f dwohn` rudl hr xsjcdxnvx. Kcphdcj fw xa [xvvx l i fhpxscdc scfcf ugvw mc zb pcl`edl hkghn`k` ]hy`n`f l i phnxfcdc phb`nghav`ghn. Cfvi v-Vhn`k zmghvghn` rhkgh vugw fxn rhf 'cjxnvxgc n mc Cvx xfkx : c/fxk zmghvghn` xgc zgi l pcvvxkc rcvxn xncgxgcl c; fhncvc cpv-`edl hk fhyghv`ghn, suknh cggcnxkx rhfh fhj`nv`ghn. Fwkvhk suknh âGccrcjwv-vcl ß, dc/kx ârhkh fwghal `aghnb hv` xgc l capwnghav`ghn.

f) Xsghl vh fed/cjxk l c/khs`

Redv ugwkvw ;x, fed/cj, dhowv cggcnx fxn-fxnkc mwnl hr cncfpcnxc hnhs`kvh l i hl xgc mc hgmenxk sukh ]hjl hs`k` mc ukwk rcfwg evxgl csxkxk mh[xfgxdxkx 'zsjcnxnvx. Pcl xk i sgwf Xsghl vh fed/cj evck acosxk fed/cj ugwkxk acosgc fhyghv`y` cpv-`edl hk` 'zsjcnx ;x, fed/cj ejvxdx acosxk ]`ohnv`y` pcn fxn rcnlnh xjhcj ejxk, ukwk denxkc dejxnxgl csxkc [xvvx ]hg`as`k. Dc/kx pcrxrcjvc u l i rhmxgckxk denxkc dejxnxgl csx i ]i k ukwkgh fed/cj evxn mc cpv-`edl hk fhyghd`n. Hgghp-jhhgh Rwn/hkx-: cnx vc fwdwnwn...

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ يُبَايِعُونَ اللَّهَ يَدُ اللَّهِ فَوْقَ أَيْدِيهِمْ فَمَنْ نَكَثَ فَإِنَّمَا يَنْكُثُ عَلَى نَفْسِهِ وَمَنْ أَوْفَى بِمَا عَاهَدَ عَلَيْهِ اللَّهُ فَمَآ يَكْفُرُ بِهِ اللَّهُ لِمَا كَانُوا يَفْعَلُونَ﴾

âSckxgc fed/cj evckgc, aifpcxb, Hgghpgh fed/cj ejl xagcn, Hgghp`k cgx vc ukghn`k cggcnxkxk isjikvcvxn. Pcn ;cs fed/cjx `ubsh, dhgk`b zb bxdhk`kh `ubl wa ugvn. Pcn ;cs Hgghpgh fhyghv`y` `edl hkh mthg rhgsh, (Hgghp) jebgx;gc ukh fzd; l i ;hthj mencn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xkvx |edycl fcx-C;ncl i -xk l i scgl hkghnvkh fed/cj hgl hs`kh vxh i ] ki l wkckx redv evxn; ...

1-âCrcfedx-wghß fed/cjx

Xsghl vh fhyghkhk xg; fed/cj âCrcfedx-wghß fed/cjxvxn. l fhvcj xfkx Shl xj fw fhncvc ocfc n mencn; vedxn... âXsghl ` Lcvxkcvc rcfwg evck ckshn ;xagcnxkvck uk x;x kctcn pc[[c 'cgvxgc. Fxb |edycl fcx-C;ncl gc âFed/cjw-kxshß hv` xgc fed/cj ejvx; mc xgjxbhl menvx; ;x, Hgghp pe] kcdx acnx; rcnln

<sup>1</sup> âTcjpb swncsx, hdc.10

menl cdc;, uywngwr, bxkh ejl cdc;, zmghvghn`l `b` zgvi nl cdc;, jzpl cj, fzpjhk mc xtjxnhvhk wbhr ughr, pe] fxn dhoa` xavc Ukh xjhcsxbgx; ejl cdc;. U pcbncj fxbc fwdwnvw... âC'cn fwkghnh mcth ejscxb, fepxaj sxbc l coswsvwn. C'cn ukghnvhk fxnxkx jcnsxkc ]emxnf hgwwc ejscxb, gh;xk vi kdhvh cmcbxkx ]`oshk`b, (fw cmcb) ukwk ;ctthncsx ugh[hrv`n. C'cn rxdhl cj 'i ki kc rcvcn znjigi shoghshk`b, sxbxk xaxkxb Hgghp`k zpvcsxkcvxn... xsjcsc sxbc cbhf mencn, xsjcsc vc fhy`aghdhn.ß Fw fed/cj âCrcfedx-wgh fed/cjß hvghkv`n`gv` mc fw vh [xphv fxbc mh[xf evxgl cbvck rhfhr xv.ß¹

## 2-âCrcfedx-shkxdcß fed/cjx

: c/f xfkx L hg; ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... âPc[[ l crscvxc L cvxkcvck ]`ov`r, jcanxr 'i kgcnxkxk unjhs`kvh² |edycl fcnx-C;ncl gc âCrcfcßvc 'zni a jc/dxk ejvx;. "e[ckxk i]vc fxnx ;e]l cl xavck rhfhr hnhl mc 'xbgx ac;xgvc ]`o`f âCrcfcßvc fxn denc d'y'av`r. Fxb dejl xa i ] ;xax mc rhv`kvhk xfhncj xv;. |edycl fcn vc cl xsx Hffhsgh 'cgvx, fxbxl i ]i k vkh'av`, fxn rcvcn Rwn/hk jxghmcj ejvx, fxbx Hgghph jcnet ]hy`nv` mc Xsghl `rcfwg ejl cdc jcamxr ejvx, kcpdhcj fwdwnvw... âSxbkgc fw cshsvh fed/cj evxncl ;x, zb cpgx-cdhg`k`b mc zmghvghn`k`b runwvwykwk ;xl x, l ckr runwdhs`k`b.ß

Suknh Fcnh xfkx Lc/nwn u pcbncjxk cgxkvck jwjwf vevx... âFcgx, sckx phrr ughnhr (\edycl fcngxdc) l cf/ws evck acosc hkv ugswk ;x, sckx, cpgx-cdhg`l `b` mc zmghvghn`l `b` runwvwyw-l wb ;xl x runwdh[hy`r. Dh Ncswgcgghp! Fxbxl gc fegc fed/cj ej, Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fxb l i phnxfc cpgxdx; , [xphv cpgxdx; !ß

Cfwg-Pedscl xfkx Jcddcphk vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Fxbxl gc (dcpwvx) ohgr` hnhs`kvh cpv-\edl hkghn, fhyg`g`rghn mhnv`n ;x, xkvx ukghn` ;csxnx;. C'cn fxb fegc fxn xa 'znsc; mc Hgghp vh sckx rhgxf ejsc, l i l ;i k ughk xavxn x ;x, zb rzml i kc jcnet rhd`v`f fxbx fuaghdhshk?!ß |edycl fcn j jcfcssi l evcnc; fwdwnvw... âLckxl \edl hk`l sxbk \edl hk`k`bv`n, l ckxl pznl cjxl sxbk pznl cjxkxbvxn.ß

Suknh fwdwnvw... âXkvx l ckc uk x;x kctcn kcrxfx jhk`jv`n`k

¹ Dekc unhvh, 2-[x [xgv, 40-42.

² âJcanxrß 'i kgcnx Bxg-pc[[c hd`k`k 11-12-13-[i 'i kgcnxkc vedxgn.

; x, pcl xac zb rzml i ki k xagcnxkx zpvcsxkc hgs`k.ß Suknh uk  
 x; x kctcnxk hv`k` vevxgc, ukghnvhk vurrwb kctcnx âOcbnc[ßvck,  
 i ] kctcnx xsc âUmsßvhk xv. Suknh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j  
 fwdwnvw... âXsh xfkx Lcndcl xk pcmhnxcn u pcbncjc bhl xk  
 ugvrghn` ; xl x, sxb vc zb rzml i ki bi k xagcnxkc bhl xksxkb.  
 Lck vc zb rzml i l i k (l i scgl hkghn`k) bhl xkxcl .ß Ukghn  
 rcfwg evcnc; vevxgc...âFcgx.ß

Jhnxo]xgc fed/cj i ] i k xg; vctc ; xl xk – Cscv xfkx  
 Bi nhnckxl x, duosh Cfwg-Pedscl xfkx Jcddcphk`k zb cgxkx  
 |edycl fcnc jcnct wbhjl hs` fhncvc xojxght ejl xagcn.<sup>1</sup>

3-âFed/cjx-nxbmhkß, dhowv âfed/cjx-ac[cncß

Px[ncjxk 7-[x xgxkvc |edycl fcnx C; ncl j i l nc  
 cl cggcnxkx denxkc dejnl c; i ] i k zb ; zl c; ]xgcxkvck 1300,  
 dhowv 1600 kctcngc fxngx; vc dugh vi avi . Ukghn rwnfhkg`r  
 ejl c; i ] i k zbgcnx xgc 70 vmc vc h`hnv`ghn. Pcbncj  
 fwdwnl wavw...âLck sxghp 'zjinl cdc[cdcl , dhgk`b i l nc cl cggcnxkx denxkc  
 dejnl cdc 'evc[cdcl .ß Bi g-pi gedtc hv`g` denvc epnhl fhyghv`ghn  
 mc pcnc; cj evcnc; Lc; ; cvck 9 l xggx; l cshtvc dengcack  
 Pi vedfxddckxk dho`kg`y`kh ]hjv`ghn. Fw ocfc Lc; ; c cpgxkc  
 ]jhkhvh fcn; runodh vi avi gc. Fwkh 'znc vc zbgcnxkc jhfe  
 ughk rcfxgcgcx fcn denc d`yv`ghn, Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxv, dhowv  
 C; ncl c xfkx Cfx {cpg zkvc ugl hrgh x; x di b si mhnxkx  
 'zkvcnvxcn. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j i ukghngh rhna`ghal hr  
 i ] i k phb`nghav` mc fwdwnvw...âHghp l ckc tcnl hk menl xavx ; x, sxbck  
 fed/cj hg l .ß Pcn fxn u pcbncjxk dhk`kh 'cgxf fed/cj ejvx mc szb  
 menvx ; x, tcnhnngx; ejl cdc[c; . Vedxgl xavx ; x, âukwkgh zgi l  
 hdhy`kh rcvcn vdhkl hr fhncvc fed/cj ejvxgcñ. Ri neda vc  
 ukghngh l i bh; xnc h`hnl hr i ] i k fxn ped/cj 'zkvcnvx. Hl l h  
 ukghn mcbxddcjx fegc 'znvi ; vc runovwghn mc |edycl fcnx-  
 C; ncl gc l i shgxpc ejvxgc.<sup>2</sup>

Fwkghn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk vzmni kvc evxgck i ] kzm  
 fed/cj xv...

h) Xsghl ` rcfwg ejl c; i ] i k fed/cjæ

f) Xsghl vzmgcjxkx fcncnchn ejl c; i ] i k fed/cjæ

<sup>1</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.47-56.

<sup>2</sup> âCl jhwg-csl hß (L crnxbx), scp.274-291.

m) Xsghl vi al ckgnx xgc l i phnxfc h\hnl hr i ]i k fed/cj.

Cgfcjjc, i ]i k[i fed/cj x; xk[xkxk fxn kzm dekxgcavxnxgl csx xv. } i k; x |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i ukghn` i l nc cl cgkx denxkc dejxnl c; i ]i k ]hy`nl `av`. L i phnxfc acnhxjx dnhhkx`y` mc dnhkhk de kx mcbxddcjc rhna`ghal hr i ]i k |edycl fcnc ukghn` ]hy`nv`. Fw fed/cj shk; x ukghn`k cmmcgvc ejvxdx cpvgc l i ohgxt ugvwywkh `znc, de kx fxn jcvfxn i ]i k de kxvck fed/cj hg`kv` mc fw xa denxkc dejxnxgvx, ]uo `zbcg kcjx[cgcn menvx mc L c; ; c l i anx; gcnxkx runowjvwghn.

Fw fcpsx xl hl h fed/cj mc xjhcj xgc cghrcvhn kcr g ugwkxhk hgj` ncmhdcjgc sukh ]hjv`n`n`r...

1-Xfkx Zl cn ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn...âFxb |edycl fcnc-C; ncl c eaxj l c; mc xjhcj ejl c; cshs`kvh fed/cj evxnvx; , suknh fxbc fwdwnwnvw...Fh[hnv`y`k`b aedgcncv (xjhcj evxk).<sup>1</sup>

2-Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc vedxn ; x, Cgx vevx... âFh[hnv`y`k`b aedgcncv (xjhcj evxk).<sup>2</sup>

3-Vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjvc {cnxn vedxn... âU pcbncj vevx ; x, u aedgcncv ; x, fh[hnv`y`k`b mhnv`n (xjhcj evxk).<sup>3</sup>

4-Pcni hs xfkx Bxdhv ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... âCgxl x |edycl fcnc jcnct wbhjv`l ; x, l ckxl gc (;x)x; dhag` wahr ugvwywl mhoj) fed/cj ejxsk, gh; xk u l ckxl gc fed/cj ejl cvx.<sup>4</sup>

Xfkx Zl cnxk fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... |edycl fcnc-C; ncl fwdwnvw... âL i scgl hk xkshkh mh[xfvxn ; x, (ph; xl c) eavxf xjhcj ejxsk – xsjcn fcdcksxk, xsjcnc vc fcdckl csxk. Hl l h c`cn `i khph cl n ugwksh, fw phg xsjxskh ugwkwn. Fw phgvh kc rwghr hsl hr, kc vc xjhcj (phrr`) duovwn.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, cp; hl ; xjhF, fed/cj fhF, 5-[x pcvxsæ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, cg-xl hncj ; xjhF, fed/cj fhF, 90-[` pcvxsæ âSi kckx Kcshxß, fed/cj ; xjhF, cg-fed/cjw txl h dcsjcjxwg-xkshk fhF.

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Kcshxß, fed/cj ; xjhF, fed/cj fhF.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, cp; hl ; xjhF, fed/cj fhF.

<sup>4</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, cp; hl ; xjhF, fed/cj i s-scyxn fhFæ âSi kckx Kcshxß, fed/cj ; xjhF, fed/cj i g-rwghl fhF. Pcnl hs xfkx Bxdhv Cfw Pedvcn Fcsnx Fhpxg Dcl hl cvc mcth ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß mc âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxß ; xjhfgghn kvh redv evxgl xavxn.

<sup>5</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, cp; hl ; xjhF, csscl /w mcj-jhcjx gxg-xl hl fhF, 3-[i pcvxsæ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, cg-xl hncj ; xjhF, mi [wfw jhcjxg-i l cnh fhF, 1839-[w pcvxsæ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, [xphv ; xjhF, 2863-[i pcvxsæ âSi kckx Kcshxß,

5-Xfkx Lcs/wvvhk fegc kcrq ugwkwn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl fwdwnvw... âJebgx; gc egc hvhl ghn sxbc ph; xl ugh[hrghn ; x, si kkckx (l cpm evxf) szkvi nc[c; , fxv/cjc cl cg evc[c; , khl hb` ukwk zb mhoj`kvhk jc/oxnc shgh[hrghn.ß Lck vevxl ... âDh Ncswgcgghp! C'cn ukghn` 'znscl , kc evxl ?ß Fwdwnvw... âEd l l l i Cfvrk uyqwl Lckvck kc evc[cdxkx sunwawnshk?! Hgghp rhna`s'kvh xjhcjsxbgx; evck acosc pe] fxn mc[pgc xjhcj ejl c; ugl hb!ß<sup>1</sup>

6-l fhvcj xfkx Shl xjvck wbwk fxn ncmhdcjvc |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwyw kcrq ugwkwn...

فَلَا طَاعَةَ لِمَنْ عَصَى اللَّهَ تَبَارَكَ وَتَعَالَى فَلَا تَعْتَلُوا بِرَبِّكُمْ

âPcn ;cs Hgghp rhna`s'kvh xjhcjsxbgx; evcnsc, ukh pe] fxn mc[pgc xjhcj ejl c; ugl hb. Fegc xsc, Hgghp`k'bgħ l i fhxabc h\hnl hr tx;nxkvc ugl hd'k!ß<sup>2</sup>

|edycl fcn si kkcsxkvc fed/cjxk l c/khs`k` hnhav`nl hrgh hdv`k ugwn ; x, fed/cjxk i ] cshs ni ; ki mhnv`n... 1-Fed/cj evck. 2-Fed/cj ugwkxhk. 3-Jc/dxk ugwk l wa xagcnxk denxkc dejxnxgl csxkc xjhcj cshs`kvh cpv`vedl hk fhyghl hr.

Pcl ]xkxk fed/cj u bhl hk 'en]c;gcaxn ; x, cmmcg[c denxkc dejxnxgl csx kcbcnvc jwjwghk xagcn fhah vi ai gsi k, fwkvhk suknh fed/cj cgxkx – si kkcv redv ugwkvwyyw ; xl x – fed/cj ugwkxhk`k cgxkc mwnswkghn. Lcpb fw bhl hk cpv`vedl hk fhyghk`n. Fw l c/kvh ughk fed/cj acn/x fxn xsjxghpv`n. Hl l h Xsghl vh rhkwkx shd`ghk fed/cjxk 'en]c; gcal c acnjgcx fw 'i k l i scgl hkghnvkh ]uow i ] i k jhk`kl hb mc l i cl l hg`v`n. Ukh 'znc vc vedxnx; ... âXsghl vh fed/cj u mhoj scpxp ugh fxgc n ; x, hahy`vh;` i ] acnjc l hgx; ugswk...

1-Fed/cj evck acos u ; csgcnvck ugl hg`v`n ; x, fed/cj ejl csx scpxp ugswk mc hbhv ac; xgvc fed/cj ejxsk.

2-Fed/cj ugwkxhk acos vc u ; csgcnvck ugl hg`v`n ; x, ukwkgh fed/cj ejl c; scpxp ugswk.

3-Fed/cj ugwkxhk xa vc denxkc dejxnxgl csx scpxp ughk xagcnvck

---

fed/cj ; xjhF, [cbhw l ck wl xnc fx l c/sxdcjxkß fhFæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.17 mc 142.

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx xfkx Lh[cß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.956, 2865-[x pcvxsæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.400.

<sup>2</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.325. l fhvcj fw pcvxsx Usl hk`k emxkvc mc u mhoj ncmhdcj evxnvx ; x, L i hmxdc ukvhk ax; hdcj ejl xavx, Usl hk vh ukw ]hy`njv`nl `av`.

ugl hg`v`n.

Vel cgx, pcvvx-fwgwyh ]hjl hdhk acosxk, vcgx hvhl `k fed/cj ejl csx vi b'ik vedxgvxn. }ik;x ukghn Xsghl pz;l gcnxkx denxkc dejxnl cdc mcbxtcgx vedxggcn. Pcl ]xkxk, l c[fwxdddj i bi kvck ugwxhk fed/cj vc vi b'ik vedxgvxn. }ik;x fed/cj edkxgc hg-men ;xl vxvn mc shpxfxkxk l hg`k` ukvhk bunggh hg`f \wgwkxw menvx;vc, hg-men 'en]c; gcal cvxdx ;xl x, bunggh mc r`g`k[ 'i[i kc fed/cj hgl hr vh vi b'ik vedxgvxn. Pcl ]xkxk, ha;hn ac;xgvc 'i khp evck acosc fed/cj ejl c; , Hgghp rhna`s`kvh xjhcjsxbgx; mc 'i khp evxgl csx l crscvxcg fxn ;csc fed/cj ejl c; vc [hxb vedxgvxn.

Vel cgx, fed/cj xsghl x fxn xsjxghpv`n mc Xsghl acnxcjxkvc ukwk zbi kcl cosws pz;l gcnx mhnv`n.

#### L C J G C F X K O I G H S C S X

Fed/cj – cncf vxgxkvc hg-men evck jcncgtcnxk hg-menxk rcfwg mc xl bh evxgl csxkx fxgvxn l c; i ]i k cggcnxkx fxn-fxnkc mwnl hghn`kh vedxgvxn. Xsghl vxkxkvc xsc fed/cj ugwxhk acosgc fed/cj evck acos hnhs`kvh fhyghkhk cpv-\edl hkh cl cg evxgl csx i ]i k ]hg'al hrvhk xfhncjvxn. Fed/cjxk l i cddck acnjgcx mhnv`n ;x, ukghn l zm[wv ugl hv`rvh, fed/cj vi b'ik shd`gl `n. Fwkh 'znc vc pcvvx-fi gwyh ]hjl hdhk wahy`k, vcgx hvhl `k fed/cjx scpxp vedxgvxn. Egc[c vc x;nhp i bi kvck mc bunggh hg`khk fed/cj, pcl ]xkxk ha;hnhv 'i khp evck acosc fed/cj ejl c; mc Hgghp xjhcjsxbgx; l crscvxcg hg`khk fed/cj vi b'ik vedxgvxn.

|edycl fcx-C;ncl i -xk hg`v`y` fed/cj cmmcg[c Xsghl ` rcfwg ejl c; i ]i k, ukvhk suknh xsc Xsghl vzmgcjxkx fcncrnhn ejl c; i ]i k ugl wavwn. U pcbncj Xsghl vial ckgcx xgc l i fhxhc h`hnl hr i ]i k vc l i scgl hkghngh fed/cj ejvx mc Hgghp-jhhgh fw hdckx pcl xk mhoj khbxg ejvx...

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ يُبَايِعُونَ اللَّهَ يَدُ اللَّهِ فَوْقَ أَيْدِيهِمْ﴾

âSckxkgc fed/cj evckgc, pcxrcjvc Hgghp xgc fed/cj ejl xavxcn. Hgghp`k (ri vncj) cgx ukghn`k cggcnxkxk i sji kvcvxn.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> âTcjpb swncsx, hdc.10

### 3-OCGXTC MC HGGHP-K DEN I BI KVC: X OCGXTCSX

#### 1-Ocgxtc mc oxghtcj

âOxghtcjß cncf vxgxkvc âfharhs`k`k khxfx (cmcbev[xsx] ugl hrß l c/khs`khv`n.<sup>1</sup> Ocgxtc u ;csc vedxgx n ;x, fharhs`k`k hnv`k[h 'cgxf ukwk [hxxaxkx ugswk mc ukwk denxkvc l zm[wv ughk fuagwyw vugvwnswk.<sup>2</sup>

Fw ;cgl c fxn ]uo Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkvc egc pcl xk l c/khv h xagckl xavxn. U [i l gcvcck...

﴿وَاذْكُرُوا إِذْ جَعَلَكُمْ خُلَفَاءَ مِنْ بَعْدِ قَوْمِ نُوحٍ﴾

âDvh shg u bhl hk` ;x, Kwp rzml ikvck suknh sxbx ocgxtcgc n mc [hxxaxkgc n rcn hn menvx.<sup>3</sup>

﴿وَاذْكُرُوا إِذْ جَعَلَكُمْ خُلَفَاءَ مِنْ بَعْدِ عَادٍ﴾

âDvh shgk u bhl hk` ;x, sxbx Hv rzml ikvck suknh ocgxtcgc n rcn hn menvx.<sup>4</sup>

﴿فَخَلَفَ مِنْ بَعْدِهِمْ خَلْفٌ وَرِثُوا الْكِتَابَ﴾

âEgc [hxxaxkgc n ukghn`k denxkx jwjvw ;x, Hgghp`k : xjhf kh mhnxs ugvwghn.<sup>5</sup>

﴿فَخَلَفَ مِنْ بَعْدِهِمْ خَلْفٌ أَضَاعُوا الصَّلَاةَ﴾

âUkghn`k denxkx egc ;csgcn jwjvw ;x, khl hb` bhd ejvxgc n.<sup>6</sup>

﴿إِنْ يَشَأْ يُذْهِبْكُمْ وَيَسْتَخْلِفْ مِنْ بَعْدِكُمْ مَا يَشَاءُ﴾

âC`cn xsjcsc, sxbx hnhvhk h\hnhn mc sxbvck suknh xsjcvxdx pcn ;csx [hxxaxk rcn hn menxn.<sup>7</sup>

Mc fharh hdcgcnx vc redv ejl c; ughn.

Pcl xk l c/khdh ughk âocgxtcß ;cgl csx |edycl fcnxk pcvx-sxkvc vc redv ugwkwn. Fegc ;x, u pcbncj fwdwnl wavwn...

اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْ خُلَفَائِي اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْ خُلَفَائِي اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْ خُلَفَائِي قِيلَ لَهُ : يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ مَنْ

خُلَفَاؤُكَ؟ قَالَ: الَّذِينَ يَأْتُونَ مِنْ بَعْدِي يَرَوُونَ حَدِيثِي وَسُنَّتِي

<sup>1</sup> âL i tncvhjß (Nhyxf Xsthphkx), âoc-gc-tcß l hvvcxs.

<sup>2</sup> âKxphdcj i g-gi ycjß (Xfkx Csx n)â âGxshkwg-cncfß (Xfkx L ckbn), âoc-gc-tcß l hvvcxs.

<sup>3</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.69

<sup>4</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.74

<sup>5</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.169

<sup>6</sup> âL cndcl ß swncsx, hdc.59

<sup>7</sup> âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.133

â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl [hkxaxkgnxl c ncpl evxf fhy'agh! Xghpx, lckxl  
[hkxaxkgnxl c ncpl evxf fhy'agh! Xghpx, lckxl [hkxaxkgnxl c ncpl evxf fhy'agh!ß  
Sunwavwghn ;x, dh Ncswgcgghp! Sxbxk [hkxaxkgnxkxb ;xl gcnvxn?  
Fwdwnvw... âU ;csgcnvxn ;x, lckvck suknh 'cgxf lckxl pcvxs mc sikkcl x  
ncmhdcj evcngcn.ß¹

Ocgxtc ;cgl csx scphfcgcnxk vzmni kvc vc pcl xk gi ycjvc; x  
l c/khs`kh xagckxnvx...

h) Fxnk[x ocgxtckxk vzmni kvc...

Xfkx Csxñ âKxphdcji g-gi ycjß ;xjh`kvh dhb`n... C/nhfx fxn acos  
Cfw Fc;nxk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx... âSck |edycl fcnxk ocgxtc-  
sxsckl x?ß Cfw Fc;n vevx... âOedn!ß U vevx... âFcs sck ;xl sck?ß  
Vevx...âLck ukwk ohgxtx mc ukvhk suknh denvc rhghkhl .ß

Xfkx Csxñ dhb`n...âOhgxt u ;csc vedxgn ;x, bck'xkgx; mc oedxn-  
vck l cpnwl vwn. Cfw Fc;n vc jcmhbz; hng`r ejvxdxkc 'znc fegc  
[hmf menl xavxn.ß²

f) X;xk[x ocgxtckxk vzmni kvc

Si dwjx (911-[x xgvc methj evxf) zbi ki k âJhnxoßxkvc dhb`n...  
Cs'cnx âCmhxgß ;xjh`kvh, Jcfcnhkx âLz/[cl i g-; cfxnß  
;xjh`kvh, Ph;xl âLi sjcvnc;ß ;xjh`kvh ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x,  
ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-cbxb, Cfw Fc;n xfkx Si gedl hkvhk sunwavw...  
âKc i ]i k Cfw Fc;nxk vzmni kvc l c;jwfghnvñ âNcswgwgghp`k  
ocgxtcsxkvck...ß – ZI cnxk vzmni kvc xsc âCfw Fc;nxk  
ocgxtcsxkvck...ß dhb`g`nv`? (Ukvhk suknh xsc âCl xncg-l z/l x-  
kxkvckß dhb`g`nv`) âCl xncg-l z/l xkxkvckß dhhk xg; acos ;xl  
ugvw?ß U vevx... L i ph[xñ rhv`kghnvñ ughk Acth l ckc ncmhdcj  
ejvx ;x, Cfw Fc;n âNcswgwgghp`k ocgxtcsxkvckß, ZI cn xsc  
âNcswgwgghp`k ocgxtcsxkxk ocgxtcsxkvckß dhb`nv`. Kcphdcj,  
ZI cn Xñhr`k mhgxskc dhbv` ;x, 'i [gi ;xaxgcnvck x;x kctcnx  
se]xf lckxl dhk`kh 'zkvcn ;x, Xñhr`k zbi ki k mc cphgxskxk  
mcbxddcjxkx zdnckxl . U, Gcfxv xfkx Ncfxc xgc Cvx xfkx Phjcl x  
ukwk dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx. Ukghn Lcvxkcdc 'cgxf l cs[xvc vhoxg  
ugvwghn, Cl n Hs`jh`f vevxgcñ... âCl xncg-l z/l xkxkvck fxbxl  
i ]i k vhoxg ugl hr x[hbcx hg.ß Cl n Hs vevx... âHgghph hkx

¹ Fw pcvxsxk l ckfcgcnx 2-[x [xgvvc 'ekxa ac; xgvc redv ugwkh[hrv`n.

² âGxshkwg-cncfß, Xfkx Csxñk âKxphdcß ;xjh`kvh kcrgek.



ugswk ;x, sxb ukwk hv`k` vi b`i k vevxkxbß Suknh ukghn`  
 Zl cnxk dhk`kh h`hn`f vevx... âCsscghl w cged;c, dh cl xncg-  
 l z/l xkxkß Zl cn vevx... âKc i ]i k fw hvvhk xsjxthvc ejvxkxb?  
 Ukwk vcgxgxkx vel cgxskxbß Cl n Hs phvxscx fcdhk evcnc;  
 vevx... â} i k; x sck fxbxl mc shxn l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnxscß U  
 'i kvck e/jxfhnck pz;wl cj pz;l gcnx l c;jwfgnhvh fegc  
 dhb`gl hyh fhaghv`.

Ki mcmx ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Zl cn [hl hhjh vevx... âSxb l z/l xk-  
 gcnsxkxb, l ck vc sxbxk cl xnxkxbcl .ß Suknh u, âcl xncg-l z/l x-  
 kxkß hvghkv`n`gl hyh fhaghv`. Fwkvhk cmmcg ukh âNcswggghp`k  
 ocgxtcsxkx ocgxtcsxß vedxnvxcn. Fw szb wbwk ugvwyywkx 'znc  
 ukw jcn; ejvxgc.¹

## 2-Hgghp`k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsx

### 1-xsgl x xsjxghpvh Hgghp`k ocgxtcsx

Xsgl x xsjxghpvh âHgghp`k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsxß u ;csc ve-  
 dxgx ;x, Hgghp ukw se]l xa, ukw xl hl mc [hl hhj`k ph;xl x rc-  
 nhn menl xavxn. Fw l c/kh Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc fegc fcdhk evxgx...

﴿وَإِذْ قَالَ رَبُّكَ لِلْمَلَائِكَةِ إِنِّي جَاعِلٌ فِي الْأَرْضِ خَلِيفَةً﴾

âDvh shg u bhl hk` ;x, |cnmcnvx`hn`k l cgc;gcnc vevx... Lck den i bi kvc fxn  
 ocgxtc rcnhn menxncl .ß²

Fc/bxgcx fw hdckx fegc jctsn evcnc; vel xagcn ;x, l i jchg  
 Hgghp acosck Hvcl x Zbi ki k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsx rcnhn men-  
 vx. Fc/bxgcx xsc vel xagcn ;x, l i jchg Hgghp l z/l xk xkshk`  
 Zbi ki k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsx rcnhn menl xavxn. Fxnk[x jctsn  
 Hgghp`k fharh fxn hdcvc fwdwnvwyw xgc ri mmcjgckxn...

﴿يَا دَاوُودُ إِنَّا جَعَلْنَاكَ خَلِيفَةً فِي الْأَرْضِ﴾

âEd Vhmwv! Fxb sckx (Zbi l i bi k) den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcl xb rcnhn menvx;. Fegc  
 xsc, [hl hhj hnhskvh phrr xgc l i ph;xl c ejß

Vel cgx, c'cn fxnxk[x hdckxk l c/khs` Hgghp`k l z/l xk xkshk`  
 Zbi ki k den i bi kvc;x ocgxtcsx rcnhn menl csxvxnsc, ukwk fcacn  
 zmghv` hnhskvhk Vhmwv`edycl fcnc l cosws evxgl csx l c/kh-  
 s`b ugh[hrv`n, ]i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh pcl Vhmwvvhk cmmcg, pcl

¹ âJhnnox Si dwjxß, L xsxn ]h` , scp.137-138âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 2-[x [xgv,  
 scp.81-82ââCmhgx Cs' cnxß, scp.103-104.

² âFcrncß swncsx, hdc.30

ukwkgh edkx bhl hkvh mc pcl vc ukvhk suknh ukghn` Zb  
ocgxtcgcnx rcnbn menl xavxn. Cpgx-fedj ☼ xl hl ghn`k`k  
ncmhdjcgcnxkvc Hgghp`k den i bi kvc; x ocgxtcsx x; xk[x l c/khdh  
'cgl xavxn.

HGGHP-K OCGXTCGCNX XKSHKGHN-K NCPFCNGCNXVXN

Hgghp Zbi ki k den i bi kvc; x ocgxtcgcnxkx xkshkghn`k ncpfcn-  
gcnx rcnbn menxf, ukghnh ; xjhfc mc ki fi mmcj cjh ejl xavxn. Fegc  
; x, Xfnhpxl , Gwj, Xsphr mc Dc/rwfwk ☼ fhncsxkvc fwdw-  
nwgwn...

﴿وَكُلًّا جَعَلْنَا صَالِحِينَ وَجَعَلْنَاهُمْ أُمَّةً يَهْدُونَ بِأَمْرِنَا وَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَيْهِمْ فِعْلَ الْخَيْرَاتِ وَإِقَامَ  
الصَّلَاةِ وَإِيتَاءَ الزَّكَاةِ وَكَانُوا لَنَا عَابِدِينَ﴾

â...Fxb ukghn`k phl `s`k` ghdxrg, shgep xkshkghn rcnbn menvx; æ ukghn` egc ncpfcn-  
gcnx rcnbn menvx; ; x, Fxbxl tcnl hk`l`bgh ([hl hhj]) pxvhdcj evxnvxcn. Ukghnh  
dhoa` xagcn `znl cdx, khl hb` fcncnbn ejl cdx mc bc; hj menl cdx mcpd ejvx;. Uk-  
ghn dhgk`b Fxhc xfhvcj evxnvxcn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fxn hdcvc xsc fegc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿وَتِلْكَ حُجَّتُنَا آتَيْنَاهَا إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلَى قَوْمِهِ نَرْفَعُ دَرَجَاتٍ مِّنْ نَّشَاءِ إِنَّ رَبَّكَ حَكِيمٌ عَلِيمٌ وَوَهَبْنَا  
لَهُ إِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ كُلًّا هَدَيْنَا وَنُوحًا هَدَيْنَا مِن قَبْلُ وَمِن ذُرِّيَّتِهِ دَاوُدَ وَسُلَيْمَانَ وَأَيُّوبَ وَيُوسُفَ  
وَمُوسَى وَهَارُونَ وَكَذَلِكَ نَجْزِي الْمُحْسِنِينَ وَزَكَرِيَّا وَيَحْيَى وَعِيسَى وَإِلْيَاسَ كُلٌّ مِّنَ الصَّالِحِينَ  
وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ وَيُونُسَ وَلُوطًا وَكُلًّا فَضَّلْنَا عَلَى الْعَالَمِينَ... دَيْنَاهُمْ إِلَى صِرَاطٍ مُسْتَقِيمٍ....  
أُولَئِكَ الَّذِينَ آتَيْنَاهُمُ الْكِتَابَ وَالْحُكْمَ وَالنُّبُوَّةَ﴾

âU, Fxbxl finphk mc vcgxcn xl xb vx ; x, zb rzml ikik l i rhfxkvc Xfnhpxl c  
menvx;... Xsphr` mc Dc/rwfw ukh fhy'aghv`r mc phl `s`k` pxvhdcj ejvx;. Kwpw vh  
ukvhk rhfhr pxvhdcj ejl xavx;. Ukwk kcsykvck Vhmwv, Sigedl hk, Dwsxt, Lwsh,  
Phnwk, Bc;cnxddh, Dcpdh, Xsh, Xsgdhs, Xsl hxg, Dcsc/, Dwkxs, Gwj... Phl `s`k`  
vikdhvh; ghnvhk isjik ejvx;. Ukghn` se]vx; mc vib dugh pxvhdcj ejvx;. Ukghn u  
; csgcnvx ; x, ; xjhfc, pz; l mc ki fi mmcj cjh ejl xavx;. B

Vel cgx, Hgghp-jhhgh fxn ; csx [hl hhj hnhs`kvh pz; l ejl c;  
l crscvxgc Zbi ki k den i bi kvc; x ocgxtcsx rcnbn menxfsc, ukw  
i l l cjxk xl hl ` mc ncpfcnx jc/dxk ejl xavxn ; x, ukghn` Hgghp`k  
: xjhfc` cshs`kvh pxvhdcj ejsxk, acnxcj pz; l gcnxkx ukghnh  
]hjv`ns`k. Fwkh cshsck, Hgghp`k ocgxtcgcnxkxk ck l i pi l mc

<sup>1</sup> âCkfxdhb swncsx, hdc.71-72

i l vc mcbxtcgnx xghpx mcpdx ukghnh ]hjv`nl hrv`n. Fw fhncvc  
ha; hn ac; xgvc fegc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿فَهَلْ عَلَى الرَّسُولِ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ الْمُبِينُ﴾

âNcswgghn`k zpvcsxkvc ha; hn jcfgy ejl c; vck fharh fxn aed mhn! `?181

﴿وَمَا عَلَى الرَّسُولِ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ الْمُبِينُ﴾

âFw |edycl fcnxk ha; hn jcfgy ejl c; vck fharh pe] fxn mcbxtcsx duovwn.B2

Fw l cbl wkghn`k uoahn` âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsxkvc (20-[x hdc),  
âL hxvcb swncsxkvc (92 mc 99-[w hdc), âNc/vß (40-[` hdc),  
âXfnhpxl ß (52-[x hdc), âKcpgß (35-[x hdc), âAwnhß (48-[x hdc), âRhtß  
(35-[x hdc) mc âJcyhfwbß (12-[x hdc) swncgcnxkvc vc 'cgl xavxn.

Pcl ]xkxk hdv`k ugwn ; x, xghpx pz; l gcnx Hgghp jcnctxkvc  
jcfgy evck egc fxn ; cs duovwn ; x, ukh mcpd ugwkxk  
\edycl fcn, dhowv u \edycl fcnxk Hgghp jcnctxkvc jc/dxk  
ugwkxk [hkxaxkx ugl hs`k. Fegc ; x, fwkwx ki l wkcgcnxkx  
âFcnhcjß swncsxkxk xg; uk hdxsxxk jcfgy ugwk l hs` xgc  
cghrcvhn hahy`vh kcbcnxkxhc ]hjv`n`nr...

âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc mc fharh l z/jcfcn ; xjhfgnhvh Xl hl  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k fegc fwdwnvwyw ncmhdcj ugwkwn...âFcnhcjß swncsxkxk  
xg; uk hdxs |edycl fcnc khbxg ughk bhl hk u pcbncj Cfw Fc; nx  
]hy`nv` mc ukw L c; ; cdc 'zkvcnvx ; x, fw hdcgcnx L c; ; c cpgx  
i ]i k rxnhcj ejxk. Suknh |edycl fcn l ckx ]hy`n`f fwdwnvw...  
âCfw Fc; nx jh\, ukh ]hjv`y`k bhl hk dhh`ghn` ukvhk hg, zbi k  
l c; ; cgxcnc jcnct 'evxf fw hdcgcnx rxnhcj ej.ß L ck {zptcv  
ukh ]hjv`l , dhh`ghn` ukvhk hgv`l . Cfw Fc; n |edycl fcnxk  
dhk`kh rhd`v`f sunwawv...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Lckxl fhnc l vc fxn  
aed khbxg ugwf l w?18 Fwdwnvw...â(Duo) Gh; xk {cfnhxg l ckxl  
dhk`l h 'cgxf vevx...âSckxk mcbxtckx dh zbi k, dh vh sckxk  
zbi kvck ughk fxn ; csvck fharh pe] ; cs denxkc dejxnc fxgl cb.B3

Si dwjxkxk jctsnxkvc Cfw Nhtekxk fegc vevdx kcrg ugwkwn...  
â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Cfw Fc; nx âFcnhcjß swncsxkxk  
hdcgcnx xgc fxngx; vc pc[[ l cnhsxl xkc 'zkvcnvx. Fw bhl hk  
{cfnhxg khbxg ugwf vevx...âSckxk mcbxtckx zbi kvck, dhowv  
sckvck ughk fxn ; xavck fharh pe] ; cs denxkc dejxnc fxgl cb.ß

<sup>1</sup> âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.35

<sup>2</sup> âKwnß swncsx, hdc.54, âCk; cfwjß swncsx, hdc.18

<sup>3</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.151ââJcprxrß (Cpl cv L cpv Ah; xn), 2-  
[x [xgv, scp.322, 1296-[` pcvxsââVwnnwgl ckswñ (Si dwjx), 3-[i [xgv, scp.209.

Pcbncj |edycl fcn Cgxkx Cfw Fc;nxk hnv`k[h 'zkvcnvx, u vh  
L c;;c-L cvxkc dugwkvh ukh ]hj`f hdcgcnx ukvhk hgv` mc pc[[  
l zmsi l i kvc [hl hhjh rxnhcj ejvx.β<sup>1</sup>

Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mccrrhs fegc vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
āFcnhcjβ swncsxkxk xg; hdcgcnxkx Cfw Fc;nc menxf ukw  
l c;;cgxgcnc jcnct 'zkvcnvx. Suknh Cgxkx ukwk hnv`k[h  
'zkvcnvx ;x, hdcgcnx ukvhk hgs`k. |edycl fcn fw xavck  
jccssi tgckck Cfw Fc;nc fwdwnvw...āCfh Fc;n! L ckl mcbxtcl x  
zbi l vck mc l ckvck ughk fxn ;xavck fharh pe] ;cs denxkc  
dejxnc fxgl cb.β<sup>2</sup>

Fw phvxscvck hdv`k ugvyw ;xl x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
j zb scphfcsx ughk Cfw Fc;nx āFcnhcjβ swncsxkxk xg; uk  
hdcsxkx pc[[ l cnhsxl xkvc fi j i k l i anx;gcnc uowl hr i ]i k  
L c;;cdc jcnct 'zkvcnvx ;x, fw bhl hk mcpd cl hkcjvhn`  
{cfnhxg ukwk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx...āFw mcbxtckx sckxk zbi kvck,  
dhowv sckvck ughk fxn ;xavck fharhs` denxkc dejxnc fxgl cb.β  
L crscv fwvwn ;x, āFcnhcjβ swncsxkxk xg; uk hdcsxkx ukwk  
vxkgcdx[xgcnxkc ]hjv`nl hr |edycl fcnxk oi swsx jcfgy  
mcbxtcsxkvckvxn mc fw mcbxtckx ukwk zbi kvck, dhowv ukvhk  
ughk fxn ;xavck fharhs` denxkc dejxnc fxgl cb. U ;xax vc  
dhgk`b ā|edycl fcn acncjxkvc u pcbncjxk [hcxaxkxβ ughk  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvxn. Fxb jebgx;gc |edycl fcnxk [hcxaxkxkxk  
jc/dxk ugwl hs`k` āmcx mc mcsxddcjβ fzgl csxkvc redv  
evc[cdx; mc unvhv hdv`k ugh[hrv`n ;x, l i jchg Hgghp  
jcnctxkvck fxnfah ughk jcfgy |edycl fcnc mc ukwk  
[hcxaxkxkc l cosws ughk fxn mxghdcj phrr` mc mcbxtcvxn.

HGGHP ZB OCGXTCGCNXXKC E/{HB (LZ/{IBC "ZSJCNLC: )  
LCRHL~ MENXN

Fc/bck Hgghp-jhhghk`k px;l cjx fwkw jcgcf evxn ;x, Zb  
ocgxcsxkc (xkshkghn`k xl hl`kh mc acncjxk jcfgyhj]`s`kh)  
l i cddck hdc mc kxahkcgcn fhy`aghs`k ;x, ukwk vuynwgwywkh  
mc xghpx mcbxtckxk denxkc dejxnagl csxkvc cl hkcjvhng`y`kh  
vcgxg ugswk. Fw hdc mc kxahkghn Xsghl jctc;; i ni kvc āl z/[i bcβ  
hvghkv`n`g`n. } i k; x fcaen ukwk ;xl xsxkx 'cjxnl c;vck h[xbvxn  
(l z/[i bc – āh[xbgx;β ;z; i kvckvxn - l i j). L i jchg Hgghp

<sup>1</sup> āVwnnwg-l ckswnβ jctsnx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.210.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unvhv, 3-[i [xgv, scp.209.

Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc Zb \edycl fcngcnxkvck ughk L wsh mc Xshdh  
 cjh ejvxdx l z/[i bcgcnvck fxn rxsl xkx ohj`nghv`n, L wshk`k  
 l z/[i bcsx fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿فَأَلْقَى عَصَاهُ فَإِذَا هِيَ ثُعْبَانٌ مُبِينٌ﴾

â(Lwsh) zb cshs`k` (denc) hjv, 'zbgckxgl cvck ha;hn fxn cqvhphdh ]emnxgvx.B<sup>1</sup>

﴿وَنَزَعَ يَدَهُ فَإِذَا هِيَ بَيْضَاءُ لِلنَّاظِرِينَ﴾

âZb cçkx rugjwywkvhk ]ohnjv`æ 'znckgc n i ]i k \hngvr fxn kwn ;xl x sh]`nv.B<sup>2</sup>

﴿وَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَى مُوسَى أَنْ أَلْقِ عَصَاكَ فَإِذَا هِيَ تَلْقَفُ مَا يَأْفِكُونَ﴾

âLwshdh âZb cshk` denc hj!ß - vedc mcpd ejvx;... 'zbgckxgl cvck (cqvhphdh  
 ]emnxgvx mc) dhghkvhk fcbcvxl xa aedgcnxk phl `s`k` wvl hyh fhaghv.B<sup>3</sup>

﴿وَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَى مُوسَى إِذِ اسْتَسْقَاهُ قَوْمُهُ أَنْ اضْرِبْ بِعَصَاكَ الْحَجَرَ فَانْبَجَسَتْ مِنْهُ اثْنَتَا عَشْرَةَ

عَيْنًا قَدْ عَلِمَ كُلُّ أُنَاسٍ مَشْرِبَهُمْ﴾

âMc Fxb Lwshdh, rzml i ukvhk sw xsjcvxdx bhl hk mcpd ejvx; ;x, zb cshk` u  
 vhah mwn. "zbgckxgl cvck uk x;x ]eal c rhdkhl hyh fhaghv` mc pcn fxnx zb sw  
 x]vxdx denx jhk`v.B<sup>4</sup>

﴿فَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَى مُوسَى أَنْ اضْرِبْ بِعَصَاكَ الْبَحْرَ فَانْفَلَقَ فَكَانَ كُلُّ فِرْقٍ كَالطَّوْدِ الْعَظِيمِ﴾

âFxb Lwshdh fegc mcpd ejvx;... Zb cshk` vcndhdh mwn. "zbgckxgl cvck vcndh  
 dhngv` mc ukwk pcn fxn psscsx fzdi; fxn vhy ;xl x 'znikvi.B<sup>5</sup>

Xsh xfkx Lcndcl <sup>TM</sup> fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwgnw...

﴿...وَإِذْ أَيْدُوكَ بُرُوحِ الْقُدُسِ تَكَلَّمَ النَّاسُ فِي الْمَهْدِ وَكَهَلًا وَإِذْ عَلِمْتُكَ الْكِتَابَ وَالْحِكْمَةَ

وَالْتُورَةَ وَالْإِنْجِيلَ وَإِذْ تَخْلُقُ مِنَ الطِّينِ كَهَيْئَةِ الطَّيْرِ يَدْنِي فَتَنْفُخُ فِيهَا فَتَكُونُ طَيْرًا يَدْنِي وَتُبْرِئُ

الْأَكْمَةَ وَالْأَبْرَصَ يَدْنِي وَإِذْ تُخْرِجُ الْمَوْتَى﴾

âDhvh shg u bhl hk` ;x, sckx Nwpwg-Rwvswk mhsxjcsxgc rimmcjgckvxrvx;æ  
 feax;vc vc, fzdidckvc vc [hl hhjgh vkh'av`k. Px;l cj, : xjhfh, Jumnhj mc Xk[xgx  
 sckc zdncjvx;æ u bhl hk ;x, Lckxl xbkxl gc \hg]`rvhk rwa ac;xgx fxn aed  
 vibcgvxf ukh itininvik, u vh Lckxl xbkxl gc [hkg rwa ugwnvw. Hkhvhk`cgl c  
 ;unh, ounh ocsjcgdxkc jwjwghkghnh Lckxl xbkxl gc acth menxrvxk. Mc u bhl hk ;x,

<sup>1</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.107

<sup>2</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.108

<sup>3</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.117

<sup>4</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.160

<sup>5</sup> âAi cnhß swncsx, hdc.63

zgi gcnx Lckxl xbkxl gc vxnxgvnxvk...B<sup>1</sup>

Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -`k vxgxkvck fegc fwdwnwgvn...

﴿وَأَحْيِ الْمَوْتَىٰ يَٰذَا ٱللَّهِ وَأَتَّبِكُم بِمَا تَآكُلُونَ وَمَا تَدَّجِرُونَ فِي بُيُوتِكُمْ﴾

â...Mc zgi gcnx Hgghp`k xbkxgc vxnxgvnx, devx; gcnxkxb mc emgcnxkxbvc epjxdhj ughnhr  
d'yv`rghn`k`b aedgcnvck sxbc ofcn mencncl .B<sup>2</sup>

|cnmcnvx' hnx-hgcl Zb acnxcjxkxk x; x mcsxsx ughk Vhmwv mc  
Si gedl hkh menvxdx l z/[i bcgcnx fegc fcdhk evxn...

﴿وَسَخَّرْنَا مَعَ دَاوُدَ ٱلْجِبَالَ يَسْبَحْنَ وَٱلطَّيْرَ﴾

âVhyghn` mc rwaghn` Vhmwvgh l iscoocn (nhl , l i jx) ejvx; ;x, ukghn Hgghp  
jcsfxp evxngcn.B<sup>3</sup>

﴿وَلَسَلِيمَانَ ٱلرَّيْحَ عَاصِفَةً تَجْرِي بِأَمْرِهِ ... وَمِنَ ٱلشَّيَاطِينِ مَن يَغُوصُونَ لَهُ وَيَعْمَلُونَ عَمَلًا دُونَ

ذَٰلِكَ﴾

â"i [gi ; igcdx Si gedl hkh l iscoocn ejvx; ;x, ukwk tcnl hk` xgc 'evxnvx.  
Aedjhkgghnvkh fxn rnw\w vh ukh rcmmhsj`r evxn, ukvhk fharh xagcnx vc denxkc  
dejxnxnvxgc.B<sup>4</sup>

Redv ugwkl hg`v`n ;x, f i j i k l z/[i bcgcnxk pcn fxn  
\edycl fcnc mc xl hl h menxgl csx ghb`l mc bcnwnx fxn xa  
vedxgvxn. Fegc ;x, l i j chg Hgghp Lwsh, Xsh, Vhmwv mc  
Si gedl hk Φ -`k l z/[i bcgcnxkxk Pwv, Gwj mc Ai edf Φ  
fhncsxkvc vc ugvwyykw fcdhk ejl cl xavxn. Pcl jxkxk,  
[hl hhj`k juow [cl xddcjvc pz; wl cj rwnl hr, cvhgcl cshs`kvh  
l i ph; xl c ejl c; mc s. ;xl x xagcnvc \edycl fcngcnc ;zl c;  
ejl cvxgc. {hl hhj hnhs`kvh pz; wl cj mc rcbhmcj (rhhbxgx;)  
bcl xkcgcnx xaxk cmmcgxkvc pcbncj Lwsh <sup>TM</sup> mc pcbncj  
L i pcl l cv j i j i k phb`n vedxgvx. Phgfw; x ukghn, xghpx  
nxshgcjx jcfgyx ejl cdc mcbxtcgx ugvwrgghn` xg; mhojvkh xl hl mc  
ocgxte xvxcn. Vel cgx, oxghtcj mc xl hl cj ;xjhfc mc acnxcjxk  
jcfgyx i j i k Hgghp jcnctxkvck jc/dxk ugwkl hk` bcnwnx evxn,  
[hl hhj hnhs`kvh l i ph; xl c di ni j l c; mc pz; wl cj ejl c;  
l z/[i bc 'cjxnl cdx 'cnc; gx ejl xn. Fwkh cshsck, Hgghp`k ocgxtecsx  
egc Hgghp jcnctxkvck jcfgyx evck acosvxn.

<sup>1</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.110

<sup>2</sup> âHgX-Xl nhkß swncsx, hdc.49

<sup>3</sup> âCkfxdhß swncsx, hdc.79

<sup>4</sup> âCkfxdhß swncsx, hdc.81-82

Dwohn`vh redv ugwxhkhghn Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc âHghhp`k  
ocgxtcsxß ; cgl csxkxk I c/khs`kvhk xfhncj xv.

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL j -XK OCGXTCSX

â|edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsxß szbi ki k I c/khs`egc acnxt kcfcmx  
pcvxsxkvck fhah vi ai gi n...

â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl [hkxaxkgcnxl c ncpl ej, ukghn`fhy'agh. |cnmcnvx'hnh!  
Lckxl [hkxaxkgcnxl c ncpl ej, ukghn`fhy'agh. |cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl  
[hkxaxkgcnxl c ncpl ej, ukghn`fhy'agh.ß Sunwavwghn ; x, dh Ncswgcgghp!  
Sckxk [hkxaxkgcnxk ; xl vxn? Fwdwnvw...âU ; csgcnvx ; x, I ckvck suknh  
'cgf I ckxl si kckl x mc pcvxsxl x ncmhdcj evcngcn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fwkh cshsck, Hghhp`k ocgxtcsx dhgk`b u ; csvxn ; x, Hghhp-jhhgh  
ukw Zb acnxcjxkx jcfgy ejl c; i]i k jc/dxk ejl xavxn.  
|edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsx dhgk`b u ; csvxn ; x, |edycl fcn si kksxkx  
mc pcvxsxkx ; zki ggi ughnhr jcfgy ejl cdx zpvcsxkc hgs`k.

Fw, ; xjhf mc si kkcvc âHghhp`k ocgxtcsxß mc â|edycl fcnxk  
ocgxtcsxßkxk xsjxghpx I c/khs`xv.

2-L isgl hkghn`k xsjxghp`kvh ocgtc mc ocgtcjwgghp

Ocgxtc mc ukwk gi ycjvc; x I c/khs`fhncsxkvc xncgx ]c; xgck  
fcpsvc redv ugkwv ; x, Cfw Fc; n âNcswgwgghp`k ocgxtcsxß  
hvghkv`n`g`nv`. Zl cn vc cmmcg[c âNcswgwgghp`k ocgxtcsxkx  
ocgxtcsxß, suknh xsc âCl xncg-I z/I xkxkß hkghkv`n`g`nv`. Fw i kmhk  
Ji n; xdcvc Usl hkg`oxghtcjxkxk ho`n vzmi ngcnxkc rcvch  
xagckxnvx. Fwkh 'znc vc fzdi ; Xsghl ph; xl x wbwk xggcn fudw  
hahy`vh;`rhdvvh hvghkv`n`gl `av`...

h) Cl cmxgcxk mc Hffhsxgcxk vzmnikvc

Oi gcth I c; jcfx Cl cmxgcxk ph; xl xddcjxkxk cmmcgcnxkvck  
Hffhsxgcxk vzmnikc rcvch fzdi ; Xsghl ph; xl xkx  
âocgxtcjwgghpß hvghkv`n`g`nv`ghn.

Pc[[h[ xfkx Dwsxt [i I c khl hb`k`k oi jfcsxkvc vel xavxn...  
âHghhp`k ocgxtcsx mc ukwk se]vxdx acosxk – Cfvi g-I cgx;  
Lcnmhk`k tcnl hkghn`kh rwghr hs`k!ß<sup>2</sup>

Fxn I c[gxsvc Lepvx Hffhsxdc âCl cmx ocgxtcsx Mcgxv vxksxb  
xvxß – vedxgckvc, u vel xavx... âHghhp`k oxghtcjx egc di ; sc;

<sup>1</sup> Fw pcvxsxk I ckfcgcnx x; xk[x [xgvvc redv ugwxh[hrv`n.

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.210, 4645-[x pcvxs.

I crhl v`n ;x, pe] mhoj vxksxb fxn acosxk xojxdhn`kvh  
rudwgl hb!ß

Fw i kmhk Cl cmxgcnxk mc Hffhsxgcnxk csnxkvck  
I capwnghal `a, pcjjh ahxngcnxk ae/ngcnxkc vc sxnhdcj ejl xavx.  
Fegc ;x, {cnxn fxn rcsxvcvc Cl cmx ocgxtcsx Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-  
Cbxbx jc/nxtgcdcnc; fegc vedxn...

خَلِيفَةُ اللَّهِ مَاذَا تَأْمُرُونَ بِنَا      لَسْنَا إِلَيْكُمْ وَلَا فِي دَارٍ مُنْتَظِرٍ

âU, Hgghp`k ocgxtcsxvxn! Fw kc 'zsjcnxavxn ;x, fxbc menxnsck?!

Fxb kc sxbc ruawgnwr, kc vc sxbxk dugwkwbh 'zb vx; I xax; .ß¹

Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb zbi ki k vxkvhng`rvh I hgx; ugvwyyw  
fijik fw azpncjx xgc dhkha`, {cnxnk fw szbgcnxkx ncvv  
ejl cvx. Pcl ]xkxk Lcnmhk xfkx Cfx Pctsc (182-[x xgvc mthj  
evxf) Lixk xfkx Bhxvc Aedfhkxkx jc/nxtgcxvdx fxn rcsxvcvc  
Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Lckswnwk fhncsxkvc vedxn...

مَا زِلْتُ يَوْمَ الْهَاشِمِيَّةِ مَعَلَّنَا      بِالسَّيْفِ دُونَ خَلِيفَةِ الرَّحْمَنِ  
فَمَنْعَتْ حَوَازَتَهُ وَكُنْتُ وَقَاهُ      مِنْ وَقَعِ كُلِّ مُهَنْدٍ وَسَنَانٍ

âSckxk pcl xac, phaxl xgcnxk 'cgxa denxkvc,

Ncpl hk`k ocgxtcsx rhna`s`kvh sxdnxgl xa r`g`k[`k mhn xv.

Ukwk scnpvcvcnxkvc fcghghnh sx\cn ugvwk,

Pcn kzm xjx r`g`k[vhk mc kxbcvck ukw runwdwnvwk.ß²

f) Usl hkj`ghn`k vzmni kvc

Ocgxtc ;cgl csx Usl hkj`ghn`k vzmni kvc vc Hgghp, dhowv  
Ncswg ;cgl csxkc xbhtc ugwkl hvhk I i scgl hkghn`k ck fzdi ;  
\hvahp`kh mc swgjkh`kh hxv evxgnvx.³

m) Fxbxl csnxl xbv

Fxbxl csnxl xbv vc fegc I capwnghal `av`n ;x, Hgghp-  
jhhghk`k fwdwnvwyw âLck den ibi kvc ocgxtc rcnbn menxncl ß – hdcvc  
âocgxtcß vevx; vc I crscv fwvwn ;x, I ijchg Hgghp I z/I xk

¹ Si dwjxkxk âAcnpv acmhpvxv I c/kh ;xjhF, âVhnw I c;jcfcjxg-pcdhjß  
kcanxddhj`k`k ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.197.

² âCg-; wkh mcg-cgrhfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.252.

³ Fho...âCg-I z/[cl i g-mcsxjß, âoc-gc-tcß I hvvcxs.



xkshk` den i bcnxkvc Zb ocgxtcsx rcnhn menl xavxn.<sup>1</sup> Fwkh cshsck, fi ji k xkshk kzmgnx Hgghp`k den i bcnxkvc; x ocgxtcsxvxn. âOcg-tcß ;z; i kvck hg`khk âxsjcgctcß (dc/kx [hkxaxk rcnhn menvx) mc dhowv âdcsjcgxtwß (dc/kx [hkxaxk rcnhn menxn) ;xl x ;cgl cgcñ vc, xkshk`k [hkxaxk rcnhn menxgl csx l c/khs`kvhv`n.

Pcl ]xkxk, fegc l capwnghal `av`n ;x, Usl hkg` oxghtcjxkxk ho`n`kh rcvcñ l i scgl hkghn`k fzdí ; swgjhk`k`k ocgxtc hvghkv`n`gl hs`k`k scfcfx fw vxv ;x, u, pz; wl cjvc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk ocgxtcsx mc [hkxaxk shd`g`nv`. Vel cgx, ukghn`k kcbcnxkvc âl ijgr ocgxtcß vevx; vc |edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsx kcbcnvc jwjwgn. Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`, pcl vc |edycl fcnvck suknh;` vnzv ocgxtckx ânhaxvxk ocgxtcsxß hvghkv`n`ngn. Fw i kmhk` vh Usl hkg` oxghtcjxkxk ho`n vzmngcnxkc rcvcñ shxñ ocgxtcgcñ fhncsxkvc xagcjl cl xagcn. Fw hvrudl h l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh l i hsn vzmnc rcvcñ l capwnvwn.

3-Ocgxtc xsjxghp`k`k oigcth l c; jcfxkvck Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` hnhs`kh kcrq ugwkl hs`

âOcgxtcß mc âHgghp`k den i bi kvc; x ocgxtcsxß ;cgl cgcñkxk l c/khs`kvh fha menck fw vcdxax; gx; gcñk phl `s` |edycl fcnxk mcthj`kvhk suknh, oi gcth l c; jcfxkvck fha menl xavxn. Hl l h Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkvck mc egc[c vc Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k`k ncmhdcjgcñkvc âHgghp`k den i bi kvc; x ocgxtcsxß ;cgl csx cmmcgvc redv ejvxdxl xb xsghl x xsjxghp l c/khs`kh `cgl xavxn.

â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk ocgxtcsxß l c/khs`kvh ughk âocgxtcß xsjxghp` px[ncjxk 5-[x csñkvck fw`i k; i `i kc rcvcñ oi gcth l c; jcfxkvck Cpgx-fedj hnv`[`gghn`k`k l cvckxddcjxkc kcrq ugwkl wavwn. Oi gcth l c; jcfx |edycl fcn pcvxsgcnxkvc âocgxtcß ;cgl csxkxk (zbgcnxkxk hv rudvwyw l c/khdh) mhnv ugl hl hs`kh cshsghkhnhv vel xagcn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl zb

<sup>1</sup> Seddxv Rijf fw hdckxk jctsnxkvc dhn`n... âFw di ;sc; xnhvc mc l caxddcj den i bcñkvc xagcnxk xvñc ugwkl hs`k` mñg`y`k deks fxñ kzmi kc pcmhgç ejl c; , ukw jhl xojxdhn shpfx ejl c; cshs`kvhv`n. Vel cgx, fw juo fzdí ; fxñ l crhl v`n. Fw, xkshk`k mñg`r hgcl xkvc; x l crhl ` ugwf, den i bcñkvc `ekxagckvxnagl xavxn.ß (âJctsnx tx bxghxg-Rwn/hkß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.65-66.)

Egc[c vc âOcgxtc mc swgjhkß ;xjhfk`k l i cggxtxkxk (M. Mdhn Jwgv) kcbcnxkc `znc fw l c/kh epjxl hg i bnc ;xjhfcpgxkxk tx; xngcnxkvck Xsghl h snhdcj ejl xavxn. (Xdbcvxkxk jcn[i l csx, Jephk ]h`, 1358-[x xg, scp.16)

i l l c j x k x n c p f c n s x b j c n ; e j v x , z b i k v c k s u k n h p e ] f x n l c n [ c / m c n c p f c n j c / d x k e j l c v x . β

C p g x - f e d j l c ; j c f x k x k h n v ` [ g g h n ` u k g h n ` k k c b c n x k x n c v v e j l c ; l c r h l ` k v h | e d y c l f c n x - C ; n c l j - v c k , X l h l C g x <sup>TM</sup> - ` k z b i k v c k s u k n h ; ` m c s x k x j c / d x k e j l c ; g c c g h r c v h n u g h k n c m h d c j g c n c x s j x k h v e j l x a m c v e l x a g c n ... ā / e d y c l f c n u k w z b i k v c k s u k n h ; ` o c g x t c - o c g x t c k x k s u k n h v h k f h a h v i a i g c k l c / k h s ` k v h - r c n h n m e n l x a v x n m c u , i l l c j x p e ] m h o j f h a s ` b r u d l h l ` a v ` n . β

F i j i k f w v c g x g m c s i f w j g h n x ; x l c ; j c f x k h n v ` [ g g h n ` j c n c t x k v c k e g c f x n m c b x d d c j v c ' c j x n x g x n ; x , u k g h n f w l i p i l l c s c g c v c k r h t x g u g l w a g h n ... | e d y c l f c n x k m c t h j ` k v h k s u k n h o i g t h l c ; j c f x j c n c t x k v c k x [ h v u g w k h k f w x s j x g h p c m m c g g c n ( | e d y c l f c n x k m c t h j ` k v h k c m m c g ) l z m [ w v u g l h l ` a v ` n ; x , | e d y c l f c n x k p c v x s x k v c v c ' c g l x a u g s w k !

#### L C J G C F X K O I G H S C S X

h) ā O c g x t c β - f x n a c o s x k [ h k x a x k x m c o c g x t c s x v e l c ; v x n , g i y c j v c x s c u a c o s c v e d x g x n ; x , f h a r h f x n x s x u k w k j c n c t x k v c k [ h k x a x k g x d c s e ] x g l x a v x n , p c l x k h v h l u g l h v ` r v h [ h k x a x k x u k w k x a g c n x k x d e n x k c d e j x n x n . F w l c / k h d h u g h k ā o c g x t c β R w n / h k x - : c n x l v c , | e d y c l f c n p c v x s x k v c m c s c p h f c g c n x k s z b g c n x k v c l z m [ w v v w n .

f) X s g h l x x s j x g h p v h ā H g g h p ` k d e n i b i k v c ; x [ h k x a x k x β l c / k h s ` k h u g h k o c g x t c u ; c s c v e d x g x n ; x , l i j c h g H g g h p u k w Z b a c n x c j x k x j c f g x y e j l c ; i j i k s e ] l x a v x n . F e g c ; x , m c p d d u g w x g c , d h o w v | e d y c l f c n x k m h s j c s x g c u k w ( a c n x c j x ) z d n c k x f d e n x k c d e j x n s x k . P c l j x k x k , [ h l h h j h n h s ` k v h r c b h m c j m c p z ; w l c j x a g c n x k x v c x [ n h e j s x k . H g g h p u k g h n ` k f c / b x g c n x k c l z / [ i b c c j h e j l x a v x n ; x , f c a c n z m g h v ` u k w k u o a h n ` k ` ' c j x n l c ; v c h [ x b v x n . F w l c / k h d h u g h k o c g x t c R w n / h k x - : c n x l v c m c C p g x - f e d j ⊕ n c m h d c j g c n x k v c ' c g l x a v x n .

m) P c b n c j | e d y c l f c n x k p c v x s x k v c ; x [ h k x a x k m c o c g x t c u p c b n c j x k p c v x s g c n x k x ; z k i g g i u g h n h r [ h l h h j h n h s ` k v h d h d h k h v h l h v e d x g x n .

y) L i s c g l h k g h n ` k x s j x g h p ` k v h o c g x t c m c [ h k x a x k s z b g c n x C f w F c ; n x k ā N c s w g w g g h p ` k o c g x t c s x β , Z l c n x k v c ā N c s w g w g g h p ` k o c g x t c s x k x k o c g x t c s x β h v g h k v ` n ` g v ` y ` , v h p h s u k n h u k h C l x n c g -

I z/I xkxk gcrclfx menxgvxdx bhl hkvhk fhaghkv`. Fw hv  
 Ji n; xdcvc Usl hkg` oxghtcjxkxk ho`n vzmngcnxkc rcvcn ck  
 di ; sc; pz; wl cj I crhl ghn`kh menxgxnvx. Cl cmxgcnxk mc  
 Hffhsxgcnxk vzmni kvc ukh aocgxtcjwgghpß ; cgl csx vc cghmc  
 evxgvx. Fw x; x hv shdcsxkvc Usl hkg` pz; wl cjxkxk ck di ; sc;  
 I crhl ghn` ocgxtc hvghkv`n`g`n mc |edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsx  
 kcbcnvc jwjwgvnw. Fw [i n hvrudl h Usl hkg` oxghtcjxkvck  
 suknh fw `i k; i `i kc rcvcn I i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh  
 dhd`gl `av`n. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck suknh Usl hkg`ghn`k  
 vzmni kc rcvcn ph; xl xddcj c ]hjhk pcn ; csc aocgxtcß vedxgx n mc  
 fw bhl hk a|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk ocgxtcsxß kcbcnvc jwjwgvnw,  
 |edycl fcnvck suknh; ` vnzv ocgxtc xsc aOi gcthdx nhaxvxkß  
 hvghkv`n`g`nv`. aOcgxtcß xsjxghp` suknghn Cpgx-fedj  
 hnv`[`ggghn`k`k I cvckxddcjxkc kcrq ugwkl wa, ukghn vh  
 |edycl fcnvck suknh ph; xl xddcj c ]hjhkghn` ocgxtc  
 hvghkv`n`l `agh. Fw xavck rhtxgx; kcjx[csxkvc I i scgl hkghn`k  
 tx; xngcnxkvc hkgha`gl hbg`r dhnhkl `a, oi gcth I c; jcfxkvc  
 vedxgl xavxn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl zbi kvck suknh i l l cjx  
 fhas`b rudvw mc ukghn i ]i k pe] fxn I cn[c, ncpfcn jc/dxk  
 ejl cvx. Vcgxggcnx vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck suknh dhnkhk  
 xsjxghp`k u pcbncjxk pcvxsxkvc I zm[wv ugl hl hs` xv. Cpgx-  
 fedj I c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`ggghn` vh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -  
 vck xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` zbi kc mcsx jc/dxk ejl csx xgc cghrcvhn  
 kcrq ugwkhh ncmhdcjgcnc xsjxkhv evcnc; vedxngcn... a|edycl fcn  
 ukw zbi ki k mcsxsx mc I i scgl hkghn`k ocgxtcsx jc/dxk ejl xavxn,  
 zbi vc |edyl fcnvck suknh ocgxtc i ]i k x[hv evxgck pcl xk  
 I c/khdh.ß Bhl hk`k ; e]l csx xgc fw I zmbw fhncsxkvc  
 I i scgl hkghn hnhs`kvh xojxghtghn ; cs; xkgcal xavxn.  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fw fhncvc `znvi di jcvfxngcn, fw  
 fhncvc fwdwnvwrghn` jebgx; gc redv ugwk[hrv`n ; x, pcrxrcj  
 ha; hn ugswk. Xkahgghp!

#### 4-Cl xncg-I z/I xkxk

aCl xncg-I z/I xkxkß gcrclfx, cmmcgvc vc redv ugwkvwyyw  
 ; xl x, x; xk[x ocgxtc Zl cnxk vzmni kvc xagcvxgl xa mc I crscv vc  
 Xsghl pz; wl cjxkvc ck di ; sc; I crhl ugl wavwn ; x, fw vh  
 Usl hkg`ghn`k vzmni kc rcvcn xagckl xavxn.

âXl hl ß gi ycjvc ncpfcngx; l crhl `kvh ughk u xkshkh vedx-  
gx n ;x, ukwk szbi kc mc cl cgxkc xrjxvh (jhfe) ugwkw n, xsjcn  
phrr ugswk, xsjcnc vc fhjxg. Fegc ;x, Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc  
fwdwnwgwn...

﴿يَوْمَ نَدْعُو كُلَّ أَنَسٍ بِإِمَامِهِمْ فَمَنْ أُوْتِيَ كِتَابَهُ بِيَمِينِهِ فَأُولَٰئِكَ يَقْرَءُونَ كِتَابَهُمْ وَلَا يُظْلَمُونَ  
فَتِيلًا وَمَنْ كَانَ فِي هَذِهِ أَعْمَىٰ فَهُوَ فِي الْآخِرَةِ أَعْمَىٰ وَأَضَلُّ سَبِيلًا﴾

âU 'ik ;x, pcn fxn vcsjckx zb ncpfcngcnx, xl hl ghn` xgc ]hy'nhn'ræ cl cg  
vctjcngcnx shy cgxkc menxgckgcn zb cl cg vctjcngcnxkx uowdhngghn, ukghnh bcnc  
rcvcn fegc, bigl ugwkl hb. Pcn ;cs fw vikdhvh ;un (fcsxncjsxb) ugsh, hoxcjvc  
vc ;un, fcsxncjsxb mc dugkw hbkghnhvk ughn.B<sup>1</sup>

Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc bhg'l xl hl fhncsxkvc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿فَقَاتِلُوا أُمَّةَ الْكُفْرِ إِنَّهُمْ لَا أَيْمَانَ لَهُمْ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَنْتَهُونَ﴾

â: itn fha]ghn` mc xl hl ghn` xgc l iphnxfc evxk, ]ik;x ukghn i]ik pe] fxn  
cpv-\\edl hk duovwn, fcg;c fw dugvhk rhd'vghn.B<sup>2</sup>

Xsghl vh âxl hl ß xkshkghn` Hgghp`k tcnl hk` xgc Hgghp  
dugwkh pxvhdcj evckc vedxgx n. Xsjcn Hgghp`k : xjh f` ugswk,  
xsjcnc vc xkshk. Xkshk fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿وَإِذِ ابْتَلَىٰ إِبْرَاهِيمَ رَبُّهُ بِكَلِمَاتٍ فَأَتَمَّهُنَّ قَالَ إِنِّي جَاعِلُكَ لِلنَّاسِ إِمَامًا قَالَ وَمِنْ ذُرِّيَّتِي قَالَ لَا  
يَنَالُ عَهْدِي الظَّالِمِينَ﴾

âDvh shg u bhl hk` ;x, Hgghp Xfnhpxl x l iojcgx fegh mc ;cgl cgcngc xl jhphkh  
]c;vx. U, xl jhphkghn`k zpvcsxkvck dhoa` 'cgvx;vc, Hgghp fegc fwdwnvw... Lck  
sckx xkshkghn`k xl hl` mc ncpfcnx rcnbn menvx. Xfnhpxl vevx... Lckxl  
kcsxgl vckvcl x? Fwdwnvw... Lckxl cpv-\\edl hk`l bhg'l ghn ]hjl hb!B<sup>3</sup>

Fharh hdcvc fwdwnwgwn...

﴿وَجَعَلْنَاهُمْ أُمَّةً يَهْدُونَ بِأَمْرِنَا﴾

âUkghn` egc ncpfcngcn rcnbn menvx; ;x, Fxbxl tcnl hk`l bgh pxvhdcj  
evxnvxgcn.B<sup>4</sup>

: xjh f`k xl hl cjgxdx fhncsxkvc xsc fegc fwdwnwgwn...

<sup>1</sup> âXsnhß swncsx, hdc.71-72

<sup>2</sup> âJzmfcß swncsx, hdc.12

<sup>3</sup> âFrcncß swncsx, hdc.124

<sup>4</sup> âCkfxdhß swncsx, hdc.73

âMc ukvhk cmmcg ncpfcn mc ncpI cj ughk Lwshk`k ;xjhfk`k...ß<sup>1</sup>

Dwohn`vh;` hdcgcnxk I ctpwl wkvhk Xsghl vh xl hl ugl hy`k acnjx hdv`k ugw... C'cn ;xjhfv`nsh, [hl hhj` pxvhdcj ejl c; I crscvxcg Hgghp jcnctxkvck |edycl fcnc khbxg ugl hg`v`n – Pcbncj L i pcl I cvc khbxg ughk Rwn/hkx-: cnxl ;xl x. Ukvhk vh cmmcg Lwshdh khbxg ughk Jumnhj` mc shxn \edycl fcngcnc khbxg ughk hsl hkx ;xjhfgnh` redv ejl c; ughn. HI I h c'cn xkshkv`nsh, I i jgr Hgghp jcnctxkvck jc/dxk ugwkI hg`, pe] fxn mc[pgc bi gl mc phrs`bg`r ejl cl cgxvx. Fegc ;x, fw I i vvch Hgghp-jhhghk`k Xfnhpxl c fwdwnvwyw âLck scx xkshkghn i]ik ncpfcn rcnln menxl ß, âLckxl cpv-\edl hk`l bhgI gnh ]hjl hbß – hdcgcnxkvck fhah vi ai gi n. Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxkghnvhk hdv`k ugw ;x, Xsghl xsjxghp`kvh xl hl vevx;vc...

h) Dh [hl hhj` pxvhdcj ejl c; i]i k Hgghp jcnctxkvck |edycl fcnc khbxg ughk ;xjhfc kbcnvc jwjwgwn.

f) Dh vh xkshkghn`k pxvhdcj ugwkI hs` i]i k Hgghp jcnctxkvck jc/dxk ugwkxk I c/swl xkshk kbcnvc jwjwgwn.

#### 6-Cl n mc wgw-g-cl n

âCl nß mc âw-gw-g-cl nß ;cgl cgcnxkxk I c/khghn`k` fhah vi ai f vcn; ejl c; , fw x; x ;cgl ckxk acn/x xsjxghp ugwf-ugl hl hs`k` mc cncf vxgxkvc ukghn`k xagcvxgl c denxkx fxgl c; i]i k ukw I i scgl hkghn`k i nti kvc, ;xjhfc mc si kkckxk ha; hn fwdwnvwrghn`kvh hnhav`n`r...

h) Cncf gi ycjxkvc

âSxnedx Xfkx Pxahl ß, âJhnnox Jcfcnxßvc mc shxn ;xjhfgnhv fegc redv ugwkwn... â|edycl fcnc-C;ncI pc[[ I zmsI i kvc I i ojcgxt cncf rcfxgcgcnxkxk dhk`kh 'evxf ukghn` Xsghl h vc/mcj evxn, ukghnh Hgghp jcnctxkvck 'zkvcnxgck eg]x ugvywkw ofcn menxn mc ukghnvhk xsjcdxvx ;x, ukw jcsvvr evxf vi al ckcn mc I i anx;gcI I i rhfxgxkvc pxi hdc ejsxkgcn ;x, jcfgy ejl cdc 'zkvcnxgvdx xghpx \edyhl ghn` ukghn i]i k fcdhk ejxk.ß

Nhmx vedxn... U pcbncj fxn vctc Fckx-HI xn xfkx Sc/scc rcfxgcsxkxk dhk`kh 'evcnc; zbi ki jcrvxl ejvx mc ukghn`

<sup>1</sup> âPwvß swncsx, hdc.17

Hgghph jcnct ]hy`nv`. Ukghn`k x]cnxsxkvc Fedpcnc xfkx Tcnhs hvg` fxn kctcn vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn fw [hmhk` Rinedavck hgh fxgscl , ukwk mhsxjcsxgc fi j i k cncfgcnx dedcncl !ß Suknh |edycl fcnc vevx... âVe 'zni l , c'cn fxb sckc jhfe ugshr mc Hgghp vh sckx l i ohgxtgcnxkc rhgxf ejsc, fw âcl nß sckvck suknh fxbc ]hj[hrl`?ß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âFw âcl nß Hgghp`k cgxkvcvxn, ukw Zb xsjcvxdx denvc rcnhn menc[c;vx.ß Fedpcnc xsc [hmhf`kvh vevx... âFxb sckx pxl hdc ejl c; i ]i k zb fuyhbghn`l`b` cncfxk (kxbc, r`g`k[ghn`kh) pcvct rcnhn menc; ;x, Hgghp sckx rhgxf ejvx;vc, fw âcl nßx fxbvck fharhs`kh mensxk?! Fxbxl sckxk fw âcl nßxkc mc xaxkc pe] fxn epjxdh[`l`b duovwn!ß¹

Fw cncf fhah vial i avi ;x, âcl nw Ncswgxgghpß – dc/kx Ncswgwgghp`k xax cncfgcnc pz;wl cj ejl c;vck xfhncjvxn. Ukh 'znc vc |edycl fcngc cpv-\edl hk fhyghl hr xsjcdxnvx ;x, |edycl fcncvck suknh i l l cjc ncpfcngx; ukwk rcfxgcsxkc l cosws ugswk. Gh;xk |edycl fcn u 'i k fegc ;zl c;]xgcnc ;cs;xk ac;xgvc epjxdh[ vwdvwyw phgvh, fw jc;gtx rcfwg ejl cvx mc fw xavck xl jxkh ejvx. }i k;x fw âcl nß ukh pcmhgc evxgl cl xavxæ dhgk`b Hgghp`k xojxdhn`kvh vxv ;x, Hgghp ukw pcn denvc xsjcscdvx, unvhv vh rcnhn menc[c;vx.

Pcl ]xkxk, |edycl fcn Pumbcj xfkx Cgx Pckctxkx vc Xsghl h vc/mcj evcn;ck, u, |edycl fcnc fwkh uoahn fxn jc;gxt ejl xavx. Ukwk oighscsx Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ;xjhf`kvh fegc redv ugwkwn...

|edycl fcncx-C;ncl i Pumbcj xfkx Cgxdc fxn l c;jwf dhhbhnhr ukw Xsghl h vc/mcj ejvx. U, |edycl fcncxk [hmhf`kvh vevx... âSckxk ]hy`nv`y`k mc vc/mcj ejvxdxk aed (vxk) ]uo 'zbcgvxn. Lck zb rzml i l i k ahxnx mc szb vedckxdcl . Cncfgcn l ckxl l crhl mc l zmredxl x runwdwnghn. Fw âcl nßxk fxn pxsscsxkx l ckxl i ]i k hd`n, sckc jhfe ugwl .ß |edycl fcn vc [hmhf`kvh fwdwnl wavw... âC'cn jcn; ugwkl wa jun`hrghn`k fxn pxsscsxkx (ukghnh ph;xl xddcjx) vc l ckvck xsjcscdvx, ukwk xsjcdxkx rcfwg ejl cbvxl .ß²

Pumbcjxk xsjcdx mc jc;gtx fwvwn ;x, |edycl fcn fw âcl nßxk,

<sup>1</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.31-34æ âJhnxxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1205-1206.

<sup>2</sup> âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.18.

dc/kx ph;xl xddcjxk fñ psscsxkx (pcn phks` fñ cdhgcjxk, dhowv fñ rcfxgckxkxk mc s. ;xl x aedgcñxk ph;xl xddcjxkx) ukh mensxk. |edycl fcn vc ukh [hmhf mencnc; fxgvnxn ;x, ukh jcn; ugwkl wa jun\hrghn`k ph;xl xddcjxkx fegc, menl cdc phb`n vedxg. |edyfcl fcnxk fw szbi : wtc mc Fcsnc cpgxsxkxk jc/kgx szbgcnxkc fckbcdxñ. Fegc ;x, acpcn ph;xl x ukghn`k pcn fñxkx mcbxtcgx ejl xavx ;x, â{hl eß l cs[xvxxkx denxkx vzacl c; i]i k fñ hb rwl `cjxnsxkgcn mc ukghnvhk fñx vc zbi ki cl xn peshf ejsxk. U vh rwl ghn` rcfwg evcn;ck ]uo jcgcf; hng`r evxñv. Ukh vevxgcñ...âFcp-fcp, ke[c vc âfzdi ;ß ph;xl xddcjvxn, pcjjh rwl gñh mc ]`kr`gghñh fegc!ß Pumbcjxk |edycl fcnvck xsjcvxdx vc fegc xvñ. U, |edycl fcnvck pcjjh vha jun\hrghñh fegc, xl hl cj mc ncpfcngx; xsjcdxñv. |edycl fcn vc [hmhf mencnc; fwdwnvñ ;x, oedñ, sckxk pcjjh vhaghñh fegc ph;xl xddcjxkc nhb` vedxgcl .

#### f) Liscgl hkghn`k inti kvc

Liscgl hkghn`k inti kvc âcl nß ;cgl csx ck ]uo âScrxtcß 'i ki kvc Sc/v xfkx l fhvckxk ckshñh âfw cl nx – i l l cjc ncpfcngxdx fharhghn`k`k vcohgjx ugl hvhk zb cgxkxhc hg`klß, ckshn`k vh [hmhf`kvh âfxb sckx fw cl nc jc/dxk evxñ;ß – vevxdx bhl hk xagcvxgl xavx. Fwkvhk suknh pcl xk l cscgckx hnha`nhñh vevxgcñ...âC`cn Rinedavck ughk l i ph[xngcn rcfwg ejl cscgcñ mc... fxb ukwk rupwl -crncfhghn`d`r. Sxb phks` cshsh `znc ukvhk (|edycl fcnvck) suknh fw âcl nß fhncsxkvc fxbxl gc l i khrxacdc fhaghv`k`b?!...ß

U `i k Cfw Fc;n ukghn`k [hmhf`kvh vel xavx... âFw âcl nß Rinedaxk fharh fñ ahocsx i]i k pe] mhoj ncs l xddcjgc jhk`kl hl `av`ñ.ß

Pcl ]xkxk vel xavx... âUkghñ ukvhk (|edycl fcnvck) suknh [hl hhj hnhs`kvh fw âcl nßc ck ghdxrgx mc scghpxddcjgx acosgcñvñ mc bhg`l gñvhk fharh pe] ;cs fwkgghñh l i khrxacdc rhgol hb.ß

Zl cn vc pcl xk `i k vel xavx... âL i pcl l cvxk pz;wl cjx fhncsxkvc – ukwk rupwl ghn` ugvywl wb phgvh – ;xl fxbxl gc l i khrxac evcn?!ß

Pi fhf xfkx L i kbcñ ukwk szbgcnxkxk [hmhf`kvh vel xavx... âUkh mc ukwk dugvhaghñ`k`k szbgcnxkc rwghr hsl hd`k, c; s

phgvh, sxbxk âcl nßvck ughk \hd`k`b hnhvhk 'evcn... Hgghph hk v  
ugswk, sxb fw âcl nßc phl `vhk hnj`r ghdxrsxkxb.ß

Fcaxn xfkx Scxv fegc fxn pcssh mhojvh Ri nedac vcsjc;  
mencnc; vel xavx...âHgghp l ckxl fw âcl nßvc ukghngh (Ri nedagc)  
l i khrxacdc rhgol `a ugvywyl w pe] mhoj 'znl csxk!ß<sup>1</sup>

m) Xsghl x l ckfcgcnvc

âCl nß ;cgl csx |edycl fcnx-C;ncl j -vck kcrv  
ugwkhk pcvxsgcnvc vphh juo 'zbc vcdxn. Fxb 'cgck fcpsgcnvc  
Hgghp`k ;zl cdx xgc ukw hnhav`nh[hy`r. Xkvx xsc, shvc[c ughnhr,  
|edycl fcnxk Hl xnxvck ughk fxn acosxk [hmf`kvh  
fwdwnvwrghn`k` redv evxnx; ...âFw âcl nß Hgghp l coswsvwn, ukw xsjcvdx  
acosgcnvc mc dengcnvc rcnhr menxn.ß

L i jchg Hgghp vh Rwn/hkvh fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا أَطِيعُوا اللَّهَ وَأَطِيعُوا الرَّسُولَ وَأُولِي الْأَمْرِ مِنْكُمْ﴾

âEd l z/l xkgn! Hgghp, Ukwk Ncswgkxh mc zbiki bvck ughk âwgxg-cl nß xjhj  
evxk.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw ;xl x phgghn`k phl `s`kvh, dc/kx cncf gi ycjxkvc,  
l i scgl hkghn`k i nti kvc, xsghl x l ckfcgcnvc, ;xjh`f mc si kkcvc  
âcl nß ;cgl csxkvck l crscv, dhgk`b l i scgl hkghnh pz; wl cj  
mc xl hl cjvxn. Fwkh cshsck âcl nß ;cgl csx Xsghl acnxcjxkvc,  
cncf vxgxkvc mc l i scgl hkghn`k i nti kvc l hg; ugvyw pcl xk  
l c/kvh xagcvxgl xavxn. Xkvx c'cn âwgxg-cl nß ;cgl csxkx acn/x  
xsjxghp mc xsghl x hvrudl h peshf ejsc; mc ukvhk l crscvck  
|edycl fcnvck suknh xl hl ugvywkw rcfwg ejsc; , pe] fxn  
xnhv rhna`dh ]`ol hb mc xojxght vh 'zbc vcdl cb. Gh; xk x; x  
l c;jcf hnhs`kvh âwgxg-cl nßxk l xsvhrghn` (ohnx[x ki l wkcgcnx)  
fhncsxkvc vc xojxght mhnv`n. } i k; x Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk  
xkhk[`kh 'znc âwgxg-cl nßvck l crscv l c/swl xl hl ghn  
ugvywkh 'znc, pz; l ck Hgghp jcnctxkvck jc/dxk evxgl cgx, pcl  
vc suknvhk redv ugwk[hy` ;xl x, 'i khpghnvkh \h; -\h; xbc  
ugl hg`v`n.

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc xsc vedxgx; x, l i scgl hkghn pcn ;csgc  
pz; wl cj cshs`kvh fed/cj ejscgcn u, âwgxg-cl nß hvghk`n. Fwkh

<sup>1</sup> Fijik fw fcpsgcn mc xsjxvghgghn âJhnnox Jcfcnxßkxk âscrxtcß  
fzgl csxkvc, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1837-1851-vc 'cgl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âKxshß swncsx, hdc.59



cshsck, ukwkgf fed/cj evck pcn ;csxk vc ukh xjhcj ejl csx mh[xfvxn. Lcpb pcl xk cshsh 'znc vc Debxv xfkx L i hmxdcxk oxghtcjxkx rcfwg evcnc; ukh xjhcj ejvxgc, |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkx : cnfcghvh rcjgc dejnxf hnmhv-wahrgn`k` csxn h\hmv`ghn, |edycl fcn acpcnxkx – Lcvxkcjwk-Kcfxkx i ] 'i k unvw i bmgcnxkc phghg ejvxgc, : c/fckx l hk[hkhrgh (suknhvhk redv ugwkx[hy` ;xl x) 'i ggc-fhnhk ejvxgc.

#### 7-Mcsx mc mcsxddcj

Cncf vxgxkvc amcsxß mc amcsxddcjß ;cgl cgcnx, egc[c vc fw ;z;vck hg`khk shxn ;cgl cgcnxk l c/khs` hahy`vh;` ac; xgvcvxn... Pcdhjvh ughk fxn xkshk fharh fxx xgc cpv-\edl hk fhyghd`n ;x, ukwk mthj`kvk suknh kbcnvc jwjvwyw l i cddck xagcnx denxkc dejxnsxk. Fw mcsxddcjx evck al wsxß, mcsxddcjxk evxgvxdx acos xsc amcsxß hvghkv`n`g`n. "zni gl csx mcsxddcj ugwkxhk xagcnc xsc al wsh fxpß vedxgn. Fw mcsxddcj fc/bx phgghnvh amcsxddcjß szbi mc ukvhk hg`khk shxn szbgcnc x[nh evxgn. Lcscgck, al wsxß, dc/kx mcsxddcj evck acos zb mcsxsxkc vedxn... âSckc mcsxddcj evxncl ;x, l ckxl mthj`l vkh suknh hxgcl c kcbhncj ej, l cvncsl x xvhnc ej, ukghn`k fhncsxkvc txghk xagcnx 'zn.B

âLwsxß fc/bck fharhghn`k` zb mcsxddcjxkvck h'hp evcnc; vedxn... âTxghk; csc mcsxddcj ejl xacl .ß Dhowv, al ckxl mcsxl txghk; csvxnß. Fc/bck vc vedxn ;x, txghk; csgc cpv-\edl hk fhyghl `ahl , dhowv ukw mc; xg ejl xacl ;x, fc/bx xagcnx denxkc dejxnsxk. Fwkghn`k phl `s` mhpvx fxn l c/khk` xthvc evxn.

Fw redv ugwkxhghn amcsxß mc amcsxddcjß xsjxghpgghn`, egc[c vc fw ;z;gcnvck hg`khk shxn szbgcnxk cncf vxgxkvc xth ejvx; gcnx l c/khghn vxv ;x, Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc mc |edycl fcnxk acnxt si kksxkvc vc pcl xk l c/khghn redv ugwk l wavwn. Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿كُتِبَ عَلَيْكُمُ إِذَا حَضَرَ أَحَدَكُمُ الْمَوْتُ إِنْ تَرَكَ خَيْرًا الْوَصِيَّةُ﴾

âSxhc (fegc) dhb`gv`... Sxgcnvck fxxkxk zgi l mhoj` 'cgrf ]hjv`y` bhl hk c`cn zbikvck suknh fxn aedx (l hg-vzmgcjx) rudwnsh, mcsxddcj ejxk.B Hdckxk ho`n`kvx xsc fwdwnwgwn...

فَمَنْ خَافَ مِنْ مَوْصٍ جَنَفًا أَوْ إِثْمًا فَأَصْلَحَ بَيْنَهُمْ فَلَا إِثْمَ عَلَيْهِ

âMcsxddcj evck acosxk hby`k]`j`y`kvk, dhowv 'ikhpkvhk runohk acos, ukghn`k hnhs`kvx xsghp ejsc, ukh 'ikhp duovwn.B Suknh fwdwnwgwn...

وَأَسْتَشْهِدُوا شَهِيدَيْنِ مِنْ رَجَالِكُمْ....

âEd l z/l xkgcn! Sxbgcnvck pcn phks` fñxkxbxk zgi l mhoj` 'cgxf` ]hjsh mcsxddcj  
bhl hk` acphvcj menl c; i ]i k hnhk`bvkh x;x kctcn hvxgx ]hy`nl hg`v`n.<sup>1</sup>

âKxshß swncsxkxk 11-12-[x hdcgcnx vc fegcvxn.

Hl l h acnxt |edycl fcn si kksxkc` 'cgvx; vc xsc, Fwohnx  
âMcsdhß ;xjhF`k`k cmmcgxkvc, L i sgi l xsc âMcsxddcjß ;xjhF`k-  
vh ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl fegc fwdwnvw...  
âL i scgl hk fñx xkshkh – c`cn mcsxddcj ugwkhs` fñx aedx mhnv`nsh – mcsxddcjxk  
dhb`f zb dhk`kh rudl hvkh x;x 'e[c dwowdh 'ejl csx ncmh vedxgvxn.B

Xsghl txrpxkvc mcsxddcjxk zbi kcl cosws pz;l gcnx mhnv`n.  
Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxhkgghnvkh mcsx mc mcsxddcj ;cgl cgcnxkxk  
xsghl x fñx xsjxghp ugvwyyw vh hdv`kgha`n.

|edycl fcngcnxk mc ncswwghn`k mcsxddcjx vc (ukwk  
ki l wkcgcnxkx Jzmnghjvhk mc Xk[xgvck fcdhk evxnx;) fwwvn...  
âNcswwghn mc \edycl fcngcn zb mcsxgcx xgc cpv-\edl hk  
fhyghv`ghn ;x, ukghn`k acnxcjxkx zbgcnxkvck suknh [hl hhjh  
]hjv`ns`kghn mc ukghn`k i l l cjxkc kcbhncj ejsxkgcn.B

Fw i l l cjvc vc Ohjcl i g-ckfxdh pcbncj L i pcl l cv  
j edkxgc zbi kvck cmmcg;x \edycl fcngcn ;xl x cl cg  
ejl xa mc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> xgc cpv-\edl hk fhyghl `av`n ;x, ukwk  
acnxcjxkx jcfgy ejxk, i l l cjxkx kcbhncj hgj`kv shoghs`k mc  
fw cpv-\edl hk` u pcbncjxk vx`cn zmghvghn`kh – dc/kx ukvhk  
suknh;` uk fñx xl hl h ]hjv`ns`k. |edycl fcn fc/bck âmcxß mc  
âmcsxddcjß ;cgl cgcnx mc ukghnvkh hg`khk szbgcngc, fc/bck xsc  
fw l c/khk` ]hjv`nhk fharh szbgcngc fi j i k l i scgl hkghn` fw  
l cscgcvcck h'hp ejvx. Fegc ;x, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> âmcxß gcrcfx xgc  
azpncj jh`v` mc fw gcrcf u pcbncjxk oi swsx hv`kh ]emnxgvx. Fw  
l cscgc Hgghp`k ;zl cdx xgc kzmfcjx fcpsgcnvc fcdhk ugwkx-  
[hrv`n.

---

<sup>1</sup> âFcrcncß swncsx, hdc.180-182

X: X LC: JCFXK OXGHTCJ MC XLHLCJ FHNC SXKVC: X  
KCBCNXDDCSXKXK HNHAV-N-GLHS-

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxhk devvx xsjxghp` hnhav`nv`rvhk suknh  
pcn x;x l c;jcfxk oxghtcj mc xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x  
kcbcnxddcgcnxkx fcdhk evxnx; ...

OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK KCBCNXDDCSX MC UKGHN-K XSJXKHV  
EJVX: GCNX VCGXG

#### 1-Cfw Fc;n xk szbi

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkvw ;x, ocgxtc Cfw Fc;n vel xavx... âFw  
âcl nß Ri nedaxk fw ahocsxkvck fharh pe] ;cs i]i k  
ncsl xddcjgc jhk`kl hb. }i k;x ukghn csxg-kcscf fho`l `kvhk  
cncl rzml gcnxkvc l cn;cbxddcj jca;xg evxn mc l ck fw  
x;xsxkvck fxnxkx (Cfw l fedvc mc Zl cnx) sxbxk i]i k  
fcdckxncl . Ukghnvkh phks` fxnx xgc xsjcsckxb, fed/cj evxk.ß<sup>1</sup>

#### 2-Zl cnx szbi mc kcbcnx

Zl cn vedxnvx... âPe] ;cs l cynwn ugl hl hg` mc âCfw Fc;ngc  
fed/cj jcgcs;ck phgvh ughk fxn sh`l h vx mc ;e]xf `ejvxß -  
vel cl cgxvn. Fcgx, `en]c;gx; fegc vx, gh;xk Hgghp ukwk  
acnnxkxk rhna`s`k` hg`. Phg-phb`nvh sxbxk hnhk`bv Cfw Fc;n  
rcvcn fcdckxgck fxn acos duovwn. Xkvx c`cn fxn acos  
l i scgl hkghn`k l camcnjx ugl hvhk fharhs` xgc fed/cj evcnsc,  
pcn x;xsxkxk fudkw mwnwgl hg`v`n!ß<sup>2</sup>

FW X: X VCGXG FHNCVC JCKRXVX L I GHPXBCGCN

Fwnhvh cmmcg[c Cfw Fc;n xk Scrxtcvc vevxdx szbc xahnc evxn,  
suknh ocgxtc Zl cn jcnctxkvck zbi kvck suknh;` ncpfcnxk  
jc/dxk evxgl csx l crscvxgc awnh ai hn`k`k xncgx ]c;xgl csxkx  
hnhav`n`r. HI l h Cfw Fc;n xk vevxdx vcgxgc `cgvx;vc xsc, pc-  
rxrcjvc u `i kvc ukghn`k `cjxnvx;gcnx vcgxggcnxk phl `s` rcfxgc  
jccssi fgcnx mc l ckjxrx cshs`kvx vx. }i k;x |edycl fcnxk \h;  
mc l i rcvcs [ckhbcxkx u pcbncjxk emxkvc fuaghd`f âFckx-

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, pi vvv ;xjh`f, nc[l wg-pwfgh fzgl csx.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh.

Shxvcß scrxtcsxkc 'evck mc Sc/v xfkx l fhvckx ncpfcn se]l c;  
xsjcdck ckshn vcsjcsx pe] mhoj âSc/v fharhghn`kvhk i sji k mc  
fw l crhl h phl `vhk hnj`r ghdxrvxnß - vel xnvx. C; sxkc ukghn  
vedxnvxgc n ; x, fw [hl hhj (l i ph[xngcn) sxbxk pxl hdckxb  
hgj`kvhv`n mc pe] ; csxk sxbxkgc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc [i n/cjx  
]hj l hb!

Ri nedavck ughk l i ph[xngcn vc ukghnh ruawgvwrvhk suknh  
rcfxgc l ckjxrxc i b 'cjxncnc; vevxgc n... âRi neda csxg-kcscfvc  
cnf rzml i ki k l cn; cbxddcjxkx jca; xg evxn.ß Suknh vevxgc n...  
âFxb L i pcl l cvxk rupwl -crncfhs` ugvywyl wb phgvh ukwk  
pz; wl cjx fhncsxkvc ; xl fxbxl gc l i khrxac mc l i fhxabc evc  
fxgc n?lß

Pcl ]xkxk, ckshnvhk ughk fxn ; xax vc fegc vedxnvx... âFxbvck  
vc fxn cl xn ugswk, sxbvck vc fxn cl xn.ß Ukwk [hmf`kvh  
l i ph[xnvck ughk fharh fxnxsx vel xavx... âFxb cl xn ughr, sxb xsc  
mcbxn.ß

L sedv xfkx Pi bednxk mc âUmsß rcfxgcsxkvc xajxnh; evck  
vx'cngcnxkx vc l crscvx rcfxgcmx dzkc l hgx; xv. Ukghn  
âOcbnc[ß rcfxgcsxkxk zbgcnxkc ph; xl ; csxgc[cdxkvck runown,  
i sji kvck pcgc x; x uk xgxk ; e]l cvxdx l i phnxfcgcnx  
ohj`nghdhnhr vedxnvxgc n... âHgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn âOcbnc[ß  
rcfxgcsx fxn vph fw pz; wl cjx cgxkc hgsh, pcl xac sxbvck  
i sji k ugh[hr mc pe] mhoj sxbx ukvh acnx; ejl cdc[c; vx. Fegc  
xsc, hdhyh rhgo`k mc Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj evxklß

Kcphdcj, xbvxp hl ghn` L cvxkckxk ; i ]c-fhbhngghn`k` vugvwnhk  
âCsgcl ß rcfxgcsxkxk L cvxkc dc 'cgxf Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj  
el csxkvck mc ckshn`k l i rhfxgxkvc ukwk phmhvhnghn`kh  
; zl c; ]hjv`nl hs`kvhk suknh Ri nedavck ughk l i ph[xngcn rcjx  
rcgcfc ]hgv`ghn mc zb pz; wl cjgcnxkx jcsfxj ejvxgc n. Vel cgx,  
phrr szb ocgxtc Zl cngcvxnæ ]i k; x u, fw phvxscvck suknh Cfw  
Fc; ngc fed/cjx jcgcs; ck phgvh fha menck fxn sh\l h  
hvghkv`n`nv`.

Fw u bhl hk fha menck phvxscgcnxk pcrxrcjgcnx xv (zbgcnxkc  
l cosws vcgxgcnx xgc). Hl l h ocgxtc Zl cnxk awnh fhncsxkvc  
vevxdx szbgcnxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, fxb oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk  
kcbcnxddcgcnxkx hnhav`nl hrgh edkx bhl hkvh, ukw vh hnhav`n`f  
jckrxv evc[cdx; .

3-Oigcth l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[gghn`k`k oxghtcj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcgcnx

Oigcth l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[gghn`k`k oxghtcj mc ukwk ke[c fcnrcnhn evxgl csx fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcgcnx x;x l zmbwv h oi ghscgckxn...

Fxnk[xsx... oxghtcj hahy`vh;` duggghngh fcnrcnhn evxgx n...

1-Awnh mhsxjcsxgcæ

2-Fed/cj mhsxjcsxgcæ

3-Ukwk fcnrcnhn evxgl csxkvc scphfcgcnxk cl cggcnxkc jhfe ugl hrghæ

4-Bunh;`g`r mc txbx;x`i [ xagcjl c;gc.

X;rk[xsx... ocgxtc xgc fed/cj evxgvx;vck suknh ukh xjhcy ejl c; , pcjjh Hgghph rhna` xjhcsxbgx; ejsc fegc, mh[xfvxn.

Xkvx xsc fw kcbcnxddckx hnhav`n`f jckrxv evxnx; ...

1-Awnhdh xsjxkhv ejl cdxk jckrxv evxgf hnhav`n`gl hs`

Xg; vctc awnhvhk szpfcj evck mc ocgxtc jc/dxk evxgl csx i]i k ukwk jca;xg ugwkl hs`kh tcnl hk menck Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf xv. Hl l h u, Xsgl vh xl hl cjxk awnh dugw xgc fcnrcnhn evxgl csxkc vhn pe] fxn vcgxg`cjxnl cl xavxn. Oigcth l c;jcfxkxk suknh;` kcsxggcnx xsc xl hl cjxk awnh dugw xgc rcnhnghal hs`k`k vi b`i kgi di kc vhn x;x Rwn/hk hdsxkc mc fxn |edycl fcn ncmhdcjxkc xsjxkhv evxn mc fegc vedxngcn... åU pcbncj fc/bx l i pi l xagcnvc zb scphfcgcnx xgc l camcncj evxnvx.B Pcl ]xkxk Xl hl Cgx™ -`k fwdwnvwyw fxn szbc vc xsjxkhv evxngcn. Fxb cmmcg[c ukghn`k vcgxggcnxkx hnhav`n`f jckrxv evc[c; , suknh xsc ocgxtc Zl cnxk`zsjcnxax xgc jca;xg ugwk h awnh fhncsxkvc fxn rcvcn szpfcj h]h[hy`r.

AWN HK-K V I B" I K G I D I K I K X S F H J E V X G L C S X K V C H G G H P-K : X J H F-K H M C | E D Y C L F C N S I K K C S X K C X S J X K H V E V X G L C S X

Ukghn vedxngcn... L i jchg Hgghp l z/l xkgcnxk fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَمْرُهُمْ شُورَى بَيْنَهُمْ﴾

åXagcnx zb hnhghn`kv h l camcncjgc denxkc dejxncngcn.B<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcnx C; ncl fhncsxkvc vc fegc fwdwnwn...

---

<sup>1</sup> åAwnhß swncsx, hdc.38

## ﴿وَشَاوِرْهُمْ فِي الْأَمْرِ﴾

âXagcnvc ukghngh l camcncj ej.β<sup>1</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vedxngcn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl l i pi l xagcnxkvc  
zb scphfcgcnxgc l camcncj evcnvx.

Ukghn`k [hmhfkvh vedxnx; ...

1- âMc cl nwpwl awnh fcdkcpwl β – hdcxkxk xsjxkhv.

âAwnhβ swncsxkxk 38-[x hdcxkvc dengcack âMc cl nwpwl awnh  
fcdkcpwl β [i l gcsxkxk hnv`k[h âmc l xl l h ncbrkhpwl dwktxrwkβ (dc/-  
kx ukghnh cjh ejvx; gcnxl xbvck Hgghp dugwkvh xkthr evcngcn)  
[i l gcsx 'cgxn. Pcn x; x [i l gc l i ahmxnc mc xkthr ejl cdxk  
mh[xfgdxkx duo, shvc[c ughnhr i sji k fxn xa ugvwywkw ]hjv`n`n.  
Egc[c vc l camcncj dhgk`b egc xagcnvc scpxpvxn ; x, ukghn`k fhnc-  
sxkvc Hgghp mc |edycl fcnxk jcnctxkvck fxn pz; l menxgl cl xa  
ugswk. } i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿وَمَا كَانَ لِمُؤْمِنٍ وَلَا لِمُؤْمِنَةٍ إِذَا قَضَى اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ أَمْرًا أَنْ يَكُونَ لَهُمُ الْخِيَرَةُ مِنْ أَمْرِهِمْ وَمَنْ

يَعْصِ اللَّهَ وَرَسُولَهُ فَقَدْ ضَلَّ ضَلَالًا مُبِينًا﴾

âPe] fxn l z/l xk ; xax mc l z/l xk rhv`k`k phrr` duovwn ; x, Hgghp mc Ukwk  
Ncswgw fxn xax mh[xf ejvxdx bhl hk zbikc fxn xojxdhn menl xa ugswk. Pcn ; cs Hg-  
ghph mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh rhna` xjhcsxbgx; ejsc, ha; hn hby`kg`yh vi ]hn ugl wavwn.β<sup>2</sup>

Fxb xl hl cj fhncsxkvc Hgghpvhk mc Ukwk |edycl fcnxkvck  
'cgxf ]hjkh mc l i ahmxncdc pe] fxn den rudl hdhk vcgxxgcnx  
jebgx; gc fcdhk evc[cdx; .

2-âMc ahmxnpwl txg-cl nβ hdcxkxk xsjxkhv.

Fw [i l gc âHgX-XI nhkβ swncsxkxk |edycl fcnxk rcbmcgcnx  
(l i phnxfcgcnx) mc Hgghp-jhhghk`k l z/l xkgcnc ke[c ; z l c;  
'zsjcnl csx xgc cghrcvhn khbxg ughk 139-166-[` hdcgcnxk fxn  
rxsl xvxn. Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnxkvc fi ji k l i scgl hkghnh, oi swsxgc  
Xsghl vzdi a]i gcnxkc oxjh f ugwkwn mc ukghnh zdi v-kcsxpcj  
menxgx. Fc/bxgcnxkvc xsc dhgk`b |edycl fcnc oxjh f ugwkwn ; x,  
ukghnvhk fxnx vc 159-[w hdcvxn...

﴿فَبِمَا رَحْمَةٍ مِنَ اللَّهِ لِنْتَ لَهُمْ وَلَوْ كُنْتَ فَظًّا غَلِيظَ الْقَلْبِ لَانْفَضُّوا مِنْ حَوْلِكَ فَاعْفُ عَنْهُمْ

وَاسْتَغْفِرْ لَهُمْ وَشَاوِرْهُمْ فِي الْأَمْرِ فَإِذَا عَزَمْتَ فَتَوَكَّلْ عَلَى اللَّهِ إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُحِبُّ الْمُتَوَكِّلِينَ﴾

<sup>1</sup> âHgX-XI nhkβ swncsx, hdc.159

<sup>2</sup> âCpbhfb swncsx, hdc.36

âLcpb Hgghp jcnctkvck ughk ncpl cj scfcfxc ukghngh l epnxfhk, l ighdxl vhmnhk'nshk. C'cv ;ufwv (ohsddcjg) mc vhaic;gx ugshdv'k, scxkx cjnht'kvhk l ijgr vhy'gahnv'ghn. Fegc xsc, ukghn' ctm ej mc ukghn i]ik Hgghpvhk fhy'aghkl hr xsjc, xagcnvc ukghngh l camcncj ej, (rcjx) rcninh 'cgvx;vc xsc Hgghph jcmc;;ig ej, ]ik;x Hgghp jcmc;;ig evckgcx semxn.B

Jhl hl xgc hdv'kv'n ;x, fw hdcvc;x l camcncj tcnl hk` ukghn'k kcbcn mc nc/dgcxkc cl cg ejl c; i]ik vedxg, shvc[c ughnhr rcgfgcnxkx cgc hgl hr mc ukghngh l cnpl cjgx vhmnhkl hr i]ikvi n. }ik;x u pcbncjc fwdwnwgn ;x, ârcjx rcninh 'cgvxdxk bhl hk dhgk`b Hgghph jcmc;;ig ej mc zbi ki k rcjx rcninh'kh mc kcbcnxkc cl cg ej!ß

Redv ugwkhh hdcgcxk l c[l wswkvhk hdv'k ugwn ;x, l iahmxncdc isji kgi; menxgvvdx l crhl dhgk`b l i phnxfc mc rcbmc xagcnx xgc cghrcvhnv'n. |edycl fcnvck zb scphfcgcx xgc l iahmxnc fhncsxkvc 'cgxf ]hjhk szbgcnxk vc phl `s` rcbmcgcgc cghrcvhnv'n.

3-|edycl fcnxk scphfcgcgc l iahmxnc ejl csxkc xsjxkhv.

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk zb scphfcgcx xgc l camcncj ejl csx dhgk`b l i phnxfcgcncv 'zbc vcdxn. Fegc ;x, Cfw Pi nednc fwkw ha;hn ac;xgvc redv evcnc; vel xavxn...âEgc fxn ;csx 'znl cvxl ;x, (fxn ;csgc) |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcgc l camcncj ejl csxkvck hnj`r l camcncj evck ugswk. U pcbncjxk scphfcgcgc l iahmxncsx dhgk`b l i phnxfc fhncsxkvc ugwnvw.B<sup>1</sup> Ukghn'k ck l capwnw |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc h`hnv`y` l iahmxnc xv. Fwkvhk suknh l pi v mc Ockvc; l i phnxfcgcx xv ;x, hahy`vh redv ugwkhh[hr...

h) Fcvn vzdiai

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i Ri nedaxk jx[hncj ;hnmhk` xgc (ukh Cfw Si tdhk fha]`g`r evxnvx) rhna`ghal hr i]ik zb scphfcgcxkx ]hy`nv`. U ;hnmhk` cgc ;e]xnx f l i shvxnc ejl c; i]ik 313 kctcn zb phb`ng`y`k` fxgvxnvx. Ukghn |edycl fcngc dhkha` dugh vi avigcn. Fw ocfc Cfw Si tdhkh ]hjv`rvh, pcnc;cj xsjxrhl cjxkx vcdxavx mc L c;;cgxcnx ;zl cdc ]hy`nv`. Ukghn l xk kctcnc dho`k fzdi; fxn ruawkgv vzdia phb`nghav`ghn mc L c;;cvck ]`ov`ghn. Cfw Si tdhk zb ;hnmhk`

<sup>1</sup> âL cyhbxb (Mhrxvx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.580.

xgc 'zbvck xjvx mc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i x;x xavck  
fxnxx se]l c; rhna`s'kv rhgv... Dh shy-shghl hj L cvxkcdc rh-  
d'jl hr, dh vh vzdi a phb`ng'y` ugl hvhk Ri neda unvsw xgc  
l i phnxfc h\hnl hr.

Phvxsckxk jctsxghj`

Xfkx Pxahl `k âSxncß ;xjh'kv fegc dhb`g`n... âRi nedaxk zb  
jx[hncj ;hnmhkghn`k`k l i vhtxcx i ]i k pcnc;cj ejl cgcnxkx  
ocfcnx |edycl fcnc ]hjv`rvh, u pcbncj [hl hhjvhk zb  
kcbncgcnxkx fxgvxl csxkx xsjcvx mc ukghn` Ri nedaxk 'znvi di  
jcvfxngcnvck h'hp ejvx. Cfw Fc;n hdhyh rhgo`f dhoa` szbgcn  
vevx. Suknh Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf hdhyh rhgov`, u vh dhoa` szbgcn  
vevx. Fwkvhk suknh Lxrvhv hdhyh rhgov`.B<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Pxahl fwkvhk suknh Lxrvhv mc Ckshn`k szbgcnxkx  
ohj`nghv`n, hl l h Cfw Fc;ngc Zl cnxk kc vevxdxkc csgh  
juowkl wn. âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc fegc vedxgn...âCfw Fc;n fxn szb  
vevx, |edycl fcn ukvhk i b ]emxnvx. Suknh Zl cn fxn szb vevx,  
|edycl fcn ukvhk vh i b ]emxnvx. Fwkvhk suknh Lxrvhv hdhyh  
rhgov` mc ...<sup>2</sup>

L i sgi l vc Xfkx Pxahl ;xl x, Cfw Fc;nk vevxdx szbgcnx  
redv ejl c;vck ]c;xkl xa mc ukghn`k pcn x;xsx fw phvxsckx  
khjhl hl rudl wagh. Phvxsckxk jctsxghj` Mhrxvxkxk âL cyhbxß  
mc Lcrnxbxkxk âCl jhwg-csl hß ;xjh'kv fegc redv ugwkw. <sup>3</sup>  
Zl cn vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fw Ri neda  
rcfxgcsx mc xbbcj ruawkwvwn! Hgghph hkv ugswk, ukghn xbbcj  
jh`v`y` fxn 'i kvck pe] mhoj bcgxg ugl hl `av`n. Hgghph hkv  
ugswk ;x, ;htxn ugvwrghn` mhojvhk pe] mhoj xl hk  
'c]xnl cl xagcn! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, zb xbbcjgcnxkx pe] mhoj  
jcsxgl ejl cbgc! Sckxkgc axvvcjgx l i phnxfc h\hnhghn. Fegc xsc,  
ukghngh rhna`ghal hr i ]i k ghb`l x phb`ng`r 'zn, l i khsxf dug  
epjxdhj` d'y mc vzdi a gcmhbxl hj`jcvhni ; 'zn.B

Suknh Lxrvhv xfkx Cl n hdhyh rhgo`f vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp!  
Hgghp`k cl nxkx denxkc dejxn, fxb sckxkgcdx;! Hgghp hkv ugswk  
;x, fxb pe] mhoj Fckx-Xsnhxgxk zb \edycl fcngcnxkc vevxdx âSck

<sup>1</sup> âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl B, 2-[x [xgv, scp.253.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l B, [xphv mc sedn fhf, Fcvn rcbmcsx, 3-[ [xgv, scp.1403.

<sup>3</sup> L cjkv; x xthvcgn L crnxbxvckvxn.



mc Ncfffk fngx;vc 'evxf [xphv evxk, fxb fwnhvh ujwnwf 'zbgcdxnx;ß – ;xl x  
 vel cdc[cdx;.ß¹ C; sxkc, fxb fegc vedxnx; ...âSck mc |cnmcnvx'hn`k  
 'evxf [xphv evxk, fxb vc sxbxkgc 'cgxf [xphv evc[cdx;. Sckx  
 phrr ughnhr \edycl fcngxdc l cf/ws evckc hkv ugswk, c'cn fxbx  
 Fcn;wg-yxl hvh h\hnshk vh, dekc vc sckxkgc 'cgc[cdx;.ß²  
 |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ukw jc/nxtgcvx mc fhncsxkvc oedxn-vwh ejvx,  
 fwkvhk suknh hdhyh rhgo`f fwdwnvw... âEd xkshkghn! Zb  
 kcbncgcnxkxbx l ckc vedxk.ß |edycl fcn fw szbgc Lcvxkvc  
 ughk ckshn` kcbcnvc jwjwn mc fegc 'i l hk evxnvx ;x, ckshn zb  
 acpcngcnxkvck fharh denvc ukh ;zl c; ejl cbgcn. }i k;x ukghn  
 u pcbncjx dhgk`b zbi ki k mc hxgcsxkxk ugvwyw denvc runwl hy`  
 rcfwg ejl xavxgc. Fwkh 'znc vc âZb kcbncgcnxkxbx l ckc  
 vedxk.ß fwdwnvw. Sc/v xfkx Lchb hdhyh rhgo`f vevx... âDh  
 Ncswgcgghp! Lck ckshn`k jcnctxkvck [hmhf menxnc l . Lck[c,  
 sxbxk l crscvxkxb fxbx;ß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...âFcgx.ß Sc/v vevx...  
 âVedcsc, sxbc mcpd ugwkxk fcn l zmbwvhk fharh fcn  
 l zmbwdh ;e]l cgxsxkxb, (fxg ;x,) fxb sckc pcrxrx xl hk 'cjxnl xa  
 mc sckx jcsvxr ejl xax;æ ahpxvgx; evxnx; ;x, sxbxk 'cjxnvxdxkxb  
 pcn fcn aed phrv`n. Fxb sxbxkgc eavvxf xjhcj ejl c; cshs`kvh  
 cpv-\edl hk fhyghl `a`r. Dh Ncswgcgghp! Lc/l wnxddcjxkx sukh  
 ]hjv`n! Sckx phrr ughnhr \edycl fcngxdxkc se]ckc hkv ugswk,  
 c'cn fw vcndhdh vuynw pcnc;cj evxf unhdh 'xnsck, fxb vc  
 phl `l `b fcn kctcn ;xl x sckxkgc unhdh 'xnc[cdx;. Pcn ;csc  
 xsjcdxnsck ruawg, pcn ;csvck xsjcdxnsck hdn`g. Fxbxl l hg-  
 vzmgcjxl xbvck xsjcvxdxk rcvcn 'zjin. Sckxk fxbxl l hg-  
 vzmgcjxl xbvck 'zjinl cdxk fxbc cjh ejl cdxkvck vph  
 semxl gxvxn. {hk`l cgxkvc ughk Hgghph hkv ugswk! Lck fw  
 dugw pe] mhoj ;e]l cl xacl mc ukvhk pe] ocfcnxl vc duovwn.  
 Shfhp vi al ckgcxl xbgc rhna`ghal hrvhk csgh x;nhpg` vedxgcl .  
 Fxb l i phnxfvc ]uo scfxngx mc scvhrcjgxdx;! Fcg;c Hgghp-jhhgh  
 fcn aedx fxbvck sxbc cjh ejsxk ;x, fxbxl 'zbgcnxl xbxk  
 hdv`kg`y`kh scfcf ugswk.ß

Vx'cn ncmhdcjvc Sc/vxk fegc vevvdx kcrg ugwkwn... âDh  
 Ncswgcgghp! Fxb zb rzml i l i bvck fcn rnw\wkw emgcxl xbv  
 rudl wawr ;x, kc sxbc l cpcffcj fcsgcl c;vc fxbvck hbv`ngn,

<sup>1</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.24

<sup>2</sup> Fcn;wg-yxl hv – Lc;;c-Dcl ck dugw i bcxkvc dengcack fcn  
 l ckjcrckxk hv`v`n ;x, Lc;;cvck sc;;xb 'e[cgx; dugvwn.

kc vc xjhcj ejl c; vc fxbvck 'enx rhg`nghn. Ukghn vh [xphvvh xajxnh; ejl c; xsjcdxngcn. Dh Ncswgcgghp! C'cn ukghn sxbxk vi al ckgc rhna`ghah[hy`k`b` fxgscdvxgc, pe] mhoj emgcnxkvc rhgl hbv`ghn. Gh; xk ukghn peshf evxnvxgc ; x, l crscvxxb fharh fxn ; hnmhkgh rhna`ghal hrv`n. Fxb xkvx sxbxk i ]i k oi swsx fxn den vi bcgvc[cdx; ; x, unvhv rcnhngahs`k`b. Sxbxk dug epjxdhj`k`b mc sctcn mcsxjxkxb jcvhni; 'znc[c; , fwkvhk suknh vi al ckgc rhna`ghah[hy`r. Fw phgvh c'cn Hgghp fxbc xbbcj kcsxf ejsc mc vi al ckc rhgxf 'cgsc; , ukvh zb xsjcdxl xbc ]hjl`a ughn`r. C'cn fharh fxn jhgedc vi ]hn ugshr, sxb zb hj`k`bh l xkcnc; fxbxl hnohl `bv h ughk acosgcnc ruawghns`k`b.ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j ukw jc/nxtgcdcnc; fwdwnvw...  
 âDhowv Hgghp ukvhk vh dhoad`s`k` kcsxf evc, ed Sc/v!ß

Nhmx vedxn... Sc/v zb kcbcnxkx vevx; vck suknh |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âHgghp`k oedxn-fcnc; cjx xgc xncgxgcdxk! }i k; x Hgghp fw x; x jhdthvhk fxnxkc rcgcf c ]hgl hy` l ckc mc/vc menl xavxn. Hgghph hkv ugswk, u rzml i k rcjg'hp`k` shk; x zb 'zbgnxl gc l i ahpxvc evxncl !ß

Suknh l xkx; vck ekvx, ukghn`k rcjg'hp`k` fxbc fxn-fxn 'zsjcncnc; vevx... âFw txghk; csxk, fw txghk; csxk... rcjg'hp`v`n.ß Lck 'znvi l , pe] ; cs zb denxkvck jcn`ckl cvx. {hl hhj vh fxgvx ; x, hnj`r l i phnxfc acnhjxkvcvxngcn, jx[hncj ; hnmhk` 'zni kl cb ugl wavwn. Fxb |edycl fcnxk szbi kvck rcgcf c ]hgh[hy`l`bh i l xvmhn ugvwr.<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl fw xavc zb scphfcgcnc xgc dhgk`b ukh 'znc l camcncj ejvx ; x, ukghn`k rhna`dh ]`ohk acnhjvc kc evc[c; gcncxkx duoghs`k. Fw l camcncj vc dhgk`b u mhoj evxgl xavx ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh |edycl fcnx l i phnxfc evxf rcgcf c ]hgh[hy`kvhk h'hp ejl xa, u rzml i k rcjg'hp`k` u pcbncjc 'zsjcnl xavx, |edycl fcn vc unhk` vzdial c; i ]i k scphfcgcnc zb phb`ng`rghn`k` e/ghk ejvx; vck suknh ukghnh 'zsjcnl xavx. Vel cgx, |edycl fcn ukghngh l camcncj ejvxdx bhl hk ukghn`k kzrjedx-kcbcnxcnxkvck fcpncgckl c; l crscvx 'i vl i nvi. Fw xa, shvc[c ughnhr ukghn`k rcgfgcnxkx cgc hgl hr, ukghn` Ri neda ; hnmhk`k`k tcnhnngx; evc[cdxkvck h'hp ejl c; mc l zmredx

<sup>1</sup> âL cyhbxß (Mhrxvx), U; stunv ]h` , 1-[x [xgv, scp.48-49æ âl dwkwg-cofhnß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.247æ âVcghxgwki-fi mmcjß, Fedpcrx, 2-[x [xgv, scp.377æ âCl jhi g-csl hß (L crnxbx), scp.74-75æ âVwnnwgi-l ckswnß (Si dwjx), 3-[i [xgv, scp.166.

vcdxal c; l crscvx 'i vi nvi ;x, Ri nedaxk jx[hncj l hgghn`k`  
l i shvxc ejl c; cmcbxkc vi al ckgc l i phnxfcdc 'evxf vzdi ac  
phb`nghal hy`k ghb`l ugvwyykw ukghnh fxgvxnsxk!

f) l piv l i phnxfcsx

Mhrxvxkxk âL cyhbxb mc L crnxbxkxk âCl jhwg-csl hß ;xjh`k-  
vh vedxgn... â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl l xkfcnc ]`o`f Hgghph pcl v-  
sckh ejvx; vck suknh fwdwnvw... âEd [hl hhj! Lck dwowvh 'zn-  
vi l ;x, pe] kcdxk ;e]c fxgl cvxdx fxn bxnepgx \hgjhn 'edxkl x-  
acl , r`g`k[`l Bi gti rhn`k hyb` s`k`fv`n. "znvi l ;x, fxn xkcdxk  
fha`k ;csxncl , suknh 'znvi l ;x, fxn ru]w zb vhg`l [h ]c; x-  
ncl .ß

{hl hhj vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp, fwkw ke[c jc/fxn evxf  
dubwnswkwß

Pcbncj fwdwnvw... âPe] kcdxk ;e]l cvxdx bxnepgx \hgjhn  
L cvxkckxk kxahkcsxvn. Sxb unhvh rhg`k. R`g`k[`l `k hyb`k`k  
s`kl hs` xsc l ckc mhnv ugh[hr l i sxfcjxk cghl cjxvn. Fha`k`  
;csvxdx l xkc; l ckxl zgvi ni gck scphfcgcnx l xk kxahkcsxvn.  
Ukwk hnv`k[h 'cgck fxn ru] xsc vi al ck ruawkwvwn ;x,  
xkahgghp, ukw zgvi nc[cdx; lß

Vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnvwyw kcrq ugwkwn...  
âR`g`k[`l `k s`kl hs` Cpgx-fedjxl vck ughk fxn ;csxk  
zgvi ni gl csx cghl cjxvn.ß Suknh cghmc evcnc; fwdwnvw... âFw  
fhncvc zb kcbcnxcnxkxbx l ckc vedxklß

|edycl fcncx kcbcnx Lcvxkcvck ohnx[ ugl hl hr xv. Cfvi g-  
ghp xfkx l fedd, l i ph[xn mc ckshn fzdi ;gcnc vc u pcbncjgc  
l i mhtxr ugvwghn. Pcbncj fwdwnvw... âSxb Lcvxkcvc rhg`k,  
hnmhv-wahrghn`k`b` fi n[gcnc mc sck`cngcnvc dengcavxnxk ;x,  
c`cn vi al ck fxbc pi [wl ejsc, ukghngh ;i ]cgcnc vzdi al cdc; .  
}i k;x fxb fw dengcnc ukghnvhk vphh hnj`r fcgcvx; . Sxb vc  
fi n[gcncvck mc sck`cngcnvck vi al ckc uo dhyv`n`k.ß

Ukghn Lcvxkc emgcnxkx fxn-fxnkc dug h]hnhf fxn rhghdh  
]emxnl xavxgc, gh;xk Fcvn vzdi ai kvc xajxnh; ejl cdck,  
acphvcjc ]hjl hy`, dhowv vi al ckgc rhna`ghal hy` hnbw evck  
dekxdej l c [hmkghn xsc vevxgc... âFxbx vi al ckc jcnct h`hn!ß  
Pcl bc, Sc/v xfkx l fhvc, Ku/l hk xfkx Lhgx; xfkx Sc/gcfc  
ckshnvhk ughk fxn rnw`gh vevxgc... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Fegc fxn  
epjxl hg mhn ;x, vi al ck fxbx ukghngh rhna`ghal hrvhk

runovwywl wbow 'i l hk ejxk, fw vh ukghn`k vph [i n/cjgck-  
l csxkc scfcf ugswk. Fcwn 'i ki kvc i ] di b kctn sxbxkgc  
fxngx; vc xv, Hgghp sxbx ukghnh rhgxf ejvx. Fw 'i k xsc fxbxl  
shd`l`b ugvwr[h ]uovwn, Hgghpvhk fegc fxn 'i ki  
hnbwghd`nv`r. Hgghp vh fw 'i ki fxbc kcsxf ejvx.ß

| edycl fcnc-C; ncl i ukghn`k jc\cvck-v`nkhyh rcvnc  
sxghpgkhv`rghn`k` mc fw xac xsnhn ejvx; gcnxkx 'znvi ;vc,  
xsjc; gcnxkx ncvv ejl cdx l csgcpj fagl cvx. Pcl bc vevx... âFw  
; xjh` sckc khbxg evck Hgghp hkx ugswk ;x, fw 'i k  
L cvxkcvck ; ckhnvh r`g`k[`l` ukghn`k rhk` xgc swmhn l hd`k[h  
pe] kc del cdc[cdcl lß (Pcl bc [i l c mc ackfc 'i kgcncxkx unw[  
jwjl wavw.) Fwkvhk suknh L hgx; xfkx Sckcl (Cfw Scxv  
Oxvnxkx hjhs`), Ku/l hk xfkx L hgx; xfkx Sc/gcfc mc Cdhs xfkx  
Cjx; vc vi al ckgc l i phnxfc ejl c; i ] i k L cvxkcvck ]`ol hr  
fhncvc vkh`av`ghn. | edycl fcnc ukghn`k fwkvhk fharh fxn dugw  
rcfwg ejl cvx; gcnxkx 'znvi ;vc, [i l c khl hb`k` [hl hhjgh  
fxngx; vc r`gv`, ukghnh zdi v-kcsxpcj menvx mc fwdwnvw ;x,  
[xphv dugwkvh ]hg`as`kghn. Suknh ocfcnc menvx ;x, fw dugvh kc  
rcvnc ;x, scfxn evxngcn, rcgcfc ukghnghv`n. {hl hhj vh vi al ckc  
vuynw pcnc; cj ejl c; fhncsxkvc semxkxnvxgcnc. Gh; xk fxn ]uoghnc`  
L cvxkcvck ]`ol hy` ouaghl hv`ghn.

| edycl fcnc-C; ncl i fwkvhk suknh csn khl hb`k`  
[hl hhjgh fxngx; vc r`gv`. Fwkvhk suknh [hl hhj fxn denc  
d`y`av`, Cmhgx l ckjcrscsxkxk cphgxsc vc 'cgvxgcnc,<sup>1</sup> rhv`kghn`  
rhghghnhv mc sck`cngcnvc dengcavxnvxgcnc. | edycl fcnc Cfw Fc; n  
mc Zl cngc zb emxkc vhoxg ugvw, cl l hl csxkx fhyghd`f vzdi a  
`hgjhngnh`k` 'edvx. Pcl xk phgvh [hl hhj ukwk pi [ncsx xgc  
l xkfcncxk hnhs`kvh [cn'cdc vi bi gl i avi gcnc. Sc/v xfkx L chb mc  
l sedv xfkx Pi bedn 'cgvx. Ukghn [hl hhjh vevxgcnc... âSxb kc  
xsjcvxkxbsc, | edycl fcnc vevxkxb mc ukw L cvxkcvck ]`ol hyh  
mhvhn ejvxkxb. Phgfw; x cl n mc tcnl hk ukh hxl hkvhk khbxg  
ugwn. Fegc xsc, fw xax ukh pcmhgc evxk, pcn kcdx cl n ejsc ukw  
denxkc dejxnxk, ukwk kcbcnx kcvxnsc, ukh vh xjhcg evxk.ß

| edycl fcnc-C; ncl i vzdi a `hgjhn` 'edl xa mc  
sxghpgkl `a phgvh ; cl cnxkx fhyghv` mc r`g`k[`k` fegxkc  
fhyghd`f ]zgc ]`ov`. Ukghn xsnhn evcnc; vedxnvxgcnc... âDh

---

<sup>1</sup> L cvxkcvck i ] l xg l cshtcvc dengcack fxn rcsfcckxk hv`v`n.

Ncswgcgghp! Fxbxl sckxkgc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc phrr`l `b duovwn.  
Sxbxk kcbcnxkxb phks`v`nsh, ukw vh denxkc dejxnxk.B

|edycl fcn fwdwnvw...âLck sxbx fw xac vc/mcj ejvxl , hl l h  
rcfwg ejl cvxkxb mc (xkvx) pe] fxn \edycl fcn i ]i k ghdxr  
vedxgvxn ;x, vzdi a \hgjhn` 'edvx;vck suknh, Hgghp ukwkgh  
vi al ckgcnx hnhs`kvh l i ph;xl c evckc rcvcn vzdi a \hgjhn`k`  
]`ohnjs`k. Sxhc menvxdxl 'zsjcnxagcnc jhfe ugwk. Hgghp`k hv`  
xgc pcnc;cj evxk, scfxngx ugvwywkwb mhojh rcvcn rcgfc  
sxbxkgcvxn.B

Licggt vedxn... |edycl fcnxk Lcvxkcvck ukghn`k xsnhn` xgc  
]`ol hy` rcfwg ejl csxkxk scfcfx fcg;c vc fw ugh fxgcnvx ;x,  
c`cn ukw rcfwg ejl cscdvx, fw xa ukghn`k nwpddcsxkc l cktx  
jc/sxn rudh[hr, ukghnh ai[hcj cmcbxkc bcxtgx; mc bxggcj  
'cjxnc[c;vx. Ukghn`k x;xk[x nc/dxkxk rcfwg evxgl cl csxkxk  
scfcfxkx vc u pcbncjxk zbi fcdhk ejl xavx.

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk zb scphfcgcnxkxk kcbcn mc  
nc/dxkc cl cg ejl csxkxk x;xk[x ki l wkcsx vc Ockvc;  
l i phnxfcsxkvc fha menckgcnvxn...

m) Ockvc; l i phnxfcsx

Mhrxvx mc Lcrnxbx Ockvc; l i phnxfcsxkxk fhaghkl hs`k`  
fegc kcrg evxngcn... â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl ukghngh (scphfcgcnvc)  
l camcncj ejvx. }i k;x u pcbncj l i phnxfcgcnvc ukghngh vph  
]uo l camcncj evcnvx. Fw bhl hk Shgl hk acpcnxk cjhnt`kh  
ockvc; rhb`gl hs`k` jc;gxt ejvx.B

Fw x;x nhmx l i phnxfckxk ho`n`kvh vx`cn fxn l i ahmxnckx  
redv evcnc; vedxngcn... â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl mc ukwk  
;zl c;]xgcnx uk 'i kvck hnj`r l i phsxncvc rhgv`ghn. Kcphdcj,  
]cxkqx;gcx axvvcjgckvx;vc u pcbncj vwh evcnc; vevx...  
â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Lck Sckx Zb cpv-\edl hk`kh hkv menxncl ! |cnmcnvx`hnh! C`cn  
Sck xsjcsck xfhvcj ugwk l hbshk.B Fwkvhk suknh Rcjthk rcfxgcsxkxk  
fha]`ghn` ughk l dedkc xfkx Pcsxk mc Phnxs xfkx Umtwk  
vhg`k[h hvhl 'zkvcnvx ;x, Lcvxkc ownl hg`rghn`k`k i ]vc  
fxnxkx ukghnh mensxk ;x, zb hvhl ghn` xgc rhd`js`kghn mc ;i tn  
ruawkwkh ;zl c; ejl csxkgcn. Gh;xk ukghn u ownl h fhyghn`k`k  
dhn`s`k` xsjcvxgcx mc |edycl fcn fwkw rcfwg ejl cvx, dhgk`b  
i ]vc fxnxkx menc[cdxkx vevx. Ukghn nhb` ugvwghn mc zb  
rzml gcnxkvck uk kctcngc fxngx;vc si gp l i rhmxgcsxkx

xl bhghl hr i ]i k acpcnc vhoxg ugvwghn. Fw xa de; wkghahkvh, rccgl -; hy`b 'c]xnvxgc n ;x, Usl hk xfkx Ctmhk si gpkhl ckk dhbs`k. Xfhv xfkx Fxan sxghpg` phgvh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fha` i sji kvc vwnl wavw. Fw bhl hk l sedv xfkx Pi bedn vhoxg ugvw mc 'znvi ;x, l dedkc h dhrghn`k` wbhv`f. Ukh vevx... âEd l edl wk! Hdhrghn`k` d`y! |edycl fcnxk pi bwnwkvh h dhrghn`k` wbhjl `shk?! Hgghph hkv ugswk, c`cn |edycl fcn fwnhvh ugl hshdv`, fzdni ki kxbcl gc d`njhnv`l !ß Suknh vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Hgghp`k shghl `sckc ugswk! C`cn fw xa xghpx fxn tcnl hkv`nsh, ukw ho`nh ]hjv`n. C`cn fegc vedxgsc, Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, ukghnh r`g`k[vhk fharh pe] kc menl cnx;! (Suknh ukghnh vevx.) Sxb kc mhojvhk fxbc fegc jhl hp `zbi vx; l xsxkxb?!ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i mcbxddcjx fegc 'znckvc Sc/v xfkx L chb mc Sc/v xfkx l fhvckx ]hy`nv`, ukghngh l cotx ac; xgvc l camcncj ejvx. Ukghn vevxgc n... âC`cn fw xa hsl hkk tcnl hkv`nsh, ukw denxkc dejxn, c`cn ukh l c/l wn ugwl hv`y`k fxn xavxnc, hl l h ukwk denxkc dejxnagl csxkx xsjcdxnscksc, fxb eavxf xjhj evxn; . Gh;xk shvc[c fxn kcbcnvxnc, fxbxl dhk`l `bv h ukghn i ]i k r`g`k[vhk fharh pe] kc duovwnlß

|edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âL ck fi ji k cncfgcnxk phl `g`rgh sxbx pcvct jwjvwykw 'znckvc zb-zbi l c tx; xngcavxl ;x, fwkgghn`nhb` shg`l , ukghnh ;zl c; ejl csxkgcn.ß

Ukghn vevxgc n... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fwkgghn [hpxgddcj vzmn kvc duoswggywk axvvcjxkvck vmcgcgnxk 'ckcsxkx mc vcnxsxkx dedxnvxgc n, fxbxl fhnc l xbv pe] mhoj fegc jhl hph vi al cl xavxgc n ;x, fxn aed xsjcl cdc [i n/cj ejsxkgcn. Dhgk`b hg-men evckvc, dhowv rukhr`g`yh 'cgckvc fegc fxn aed ukghnh kcsxf ugwnvw. Xkvx Hgghp sxbx fxbc menl xa mc fxbx vc sxbxk mhsxjckxbgc cbxbgcl xa, pxvhdcj ejl xavxn. Fw bhl hk bxggcjx rcfwg evc; l x?! Oedn, fwkgghn r`g`k[vhk fharh pe] kc menl cnx; !ß

|edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âL c; jwfw [ `n`k!ß

Sc/v l c; jwfw [ `nv`, l dedkc mc Phnxs hdhyh rhgov`ghn. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl w[h scsgc fwdwnvw... â" enx rhd`v`k, fxbxl gc sxbxk hnhk`bv h dhgk`b r`g`k[ (ph; xl ) ugh fxgc n!ß<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âL cyhbxß (Mhrxvx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.477-480â âCl jhwg-csl hß (L crnxbx), scp.235-236.

Fw, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk Ockvc; rcbmcxkvc zb scphfc-  
 gcnxkvck kcbcn xsjcl csx mc l camncj ejl csx vxv. |edycl fcnx  
 szpfjgcnxkvck hdv`k ugnw ;x, u pcbncj ukghnh rhna` mwnwahk  
 rcfxgcgn hnhs`kvh xojxght dnhhl hy` kbcnvc jwjl wavw,  
 oi swsxc szbi ki k ho`n`kvh w[h scsgc vel xavx... â" enx rhd`v`k,  
 fxbxl gc sxbxk hnhk`bv h dhgk`b r`g`k[ ugh fxcn!ß } i k; x fw  
 phvxsc dhd`g`f Ri neda fha]`ghn`k`k rwghy`kh ]hjv`rvh ukghn`k  
 hnhs`kvh l i jgr xojxght vi ac[c; vx.

Mhrxvx mc Lcrnxbx vphph suknh ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x,  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Kcxl xfkx Lcs/wvw fw xac jc/dxk  
 ejvx, u vh zb jcvfxnxkvc l imttxrddcj cgvc ejvx, Fckx-  
 Ri nedbc dcpwvxgcnx xgc Ri neda rcfxgcsx hnhs`kvh ac; ; -ai fpc,  
 jcncvvi v mc xojxght dnhhjv` ;x, fw vh ukghn`k l cygwfxddcj  
 wynhl hghn`k`k scfcfgcnxkvck fxx vxv.

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk l i ahmxncgcnxkvck fxn rxsl xkx fcdhk  
 ejl c; gc hdv`k ugnw ;x, u pcbncjxk fw l camncjgcnvc cshs  
 pcvctx scphfcgcnvck vi b`i k nc/dx mc kbcnx zdnckxf xsjxthvc  
 ejl c; ugl hl `av`æ c; sxkc c; scn phgghnv h u pcbncjxk pcvctx fw  
 vxv ;x, cmmcg[cvck fxgvdx phgvh zbi ki k scpxp kbcnxkx l ca-  
 mcncj dugw xgc ukghnh zdncjsxk mc fwkh cl cg ejsxkgn. Fegc ;x,  
 u pcbncj Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc scphfcgcnvc l camncjvc l cpb  
 fw l crscvx xbgcdxnvx. } i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh fw l i ahmxncvck  
 cmmcg Ri nedaxk jebgx; gc l i phnxfcdc fhaghl hghn` mc l cygw  
 ugl hghn`kv h |edycl fcnx h`hp ejl xavx. L i ahmxncvck suknh  
 vh pcbncj ukghn` xaxk kcx[csxkvck h`hp ejvx, Ri neda fha]`gh-  
 n`k`k rcjg`hp`k` ukghnh `zsjcnvx. Vel cgx, fegc l i ahmxncgcnvc u  
 pcbncjxk cshs pcvctx l i scgl hkghn`k vxrrcjxkx ukghn`k zbgc-  
 nxkxk cl cg ejl cgx ugvwrghn` xagcnx denxkc dejxnl cdc  
 dzkcgjl c; vxv mc |edycl fcn vc fwkw l camncj dugw xgc  
 ukghnh zdncvxnvx. Fw vh bhg`l `hvahpghn`k jwjvwyw dugwk  
 jhl c; sxkcvxnæ fegc ;x, ukghn zb nc/d mc kbcngcnxkx ncddcj  
 rcfwg ejvxnxn mc l xshg i ]i k, âFxb ;x, `hvahp`r, fegc  
 fwdwnl wawrß - vedxngcn.

Pcl ]xkxk xsjxkhv evxgc hdckxk cmmcgx fxbxl fcdhk ejvxdx-  
 l xbc ha; hn ac; xgvc vcghgcj evxn. } i k; x Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...

﴿فَبِمَا رَحْمَةٍ مِّنَ اللَّهِ لِنْتَ لَهُمْ وَلَوْ كُنْتَ فَظًّا غَلِيظَ الْقَلْبِ لَانفَضُّوا مِنْ حَوْلِكَ فَاعْفُ عَنْهُمْ

وَاسْتَغْفِرْ لَهُمْ وَشَاوِرْهُمْ فِي الْأَمْرِ...﴾

âLcpb Hgghp`k ncpl cjx shdcsxkvc ukghngh l i ghdxl mc l epnxfhkshkæ c'cn  
;ufwv ohsxddcjgx, rcgxb rcgfgx ugshdv`k, ukghn scxkx cjnh`kvhk l i jgr vhy`-  
gahnv`ghn. Fegc xsc, ukghn` ctm ej mc ukghn i]ik (Hgghpvhk) fhy`aghkl hr xsjc,  
xagcnxkvc ukghngh l camcncj ej...B<sup>1</sup>

Fw ;xl x dengcnvc l camcncj ejl c; Hgghp-jhhghk`k |edycl -  
fcnc cjh ejvxdx i ncdx dwl ahrg`r mc l i ghdxl gxdxk kil wkc-  
gcnxvxn ;x, hdckxk cmmcgxkvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

Fwkh cshsck, l i ahmxnckxk pcvctx fc/bck ukghnh rhna`  
dwl ahrg`r mc l i ghdxl gx; 'zsjcni c; vxn - cmmcg; x l xshgvh  
ugvwyw ;xl xæ fc/bck vc l i scgl hkghn`k nwpxddcgcnxkx 'i [-  
gckvxnxf ukghn` jcnfxdc ejl c; vxn - l pi v vzdi ai kvc ughk  
l i ahmxnc ;xl x. }i k; x |edycl fcnc-C; ncl ukghn`k kcbcn mc  
nc/dgcxkx rcfwg evcnc; l pi vc 'ejl c; i]i k vzdi a \hgjhn`  
'edvx; vc, ukghn |edycl fcnc jcbdxr 'zsjcnxf zb kcbngcnxkc  
xsnhn ejvx; gcnxkvck \eal hk ughnhr vevxgc... âDh Ncswgcgghp!  
Fxbxl phrr`l `b duovwn ;x, sxbxkgc l i ohgxtcj evc; æ sxbxk kcbc-  
nxkxb phks`v`nsh, ukw vh denxkc dejxnc; ß Fw bhl hk  
|edycl fcnc ukghnh fwdwnv... âLck sxbx egc u xac ]hy`nv`l ,  
hl l h sxb rcfwg ejl cvxkxb. (Xkvx xsc) pe] fxn \edycl fcnc  
ghdxr vedxgvxn ;x, vzdi a \hgjhn`k` 'edvxdx bhl hk Hgghp`k  
ukwkgh vi al ckgcx hnhs`kvh l i ph; xl c ejvxdx mhojh rcvnc  
denc rudswk.ß

Fw phvxsc fha menck bhl hk |edycl fcnc-C; ncl gc scphfcgc  
hnhs`kvh h\hn`ghk szpfcjgcncvck hdv`k ugnw ;x, c'cn |edycl fcnc  
ukghn`k Lcvxkcvck ]`ol hyh vxh xsnhg` xsjc; gcnxkx [hmhfs`b  
rudshdv`, fw ukghn`k nwpxddcgcnxkc ]uo hy`n jc/sxn 'zsjcnc[c; ,  
xnhvcgcxkx bcxtgcvc[c; , rcgfgcnxkvc ouah`cgl cb fxn phg -  
vzdi avck rhd`jl hr phg` dnhvh[hrv`. Fwkh 'znc vc ukghn`k  
kcbcnxkxk vi b ugl hv`y`k` fxgc-fxgc ukw rcfwg ejvx. Ockvc;  
l i phnxfcsxkvc vc h\hn`ghk l i ahmxnc cshs e/jxfhn` xgc  
vi al ckx jcgcdc shgl hr l crscvx vha`d`nv` ;x, u pcbncjxk xncgx  
si nvi di jcvfxn ]uo l i metterxddcjgx ugvw.

2-FED/CJC XSJXKHV EJLCDXK HNHAV-N-G-F JCKRXV EVXGLCSX

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkvw ;x, fed/cj r`g`k[ mc bun 'i [i xgc duo,  
dhgk`b nhb`g`r mc xojxdhn i bi kvck pcdhjh ;e]xn. Pcl vc  
l c/gwl ugvw ;x, Hgghph rhna` 'i khp mc xjhcjsxbgx; l crscvxgc

<sup>1</sup> âHgx-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.159



ughk fed/cj, egc[c vc Hgghph xjhcsxbgx; evck acosc fed/cj  
 ejl c; vi b'i k vedxgvxn. Pcl ]xkxk, |edycl fcnvck suknh  
 hg`khk xg; fed/cj Cfw Fc;nxk oxghtcjx i ]i k ughk fed/cj vxv ;x,  
 ocgxtc Zl cngc fed/cjxk vi b'i kgi di vc pcl xk fed/cjxk  
 vi b'i kgi di kc fhyg` vxv. }i k;x ukwkg evxgck fed/cj ocgxtc  
 Cfw Fc;nxk 'zsjcnxax xgc ugl wavw. Pcl ]xkxk Usl hkgh evxgck  
 fed/cj vc ocgxtc Zl cnxk fed/cjxkxk vi b'i kgi di kc fhyg`v`n.  
 }i k;x fw fed/cj vc ocgxtc Zl cnxk 'zsjcnxax xgc ugl wavw... u  
 bhl hk ;x, Zl cn hgj` kctcngx; awnhk`k jca;xg ugwkl hs`kh vhn  
 'zsjcnxa menvx mc vevx ;x, Cfv i n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtwk ugvwyw  
 jcnctgc fed/cj ugwkl hg`, pcn ;cs vc l i ohgxtcj ejsc, r`g`k[vhk  
 ;e]xnagl cgxvxn.

Pcl ]xkxk l c/gwl ugvw ;x, âFckx-Shxvcß scrxtcsxkvc Cfw  
 Fc;nc bung h ke[c fed/cj hg`kv`, suknh Csgcl rcfxgcsxkxk  
 ;zl cdx xgc fw xa (fed/cj l cnhsxl x) Lcvxkcckxk ;i ]cgcnxkvc  
 vhmhl ejvxæ |edycl fcnxk r`b` Bcpnh <sup>(âlyhu  
salam)</sup>-`k emx ke[c  
 dhkv`n`gv` – ]i k;x fed/cjvck xl jxkh evckgc n unvhv fxn denc  
 d`y`al `av`ghn. Fckx-Phaxl rcfxgcsx vc |edycl fcnxk r`b` shy  
 ugvwyw mhojh rcvcn fed/cj ejl cvxgc n. Sc/v xfkx l fhvc fed/cj  
 ejl cvxdxkc 'znc [xkgc n ukw x;x uogh âmwnwf zgvi nvi gc nß?!

Fw, Lcvxkcvc fed/cj hg`kl hs`kvh dnhkhk acnhxjgc n vxv.  
 Hl l h Lcvxkcvc ohnx[c 'cgvx;vc xsc, Cfw Fc;nc fed/cjvck  
 xl jxkh evcnc; , ukh bc;hj menl c;vck fudwk rh]`nhkghn`k mc-  
 bxddcjx ukghn`k ;xaxgc n xkxk zgvi ni gl csx, rhv`kghn`k`k csxn  
 ugwkl hs` mc l hg-vzmgcjgc n xkxk rhncj ugwkl hs` xgc  
 kc jx[cgckvx.

Fwkh Jcl xl rcfxgcsxkvck ughk L hgx; xfkx Ki mednckx  
 redv ejl c; ughn.<sup>1</sup> U, |edycl fcnx-C;nc l xk xa]xsx vxv mc zb  
 rcfxgcsxkvc bc;hj`k ju`ghkl hs` mcbxtcsxkx zpvcsxkc hgl `av`.  
 Ocgtckxk 'zkvcnvxdx unvw Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvxk fha]`g`y` xgc  
 'e[c x;ck unhdh di ni a ejvx. Ukghn l i vhtxc ugwkl hr i ]i k  
 sxghp 'zj i nvi ;vc, Ohgxvxk unvwswkvh ughkghn vevxgc n... âFxb  
 l i scgl hk`r!ß L hgx; xk vc ;zl c; ]xgc n x âfxb vc l i scgl hk`r!ß –  
 vedc [hmhf menvxgc n. Ohgxvxk unvwsw ukghn vevx... âC`cn vi b  
 vedxnsxkxbsc, ukvh sxghpghn`k`b` denc rudwk!ß Ukghn sxghp` denc

<sup>1</sup> Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âCg-xshfcßvc 3-[i [xgv, scp.336-vh, 7698-[x  
 kzl ncvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

rudvwghn mc Ohgxvxk unvsw xgc fxngx; vc khl hb r'gv'ghn.<sup>1</sup>  
 Gh; xk khl hbvhk suknh ukghn`k phl `s`k` jwjwf Ohgxv xfkx  
 Mgxvxk dhk`kh h\hnv`ghn, u vh `zsjcnxa menvx ; x, L hgx; xk  
 fudkwkw mwnswkghn. L hgx; zb pcdhj dugvha`kh fho`f Ohgxvc  
 vevx... âLckx zgi l c menck fw rhv`k ugvw!ß (Ukwk hnmhv` juo  
 'zbcg xv.) Ohgxv vevx... âOedn, Hgghp sckx, Xsghl vkh ]`ov`y`kh  
 'znc zgvi nvi !ß L hgx; vevx... âLck Xsghl vxkxkvc dcl !ß Ohgxv  
 ukwk szbgcnxkc cpcl xddcj menl cdx f ukw rcjgc dejxnvx, suknh  
 'zsjcnxa menvx ; x, fha`k` vha cmcbx u[hvh rudswkghn. Egc pcl xk  
 'e[c, L hgx; xk [ckhbcx vctk ugwk l hl `a phgvh ukwk pcdhj  
 dugvha` xgc bxkh ejvx.<sup>2</sup>

: xkvc rcfxgcsxkxk mcbxddcjx vc edkxgc fegc xv. Cfw Fc; nxk  
 jcnctxkvck l c/l wn ughk Bxdhv xfkx Gcfv Fcdhbx fw rcfxgc  
 [hmkghn`kvhk fxnxkxk vcmcsxkx 'zji nvi. U [hmk pcl xk  
 vcmckx rhdjhn`f denxkc fharhs`k` 'zji nl cdx jc; gxt ejvx, gh; xk  
 u rcfwg ejl cvx. } i k; x hnj`r ukh scvrc mc men`x cghl cjx  
 mwnl wavwghn. U [hmk : xkvc rcfxgcsxkxk fzdi ; gcnxkvck fxnx  
 ughk Phnxsc xfkx Si nhrcjxk dhk`kh 'evxf vevx... âCl x uvgw!  
 Bxdhv xfkx Gcfv l ckx fxn khrc l x (vcmcl x) hg`f ukh cghl cj  
 mwnl wa mc scvrc ejl xavx. Lck ukw juo semxncl , c'cn  
 l i l ; i ksc, ukwgh szpfcj ej, fcg;c ukw fwnho`f cmcbxkvc  
 fharh fxn vcmc hgs`k.ß Phnxsc Bxdhv`k dhk`kh 'evxf vevx...  
 âC'cn fw [hmk`k khrcsxkx ukh rhdjhn`f cmcbxkvc fharh fxn  
 khrc hgshk, fxbc rhna` epshk ejl xa ughnshk.ß Bxdhv vevx... âUkh  
 hnj`r scvrc kxahk` mwnwgvfvwn!ß Ukghn`k vkh`a`rghn` dhmha-  
 dhmha w[hgl hyh fhaghv`, ho`nv Phnxsc scvrc i kmhk` xgc  
 hg`khk vcmcgcnxk x]xkc 'evcnc; pcl xk vcmckx ukghn`k x]xkvck  
 hd`nv` mc u [hmkh vevx... âKhrckx h\hn. C'cn fxn ; cs sck  
 l hke ugsh, fwnkwkw r`g`k[gh denc si njcncl !ß Suknh vevx... âFxb  
 | edycl fcn vxnx ugvwyw mhoh rcvcl ukh xjhcj ejvx; . Xkvx c'cn  
 ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkvck fxn ; cs ukh [hcxaxk ugsh, xjhcj evcnx; .  
 Hl l h Cfw Ri phtckxk ugwkh (Cfw Fc; nc) 'cgvx; vc xsc,  
 Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, ukwk fxbx l i bcx l xbv xjhcj fhncsxkvc

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1927-1928â âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß,  
 Fednwj ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.131.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Cfxg-txvhß, scp.158â âMctcdhjpg-c/dhkß, egc[c vc âTcmhjpg-  
 tcmcdhß Mscxl ckxk jcn[i l edx-phg. Fharh l ckfcgcnc l inh[xcj ejl c;  
 i ]i k âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`kh fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

pe] fxn fed/cjx duovwn! Suknh fxn ke]c fedj ae/n uowvw ;x,  
ukghn`k fxx fegcvxn...

â/edycl fcn hnhl `bvh shy ughkh rcvcn ukh xjhcj ejvx; .

Fxn ;csxk Cfw Fc;nc xjhcj ejl csx ke[c vc rcnxfcvxn!

: xkvc jhdths`k`k fzdi;gcnxkvck fxx ughk Phnxs xfkx  
L i hmxdc, Bxdhvh vevx...âSck fxbx egc fxn hvhl h xjhcj ejl cdc  
]hy`n`nshk ;x, ukwk kc fxbxl gc, kc vc sxbxkgc cpv`ledl hk`  
duovwn mc vxkvc `zbcg ;e]l xac l hgx; vedxglß

Bxdhv ukh vevx...âVi b vedxnsck, gh;xk fxb zbi l i b ukw fw  
l crhl h se]l xax;ß

Phnxs ukh vevx...âVe `zni l , kc i]i k |edycl fcnxk Cpgx-  
fedjxkx fw xavck wbrghav`nv`k`b? Ho` ukghn [hl hhj x]cnxsxkvc  
fw xac phl `vhk hnj`r ghdxr xvxcn! }i k;x Hgghp-jhhgh  
Rwn/hkvh fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأُولُو الْأَرْحَامِ بَعْضُهُمْ أَوْلَىٰ بِبَعْضٍ فِي كِتَابِ اللَّهِ﴾

âRupwl ghnvhk fc/bxgcnx Hgghp`k : xjhfkvh fc/bxgcnxkc vphh hnj`r  
ghdxrgvxcn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Bxdhv ukh vevx...âLi ph[xn mc ckshn zb l csgcpcjgcnxkx  
sckvck dhoe`fxgxcn!ß

Phnxs vevx...âOedn! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, ukw dhgk`b pcscv  
i bi kvck Cpgx-fedjvck hgl `s`k`b! Xkshk`k rcgfc mc nwpw pe]  
mhoj rcfwg ejl cb ;x, |edycl fcn vi kdhvhk `ejsxk mc  
(zbi kvck suknh) i l l cjxk xjhcj ejl csx i]i k fxn ;csx  
(ncpfcngxdc) jc/dxk ejl cl xa ugswk! Fxbxl dhk`l `bvhk ncvv ugl  
Sck fxbx ouah`cgl cb mc rcfwg evxgcx l i l ;i k ugl hdhk fxn  
xac ]hy`n`nshklß

Suknh fegc fxn ae/n uowvw...

كَانَ الرَّسُولُ هُوَ الْمُطَاعُ فَقَدْ مَضَىٰ صَلَّى عَلَيْهِ اللَّهُ لَمْ يَسْتَخْلَفْ

âDhgk`b Ncswgwgghp xjhcj ugwkhhk xv, u vh vi kdhvhk `ejvx.

Hgghp`k shghl `ukh ugswk, zbi i]i k fxn [hxxaxk jc/dxk  
ejl cvxlß

Bxdhv scvcr i kmhk`xgc hg`khk vcmcgcnx zbi kvck cmmcg  
L cvxkcdc `zkvcnvx, suknh vh zbi L cvxkcdc `cgxf Cfw Fc;nx  
l zm[wv mcbddcjvck ocfcnvhn ejvx. Cfw Fc;n ukh vnzv l xk  
kctcn [ck`hmcn menvx mc Pcbnc-l umjh vuynw dugh shgv`. U,

---

<sup>1</sup> âCpbhfß swncsx, hdc.6

dugw i bcnxkvc : xkvc rcfxgcsxkc rctxgvck pi [wl ejvx,  
; xaxgcnxkx zgvi ni f hnmhv-wahrghn`k` csxn hgv`. Suknh fw rcfx-  
gckxk Fckx-Pxkv ahocsxkc di ni a ejvx mc ukghn`k ; xaxgcnxkxk  
c; scnxddcjxkx zgvi ni f hnmhv-wahrghn`k` csxn jwjvw. Suknh  
Fckx-Hrxg ahocsxkc rctxgvck pi [wl evxf ukghn` l i phsxncdc  
hgv`. Rcfxgckxk rhv`kghn` hp-axmck ru\hnjv`ghn, ; xaxgcnx fxn hb  
l i phnxfc ejvx; vck suknh rh]v`ghn. Bxdhv ukghn`k rhv`kghn`k`  
mc l hg-vzmgcjgcnxkx zb xojxdhn`kh ; e]xnjvx.

Pcl ]xkxk 'e[c rhnhkg`y`kvh Fckx-Pcdd rcfxgcsxkc pi [wl  
ejvx mc ukghn`k ; xaxgcnxkvck x; x di b kctcnxkx rcjgc dejxnvx, cggx  
kctcnxkx csxn jwjvw, rhghkghn` vh rh]v`ghn. U xsc rh]hkghn`k  
hnmhv-wahrghn`k` csxn ejvx.

Suknh Ca/cs xfkx Reds ukwkgh l i phnxfc ejl cdc fhaghv` mc  
Jedl acpcnxkvc ukw l i phsxncdc hgv`, rhv`kghn`, hnmhv-  
wahrghn` mc l hg-vzmgcjgcnx ukwk cgxkvck hg`f shpxfgcnxkc  
rhdjhnv`. Fwkvhk suknh ocgxtc Cfw Fc;n Ca/csc fxn l c; jwf  
dhbhnhr ukwk ; zkgi ki cgc hgv`. Ca/cs l c; jwfw 'c]xnckc fegc  
vevx...âSckxk ncxsxk Cfw Fc;n scxkxgc l i ohgxtcj ejvxdxl c 'znc  
l ckx ; htxn peshf evxn, gh; xk zb vusjwkx mc l ckxl rupwl -  
crncfhl`, uyghkghn`l` zgvi nck acosx ; htxn fxgl xn!ß Cfw Fc; nxk  
eg]xsx ukh fegc vevx...âFcgx, ed Ca/cs! U, scxk ; htxn fxgx, ]i k; x  
l i jchg Hgghp scxk l i scgl hk [hl hj` xgc l i ohgxtcj ejvxdxkc  
'znc ; htxn peshf ejl xavxn!ß Fw bhl hk Ca/csxk cl x  
uyghkghn`kvhk fxnx 'zbgckxgl cvck r`g`k[gh ukwk i sji kc  
[wl wf ukw zgvi nvi. Ca/csxk zbi fw xax jc/nxtgcvx, gh; xk ukwk  
; zl c; ]xgcnxkxk ]uow fw xavck rcbcfgckvxgcn mc ukwk  
c]nht`kvhk vhy`g'av`ghn, kcphdcj ukwk c]nht`kvh dhgk`b x; x  
l xk kctcn rhgv`. Bxdhv Cfw Fc;nc fxn l c; jwf 'zkvcnvx, ukwk  
eg]xsxkxk rcjgc dejxnxgvxdxkx mc Bxdhv`k zbi ki k l i phsxncdc  
vi avi di ki ocfcn menvx. Cfw Fc;n ]`o`a dugw jh\l hr i ]i k  
l i scgl hkghngh l camcncj ejvx. Cfw Cddwf Ckshnx ukh vevx...  
âFw rzml i k shd` ]uovwn, vzdia]i ju`ghl hr rcnln`kh  
'cgscgc, ]uogw hvhl ju`ghdh[hrghn. C'cn unvwkw fw xg  
ukghnvhk 'enx ]hy`nshk, i l xvmnhhl ; x, 'cgck xg bc; hj` zb  
l edgx xgc sckc 'zkvcnc[c; gcn.ß

Cfw Fc;n vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn |edycl fcnxk  
ukghnh mh[xf ejvxdx x\ x (vcmc hdhy`k` fhyghl hr i ]i k xsjxthvc  
ugwkhk x\ x) vc menl cscgc, ukghn` phrrh rhdjnhkh rcvcn

I i phnxfc h\hnh[hyhl .ß

Suknh C;ncl c xfkx Cfw {cpgc ddbv` ;x, ukwk vc/mcjkx rcfwg evck Lc;;c cpgxkvck fxn ke]csx xgc Dcl ckc jcnct 'ejsxk, dug cskhs'kvh rhna'ghav`rghn` cncf rcfxgcgcxkx ;zl cdc ]hy`ns`kghn. U vh x;x l xk kctn Ri neda si mhnxsx, l cmhgx mc ukghn`k pcl `edl hkghn` xgc fxngx;vc pcnc;cj evcnc; Lc/ncfc dugghkv`. Ukwk pcnc;cj ocfcx Vxfh cphgxskc ]hjv`rvh, ukghn rcbcfgckxf vevxgc... âUkwk :xkvx cl x uyghkghn`l`bgh l i phnxfc ejl csxkc l hke ugh[hy`r!ß Suknh Cfw Fc;nk xa]xsxkx zb dengcnxkvck ]`ohnjv`ghn. Cfw Fc;n vc C;ncl cdc ddbv` ;x, ukghnh jcnct pcnc;cj ejsxk, fw fhncvc hbh[`r fegc, scpgck;hng`r 'zsjcnl csxk. Ukghn`k xaxkvck ohjxn[cl ugvyw bhl hk phl `s`k` csxn ;xl x jwjwf l ckxl dhk`l h 'zkvcnsxk. C;ncl c ukghnh jcnct 'evxf l i phnxfc h\hnv` mc ukghn` l i phsxncc shgv`. Ukghn si gp jc;gxtxkx xncgx si nvi gc mc vevxgc ;x, bc;hj` menc[c;gc. C;ncl c dhgk`b fw acnjgc rcfwg ejvx ;x, ukwk pz;l i kc jcsxl ugswkghn. Ukghn vh rcfwg ejvxgc, C;ncl c ukghn`k rhghghn`kh vhoxg ugvw, fzdi ; acosxddcjcgcx mc c/dhk-canht` jcvnx[x swncjvc r`nv`, hnmhv-wahrghn`k` csxn jwjvw, l hg-vzmgcjcgcx rhncj ejvx, denvc rhghkghn`k` vh Cfw Fc;nk dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx.

Cfw Fc;n vc ukghn`k ;xaxgcxkx zgvi nl c;; rhv`k mc wahrghn`k` (cl gh; ;xl x) fzgi avi nl c; xsjcvx. Fw bhl hk Zl cn ukh vevx... âEd Ncswggwghp`k ocgxtcsxl Fw rzml Xsghl vxkxkvcvxn mc fijk mhng`rghn` xgc hkv x]xf vedxngc ;x, Xsghl vkh rhd`jl hl `aghnb.

Cfw Fc;n ukghn` zl ingcnxkxk ho`n`kh rcvcn pcfs ejvx. Zl cn vc zb oxghtc]x vzmni kvk ukghn` hbhv ejvx.

C;ncl c fwkvhk suknh Bxdhv`k ugvyw denc jcnct 'ejvx. Fw ocfc Ca/csc ]hjv`rvh, Kc[xn rhghs`kh s'y`kv`, zbi ki k mc rzml i ki k hnmhvghn`k` unhvh fxn denc ju`ghv`. Fw ocfc Cfw Fc;nk rhsxvxxk zgvi nvi di kc 'znc Ca/csx jcn; evckgcxk rwghy`kh ]hjv`rvh, zb cl x uyghkghn`k` jcn; ejvx;gcxkc 'znc hn pxssx ;e]xnvxgc mc dekxvck Bxdhvgh l i phnxfcdc rhgov`ghn. Bxdhv fw phvxscvck vcpacj 'cgvx, C;ncl c ukh vevx...âLckxl kbcncl fwvwn... Sck fwkghn` l i phsxncc shogh, l ck 'evxf ukghngh vzdi ai l .ß Bxdhv vevx...âSckxk kbcnck dhov`n., C'cn Hgghp sckx ukghnh rhgxf ejsc, phl `s`k` zgvi nl cdxk[c, r`g`k[`k`

r`k`kh rudl hß C;ncl c vevx... âFw fhncvc fh[hnv`y`l rcvcn  
scpgck;hng`r ejl cdc[cdcl ß

C;ncl c 'evxf u rzml c ]hjv`rvh jcnctgc n hns`kvh ]hn`al h  
fhaghkv`. Ca/csxk : xkvc rcfxgcgcnxkx pcnc; cjxkvck, ukghn`k  
wbwk l i vvcj l i phsxncc hg`kl hs`kvhk, axvvcjgx h[g`r mc  
swswbgwrgn`kvhk ocfcnx duo xv. Fwkh 'znc vc pcl zbi mc  
cpgx-cdhg`, pcl vc scphfcgcnxkvck uk kctcn fzd; acosxddcj  
i ]i k hl hkkhl c xsjcvx. Ukwk xsjc; gcnx dnb`gv` mc Bxdhv  
dnh`k` C;ncl cdc 'zkvcnvx. C;ncl c : xkvc rcfxgcgcnxkx fw  
xavck ocfcnvhn evnc; dnb`k` ukghn` 'zsjcnvx. Ukghn` vh  
l i phnxfckx shoghd`f rhd`jv`ghn. Bxdhv rhghdh vhoxg ugvw mc  
unhv;` vzdi a]i gcnx jcvnx[x ughnhr r`g`k[vhk ; e]xnl cdc  
fhaghv`. Kcphdcj, Cfw Fc; nxk l c; jwfw 'cgxf ]hjv`. Unhv  
dnh`gl `av` ; x, jcsxgl ughkghn` L cvxkcdc 'zkvcnsxk. U vh  
cphgxkx shy rhghkghn`k` bck[xngcdcnc; L cvxkcdc 'zkvcnvx.<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cjx suk w fegc rwnjhv`. Egc fxn fed/cj  
; x, ocgxtc Zl cn ukw âjcgcs; ckgx; phg`kvh fha menck fxn  
sh`l hß ; xl x mcst evxnvx. Cfw Fc; n, Zl cn mc Usl hk`k  
oxghtcjx pcl xk cshsvh xv mc xkvx vc ukh xsjxkhv evxngcn.

3-Scphfcgcnxk cl cgkc xsjxkhv ejl cdix hnhav`nig`f jckrxv evxgl csx

Scphfcgcnxk cl cgkc xsjxkhv ejl c; u bhl hk scpxp shd`gh  
fxgc ; x, ukghn`k sxncsx, cl cg mc nctjhn` Hgghp`k : xjh`f mc  
|edycl fcn si kkcscx xgc edkx scmddcvc ugswk, Xsgl acnxcjxkx  
fxn l ckfcscx peshf ugwkswk mc |edycl fcnxk fhncsxkvc khbxg  
ughk aedgc ukghn`k vh fhncsxkvc 'cgxf ]hjl `a ugswk.  
Hahy`vh;` x; x hdcvc; x ; xl x...

﴿لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةٌ حَسَنَةٌ﴾

âPcrxrcjck, sxbk i ]ik Hgghp`k Ncswgwkvh 'zbcg kil wkcgcn mhnv`n.<sup>2</sup>

﴿وَمَا آتَاكُمُ الرَّسُولُ فَخُذُوهُ وَمَا نَهَاكُمْ عَنْهُ فَانْتَهُوا﴾

âHgghp`k Ncswgwkwk sxbk i ]ik 'cjinvidx aedgcx cob evxk, sxbk ]c; xkvxnvix

<sup>1</sup> Fxb fw phvxscx Fcghbunxkx âTi jwpwg-fi gvkhß ; xjh`f`k`k âNcvvcjw  
Fckx Mcgxc mc Ca/cs xfkx Redß fzgl csxkvck xojxshngh kcrg ejvx; , scp.122-  
123â âL c[l ci g-fi gvkhß (Dhrwj Pcl cmx), âOcbnc l umjß l hvvcxâ âTi jwpw  
xfkx C/scl ß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.57-85-vc redv ejl xavx; . Fw ncmhdcjx âCfvi ggghp  
xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`f`k`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc jctsxghj` xgc redv ejl xax; .

<sup>2</sup> âCpbhfß swncsx, hdc.21

aedgcnvck ]c; xkxk.<sup>1</sup>

C'cn fwkghn ugl hbsh, scphfckxk cl cgx fxbxl i ]i k pe] fxn pz[[cjx xsfhj evc fxgl cb. Fwkvhk cghmc, scphfcgcnxk phks'kh xrjxvh evc[cdxl xbx vc fxgl xnx; . }i k; x fc/bx scphfcgcnxk cl cg mc nctjhngn' vx'cngcnx xgc jhl hl xgc l i ohgxtvx. Fwkh 'znc vc hgxg gcn oxghtcjxk ke[c jca; xg ugwkl hs' fhncsxkvc xojxghth vi ]hn ugl waghn mc ukghn'k hnhs'kvh fegc fxn swhg dhnhk'f ; x, 'zncsck oxghtcj fxn kctcnxk fed/cj ejl csx xgc jca; xg ugwkwnl w? Fegc ; x, |edycl fcnxk cl xsx Hffhs Cgxdc vel xavx ; x, âcgxkx l ckc men, sckxkgc fed/cj evxl , fwkww hnv'k[h [hl hjj sckc fed/cj ejsxk.â Dhowv, ocgxtc Zl cnxk szbi xgc vesc; âCfw Fc;ngc evxgck fed/cj jcgcs; ckgx; phg'kvh ughk fxn sh\l h xv.â Duosh L i hmxdcdc xrjxvh ejl cgxdx; , phgfw; x u, acn/x ocgxtc ughk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -'k cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl xavxn?!

Fw l cscgckx fwkvhk hnj`r hnhav`n`f jckrxv ejl cdc gi bwl 'znl i ni ; . Hl l h fc/bxgcnxkxk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -'k âKcp[i g-fcgchycßvc redv ejvxdxkc xsjxkhv ejl cgcnxkc 'cgxk[c xsc...

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -'k âKcp[i g-fcgchycßvc; x szbi kc xsjxkhv evckgcnxk szbgcnxkxk hnhav`n`gl hs'

Fc/bxgcnx zbgcnxkxk awnh, fed/cj mc scphfckxk cl cgxkc xrjxvh ejl c; fhncsxkvc; x kcbcnxddcgcnxkx vuynwgjl hr i ]i k Seddxv Acnxt Ncbxkxk âKcp[i g-fcgchycßvc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk kcrjg ejvxdx fxn pcvxc xsjxkhv evxn mc ukw vcgxx 'cjxnxngcn. U pcbncj fegc fwdwnl wavwn... âU acosgn l ckc fed/cj ejvxcgn ; x, egc Cfw Fc; n mc Usl hkgh vh fed/cj ejl xavxcnæ ukghng phks' rcnhngn fed/cj ejl xavxcnsc, (l ckl gc vc pcl xk rcnhn cshs'kvh fed/cj ejl xavxcn). Fegc xsc, 'cnc; ahpxvixk se]l c phrr', rhxfgcxk l cbcl l cj ejl c phrr' ugl hs'k. Fwkvhk rednx vedxgvxn ; x, awnh l i ph[xngcnxk mc ckshn'kv'n. C'cn ukghn fxn kctcn fhncvc xjjxthr ejscgn mc ukw xl hl hvghkv'nshghn, fw xa fcdckxgck mc nhb'g'r ughkv'n. C'cn fxn acos edf hojhnl hrgh, dhowv fix/cj]xgx;gc ukghn'k [cn'csxkvck ]'ohnsh, ukw dekvxck, ohnx[ ugvywv aedc rhdjhnghghn. C'cn xl jxkh evcnsc, l z/l xkgcnxk dugwkvkh fharhs'kh jhfe ugvywvkh 'znc, ukwkg h l i phnxfc evcnsc, Hgghp-jhgh ukw zb se]vxdxkc...<sup>2</sup>

Ukghn vedxngcn... âXl hl fw l c; jwfvh fed/cj, awnh mc l i ph[xngc ckshn'k x[l hs'k` cshs jwjhnhr L i hmxdcdc vcgxx

---

<sup>1</sup> âPcanß swncsx, hdc.7

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycß mc ukwk acnpgcnx, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -'k 6-[` l c; jwfw.

'cjxn. Fwkh cshsck, Xl hl redv ejvxdx aedgcnxk cshs'kvh  
xl hl cjxk jca; xg ugwkl hs'k' scpxp fxgx.ß

{hmhf fwvwn ;x, Seddxv Ncbx fc/bck Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> -'k  
l c;jwfwkwk fcghycjxk suk pcvvxkvc ughk fxn pxsscsxkx redv  
evxn, hl l h ukwk vx'cn pxsscgcnxkx redv ejl xn. U, pcl xk  
i sgwfvhk fw l c;jwfvh vh xsjxthvc ejl xavxn. Fw l c;jwfwk  
phl 's'k' Kcsn xfkx L i bhpkl zbi ki k äSxttedkß hvg' ;xjh'kvh  
kcrq ejl xavxn. Ukwk phl 's'k' fwnhvh redv evxn; ...

Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpl .

HI l h fc/v... Lckxl gc Lcvxkvc fed/cj evxgl csx Ahl vh ugvywk phgvh, sckx  
vc fwkh (l ckc jhfe ugl hyh) xjxbhl g' evxn. }ik;x l ckxl gc fed/cj evckgcnc egc  
Cfw Fc;n, Zl cn mc Usl hkgv vh fed/cj ejl xavxcn. Pcl xk rcnhgh ;x, ukghn  
fed/cj ejl xavxcn. Fegc xsc, ahpxvk se]l c phrr' mc rhxfk l ccl l c' ejl c phrr'  
duovwn. }ik;x dhg'k'b fegcvn ;x, awnh — l iph[xn mc cksn'k phrr'v'n. C'cn  
ukghn fxn kctcnc xjxthr ejscgcnc mc ukw xl hl hvghkv'nshghn, fw, Hgghp'k fcdckvdx  
fxn xavxn. C'cn fxn ;cs edf hojhn l hgh, dhowv ib ]emxnl c;gc ukghn'k  
[cn'csxkvc ]'osh, ukw ]'ov'y' aedc dekxvc rhdjnhghn. C'cn xl jxkh evcnc,  
l z/l xkgcnxk dugwkvk fharhs'kh jhfe ugvywk 'znc ukwgh l iphxfc h\hnhghn.  
Hgghp ukw, zbiki se]vxdx aedc rumwvwnh mc u, [cpckkcl cpgx ughn, unh ke[c  
vc \xs denvn! Pcrxrcjck, Jcgc mc Bifedn (cmmcg[c] l ckxl gc fed/cj ejvxcn,  
suknh fw fed/cj \ubvghn. Ukghn'k fed/cj \ubl hgh' egc l ckc rhna' ]'ol hgh'v'n.  
Lck vc ukwk cshs'kvh egc ukghn vzdia h\hnl, kcpdcj phrr mc Hgghp'k  
cl nx bhpvn ugvw, phgfw;x ukghn'k fw xavck ouaw 'cgl xnv. Fegc xsc, sck vc  
l iscg l hkgghn'k mhnv ugvyw aedgcnc mhnv ug. }ik;x l ckxl dhk'l vh xagcnxk ck  
semxl gxs sckxk fhckvc shygl g'r mc rwnjgwavwn. HI l h c'cn zbiki fcghn  
rhna's'kvh rudshk... c'cn fegc ejscck sckxgc l iphxfc h\hnh[hr mc Hgghpvk sck  
rhna' ;zl c; xsjcdc[ccl]. Sck Usl hk'k rhjggcnx fhcsxkvc wbwk-wbhv' szpfcjcn  
ejl xsck, fegc xsc (c'cn vib vedxscck, cmmcg[c] l iscg l hkgghn'k mhnv ugvrghn'  
aedc mhnv ug, suknh ukghn'k ax;hdcjxk l ckxl dhk'l h 'cjxn ;x, sckx mc ukghn'  
Hgghp'k : xjhfk'k pz;like mhvn evcl. HI l h sckxk xbgcvdxk l cscgc  
'cgvx;vc xsc, fw, wahy'k siv menxgl c;gc hgvhv'gl hs'kh uahd'n! Zb [hk'l h hkv  
ugswk, c'cn pcmh-pcmcs 'zbi xgc vedx, crg 'zbi xgc kbcn ejscck, Usl hk'k rhk'  
fhcvc l ckxl Rinedaxk ck \h; hvhl' ugvywl w figcnsck. Fxg ;x, sck  
âjigcrhßvhkshk mc hbhv evxgl xagcnvcksk.<sup>1</sup> U ;csgcnvcksk ;x, oxhtcj ukghn ncmh

<sup>1</sup> âJigcrhß âjcgxrß szbi ki k [cl tunl hs'v'n, dc/kx csngx;vck hbhv  
ugwkhnhz zb phg'kh fwnho'ghkghn. Lcrscv u ;csgcnvxn ;x, ]edycl fcnc-



vedxgvxn mc awnh ukghn`k phg`kh ahl xg ugl hb. Xkvx {cnxn xfkx Cfvigghp` – l z/l xkgcn mc l i ph[xngcnvck ughk fw acosx sckc mc sckxk cjhnt`kvh;`ghnh jcnct 'zkvcnxcnl . Fegc xsc, fed/cj ej! Hgghp`k rimmcxkvck fharh pe] fxn pzm-g-rimmc duovwn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fw l c; jwfvhk hdv`k ugwn ;x, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> egc fxn aedc xsjxkhv evxn ;x, L i hmxdc mc ukwk ;xl xgcnx ukw rcfwg ejl xavxgc n mc (ukh cl cg ejl cdc) xgjxbhl g` xvxcn. Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> ukh vedxn... âLckxl gc Lcvkcvc fed/cj evxgl csx Ahl vh ugvywvk fxn phgvh, sckx vc (l ckc jhfe ugl hyh) xgjxbhl g` evxn. Ke[c ;x, ukvhk cmmcg vc Ahl vh ugvywvk mhoghn Usl hk`k fed/cjxkc xgjxbhl g` xvxc. Pcl ]xkxk, l ckl gc evxgck fed/cj Lcvkcvck ohnx[vc ughk sckxk ;xl xgcnx vc ukh xgjxbhl g` evxn. Ke[c ;x, Zl cngc Lcvkcvc evxgck fed/cj fharh dengcnvc dhahdhkghn` vh fwkh xgjxbhl g` ejl xavx.B

Fegcgx;gc vc, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> L i hmxdcx vc fwkh xgjxbhl g` evxn (u vzmncv L i hmxdc mc ukwk ;xl xgc n oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc ukh xgjxbhl g` ugvywv ;xl x). Fw vh crg shpxfgcnx jcnctxkvck rcfwg ugwkxhk fxn xavxn, ]i k; x l i ohgt acosgcngc, ukghn`k rcfwg evxf xgjxbhl g` ugvwrgn` aedgc epjx[h[ evxngcn (vcgx-si fwj 'c jxnxcn).

X; xk[ xsx... U pcbncj fwdwnwn ;x, âc`cn ukghn (l i ph[xn mc ckshn) fxn kctcnxk fhncsxkv c xjxthr h 'cgscgc n mc ukw xl hl hvghkv`nshghn, fw vh Hgghp`k nhb`g`y` mc fcdckvxdxvn.B Fw [i l gc fc/bx ki socgcncv fegc redv ugwkwn... âFw, nhb`g`r mc fcdckxgck fxn xavxn.B<sup>2</sup> Dc/kx ukghn`k – l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k nhb`g`rvh ugvywv aedvxn. }i k; x ukghn`k zb xojxdhn` mc se]l csx xgc ugl wa, r`g`k[gh, bun `i [i xgc fw xac l c[fwn evxgl cl xagcn. Pcjjh c`cn xl hl `k âfw, Hgghp`k fcdckvxdx mc nhb` ugvywv aedvxnB – vevxdxkx tcnb ejsc; fegc, [hmhfvh vedxnx; ;x, âFcgx! C`cn fw, f i j i k l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k – pe] fxnx xsjxskh ugl hvhk – nhb`g`y` shd`ghnsh, fw phgvh Xl hl Cgx, |edycl fcxk x; x kcmcsx Pcscck mc Pi sedk vc ukghn`k s`nhs`kvh ugvywkvvhk fw x[l h mc xjxthr Hgghp`k nhb` ugvywv aedgcncvck ugh[hrv`n.B

---

C; ncl i L c; ;ckxk tcjpx bhl hk` ukghn` zb phg`kh fuaghl `a mc csxn jwjl hl `av`n.

<sup>1</sup> âSxttedkß (Kcsn xfkx L i bhp xl ), scp.29, Rhpxnc ]h\`, 1382.

<sup>2</sup> Fho... âKcp[i g-fcg hycß, L xsnxk âXsjxrhl cjb ]h\`. Fwnhvh âgctbx [cghgcß – dc/kx Hgghp ;cgl csx l z/jcnxbvc dhb`gl `av`n. Fw vh ukwk fc/bx ki socgcncv ugl hv`y`k` 'zsjcnxn.

L ck fxgl xncI , ke[c ugwn ;x, ukghn XI hl Cgx ™ -`k  
 åKcp[i g-fcghycßvc; x fw szbi kc xsjxkhv evxngcn, hl I h Acnxt  
 Seddxv Ncbxkxk pcl xk åKcp[i g-fcghycßvc ncmhdcj ejvxdx  
 fharh szbi ki kbcnc hgl `n, ukw wkwwvngn?! Fegc ;x, Seddxv  
 Ncbx åKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk åPx; cl ß fhf`kvh fegc redv ejI xavxn...  
 å|edycl fcnxk mcthj`kvhk suknh Scrxtc ocfngcnxkx pcbncj  
 Cgxdc ]hjv`nv`ghn, u pcbncj fwdwnvw...åCkshn kc vevx?ß åVevxgc  
 ;x, fxn cl xn fxbvck ugswk, fxn cl xn vc sxbvckß - vedc, [hmhf  
 menvxgc. XI hl fwdwnvw...åKc i ]i k ukghnh åHgghp`k |edycl -  
 fcnx mcsxddcj ejI xavxn ;x, ukghn`k dhov` hvhl ghn`kh epshk  
 ugwkswk, \xs hvhl ghn`kvhk 'i bcj c 'evxgsxkß - vedc vcgxg  
 'cjxnl cvxkxb?ß Vevxgc...åFw szbvc ukghnh rhna` ke[c fxn pz[[cj  
 ugh fxgc?ß XI hl fwdwnvw... åC'cn cl xngx; ukghnh I cosws  
 ugshdv`, ukghn`k fhncsxkvc pe] fxn mcsxddcj ejI cbvx!ß Suknh  
 fwdwnvw... åFcs Ri neda kc vevx?ß {hmhf menvxgc... åUkghn  
 zbgcnxkxk |edycl fcn ac[cncsxkvck ugl hghn`k` vcgxg 'cjxnvxgc.ß  
 Cgx ™ fwdwnvw...

اِحْتَبُوا بِالشَّجَرَةِ وَاَصْأَعُوا الثَّمَرَةَ

å|edycl fcn ac[cncsxkc xsjxkhv evxf ukwk I edmcxkx bhd ejvxcn!ß  
 U pcbncj zbi ki k fharh fxn ;cghl `kvh fegc fwdwnwn...  
 åRcnxfvcxn! "zncsck, oxghtcj I i shpxfcj mc pcl vcl gx; gc ugh  
 fxgc, hl I h I i shpxfcj mc rupwl gwrgh ugh fxgl cb?!ß¹  
 Acnxt Ncbx dnb`n... Pcbncj Cgx fw I c/kvh ughk fxn ae/nx  
 uowvw...

فَإِنْ كُنْتَ بِالشُّورَى مَلَكَتْ أُمُورَهُمْ .

فَكَيْفَ بِهِذَا وَالْمُشِيرُونَ غُيْبُ .

وَإِنْ كُنْتَ بِالْقُرْبَى حَجَجْتَ خَصِيمَهُمْ .

فَغَيْرُكَ أَوْلَى بِالنَّبِيِّ وَأَقْرَبُ

åC'cn xagcnx awnh dugw xgc cgc hgl `shksh,  
 Fw ke[c awnhv`n ;x, I i ahmxngcnx xajxnh; ejI xn?!  
 C'cn dho`kg`r dugw xgc I i ohgxtc vcgxg 'cjxnxnscksc,  
 Sckvck fharhghn` |edycl fcnc vhph dho`kv`n.ß  
 U pcbncjxk fw fhncvc; x ck 'ekxa fcdhk` åAxxrxddcß  
 oi jfcsxkvc redv ejvxdxvn...

¹ åKcp[i g-fcghycß, 185-[x px; I cj.

أَمَّا وَاللَّهِ لَقَدْ تَقَمَّصَهَا ابْنُ أَبِي قُحَافَةَ وَإِنَّهُ لَيَعْلَمُ أَنَّ مَحَلِّي مِنْهَا مَحَلُّ الْقُطْبِ مِنَ الرَّحَى  
يَنْحَدِرُ عَنِّي السَّيْلُ وَلَا يَرْقَى إِلَيَّ الطَّيْرُ فَسَدَلْتُ ذُوئَهَا ثَوْبًا وَطَوَيْتُ عَنْهَا كَشْحًا وَطَفَقْتُ أَرْتِي بَيْنَ  
أَنَّ أَصُولَ بَيْدٍ جَذَاءٍ أَوْ أَصْبَرَ عَلَى طَخِيَةِ عَمِيَاءٍ يَهْرُمُ فِيهَا الْكَبِيرُ وَيَشْيِبُ فِيهَا الصَّغِيرُ...

âH'hp ugwk! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, Cfw Riphtckxk uygw (Cfw Fc;n) oxhtcjx  
zb \hgjhn` rcnhn menvx, phgfw;x l ckxl ukvh;` l crhl`l vcdxnl hk vha'k'k uow  
;xl vxvn. Lchnxt l ckvck (l ckxl mi [vvwl vkh) seg ;xl x rhdkhd'n, pe] fixn rwa  
l ckxl di;sc;gdxl c ]hj h fxgl cb. Fegc xsc, ukwk \hgjhn`k` fwnho'f dhk'kvkh  
hdn'gv l mc zb-zbil c tx;xngcavxl ;x, ('zncsck phrr'l` hgl hr i]ik) cgx fua  
phgvh rxdhl evxl, duosh rhnhkg'r bigl cjgcnc scfxn evxl ?! Egc fixn bigl cj ;x,  
unjh dhagjghn` ru[hgvhn, ru[hghn` cgvck shghn, l z/l xk Hgghpgh 'zniackc rcvcn  
ukvh (bigl cjvc) cbhf-cbxddcjgc rhghn. "znvil ;x, ukh scfxn ejl c; vphph  
crgcwdywkvwn. Ukh 'znc vc egc fixn phgvh scfxn ejvxl ;x, shk;x 'zbil vc jx;hk,  
fuyhb'l vh sil i; rhgl 'av. Lxhsl` rhncj ejvxgc. Kcphdcj, fixnxk[xx (Cfw  
Fc;n) zb dugwkh 'ejvx mc ukw (oxhtcjx) zbikvck suknh txghk;csxk hywawkh  
hjbv...ß

Xl hl Cgx™ suknh C/ahk`k ae/nxkx uowdhnhr vedxn...

شَتَانُ مَا يَوْمِي عَلَى كُورَهَا وَيَوْمَ حَيَّانِ أَخِي جَابِرٍ

âFw 'ik ;x, l ck vcnc \hghk`k'k isjike l xkl xacl ,

{hfixnxk rhnvha` Pcdhkh`k vzmnhk` xgc kc rcvcn thsxcgl mhn!ß

}uo rcnxfcvxn! Zb shyg'ykvh fed/cjxk \ubwgwf rimmcvck shjkl hs`k` xsjcvdx  
phgvh,<sup>1</sup> zbikvck suknh fwkw (oxhtcjx) fharhs`k`k hvkh ;e]nxn. }ik;x fwkgghn`k  
phl `s` peshf-;xjhf ibikvck vx mc ukw shyl hy`k kzmfcjx ]hjl 'av! Suknh ukw  
(oxhtcjx) ;cgc-;zjin, vib ugl hdhk denvc rcnhn menvx. U egc ;csvxn ;x, ukwkgh fixn  
denvc ujwnl hr vcnc-fcgh 'cjxcnc, ukwkgh dhkha` ujwnl hr hvhl `k [hk`k` ibcn.  
Scpmgcnx mc ibngcnx vc pcvrvkvck hnjr vx. Ukwkgh pcl vcl ugl hr x`c-sh`h  
dhjl hdhk vcncdc l xkl c; ;xl vxvn ;x, c'cn [xgumwkw ]c;sck, zb fwnkwkw ['n'f-  
`hn]hghdhn, c'cn ukw fwnhoshk, sckx pcgh;cjc ]hjv'nhn. Hgghph hkv ugswk, (ukwk  
vzmnikvc) [hl hhj scpm ibikvck nck'vck-nck'c viacnc;, hby'kjy vi]hn  
ugvwghn. Lck fw l ivvcj cnbxkvc mc fw l zpkcjgcnc vzbvidil vzmncv scfxn  
ejvxl. Kcphdcj u vh zb dugwkh rumwavw mc ukw (oxhtcjx) egc hvhl ghn`k  
zpvcsxk rudvw ;x, l ckx vc ukghnvkh fixn peshf ejvxl Fw awnhvhk Hgghph \ckhp  
h`hn'nhl ! Kc mhoj l ckxl fixnxk[xx xgc l irhdxscvc;x l crhl`l vh ac;; ugl wavwn

<sup>1</sup> Ncmhdcj ejl xagcn ;x, Cfw Fc;n fed/cjvck suknh vedxnvx... âCrxgwkw,  
tcgcsjw fxocdnx;wl - l ckvck cg ]c;xk, ]i k;x l ck sxbxk ck dhwa`k`b  
vedxgc l !ß

;x; ;xaxdc uoahngngh fñ scmxddcvc rcnñ jh\hl ?! Fwkwkgh fegc, l ck ukghn'k  
 ujwnl hrghn' xgc ujwnvwl , w]l hrghn' xgc w]vwl . Kcphdcj ukghnvhk fñx (Sc/v  
 Mcrrhs)<sup>1</sup> ;xk-;i vñcjxkc 'znc phrvhk vzkvi, vx'cnx vc ;inc;ckgx; phrr'k

<sup>1</sup> Lxsnxgx hgx l Aedo Lcpcl l cv Cfvi p fw oi jfckxk acnpkxvc dñb'n...  
 āSc/v, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtwk cl x uyghkghn'kvhk vxv mc pcñ x; xsx vc  
 Fckx Bzpcñ ahocsxkvck shd'g'nv'. Sc/v zb rcgfkxvc Cgxdc (;cncl cgghpw  
 mc[pcp] rhna' ;xk-;i vñcj fcsgcdxnvx, jik;x ukwk hkhs' Pcl kc, Cfw  
 Si tdhk xfkx l l cddc xfkx Cfvi a-Acl sxk r'b' vxv. Fw rcfxgckxk (;htxñ mc  
 l i anx;) fzdi ;gcñxkxk Cgxkxk mhsxjcsxgc rcjgc dejxnxgl csx l capwn fñ xavñ.  
 Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vh Usl hk'k ; i nc;ckx vxv. } i k;x u, Usl hk'k hkh jcnctvck  
 fñ ughk fh[s' l l l i " i gsil i k (Crcfc xfkx L wedjxk r'b'v'n) pcdhj  
 dugvha'v'n. Jcgpñ vc Usl hkgh l hgx; ugvyw rupwl gwyh 'znc ukh jcnct  
 l edg ejvx. Cgxvck ukh 'znc i b jemxñl xavx ; x u, Fckx-Jcl xl rcfxgcsxkvck  
 vxv, Fckx-Phaxl gc Fckx-Jcl xl hnhs'kvh vh Cfw Fc;nxk oxghtcjxkc 'znc  
 khñhb'g'rgñ cl cgc 'cgl xavx. Ukghñ Zl cñ xfkx Ocjjhf'k mcthj'kvhk suknh  
 fñ denc d'y'a'f l i ahmxcñ ejvxgcñ, Jcgpñ Usl hkh ruawgvw, Bi fedñ Cgxdc  
 dño'kghav', Sc/v vc Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh l edg ejvx. Zl cñ 'zsjcñxa menl xavx ; x,  
 awñhk'k l camcñj l i vvcjx i ] 'i kvck hñj'r ugl hs'k, fwkh 'znc vc  
 vñvñ k[i 'i k 'cgxf ]hj l hl 'a cl xñ jc/dxk ugwl hg' vxv. Pcl vc  
 vedxgl xavx ; x, c'cñ xojxght ugsh, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk'k xajxñh; ejvxdx jcnct  
 phrv'n. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk Cgxdc vevx... āXghpx cpv-vedl hk' zpvckc hg, fw  
 acñjgc ; x, Hgghp'k : xjh'f, jedycl fcñxk si kkcsx mc x; x ocgxtckxk sxñcsx  
 (cl cg mc vñmñhk'a') cshs'kvh cl cg evcsck.β Cgx vevx... āl l xvmññhl ; x, zb  
 egl xl mc fh[hñ'y'l l xrvññh cl cg evcl .β Sukñh Usl hk' vh jhy'n'f  
 pcl xk szbgcñx ukh vevx. U vh l i sfcj [hmhf menvx. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fha'k'  
 l cs[xvxk jhmhk'kh jcnct rhgv'n'f vevx... ā|cnmcñvx'hñh, eaj mc ahpxv ugl  
 |cnmcñvx'hñh, l ck zpvcl vc ughk' Usl hk'k zpvcsxkc rudvwl .β Sukñh  
 cgxkx Usl hkh menxf vevx... āShghl ugswk scck, ed l z/l xkgcñxk cl xñx!β  
 Fwkwkgh vh ukh fed/cj ejvx. Vel xagcñ ; x, Cgx™ rcbcfgx phgvh jzgc ]'ov'.  
 L xrvhv xfkx Csmcv Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh vevx... āHgghph hkv ugswk, Cgxkx egc fñ  
 phgvh jc; rudvwk ; x, u dhgk'b phrr cshs'kvh l i ph;xl c di ni vck, cvhgçj  
 i bñc pz;l evckgcñvckvxñ.β U vevx... āLxrvhv! Lck l i scgl hkghñ i ] i k  
 fh[hñ'y'l rcvñ ]hg'av'l .β Lxrvhv vevx... āHgghph hkv ugswk, l ck  
 Ri nedaxk xaxkvck jcc[[i fgckxñcl ...egc fñ ; xaxkx ; ckññvh rudvñghñ ; x, egl  
 mc l i ph;xl cvc pe] ; cs ukwk l xsgx vedxgvx!β Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vevx...  
 āLxrvhv! Lck scck rhna' txjkc ru'h[h'y'kvhk runownhl . Hgghpvñk runo!β  
 Ncmhdcj ugwl wavñ ; x, Usl hk oxghtcjx vñmñ kvc zb rupwl -crñcfhghn'k'  
 acpcñgcñ ph;xl jc/dxk ejvxdx bñl hk ouah'cgl cb phvxscgcñ fha menvx,  
 scphfc fzdi ;gcñx ukh rcbcfgckvx. Fw bñl hk Lxrvhv Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh  
 vevx... āFw scck cl cdxkxk kcjx[csxvxñ!β U xsc vevx... āLck ukwk fhñcsxkvck  
 fegc aedgcñ tx; xngcac fxgl cbvxl ! Gh;xk xkvx Hgghp' zbi l c ahpxv jwjvñhl  
 ; x, pe] mhoj ukwkgh vñk'al hñh[hyl !β Fwkvhk suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk  
 Usl hkvñk fñvctcgx; hññ'gv' mc pcl xk phgvh vh mcthj ejvx. Pcjjh

shoghv', kcpdcdj vx'cn vedxgcsx ugl hdhk xagcn fha menvx. Kcpdcdj i]ik[isi (Usl hk) rhnk'k' mc fzdngcnxkx l cfvcvck l conc[c rcvcn axaxnj l xa phgvh, oxghtcjc ;e]vx, zb rupwl -crncfhghn' vh ukwkh (hdhyh) rhgov'ghn, Hgghp'k l hg'k', fhphn tcsxkvc dha'g uj dedck h[ vcmcgcn ;xl x wvl hyh fhaghv'ghn. Kcpdcdj ukwk rwnvwyw xagcn vhy'gv', cl cgv ukw shns'jv'. Rhn'krwgwgyw ukw l cpm ejvx.

Pe] fix aed l cck runowdh shgf jcc[[ifgckvxn l cvxæ dhgk'b fix bhl hk 'znv l ;x, [hl hhj vcsjc-vcsjc ;htjhn'k fudkwkwk ji ;gcnx ;xl x, pcn jcnctvck l ckc jcnct pi[w l 'c]xnvxgcn. Hb rhgv ;x, Pcsckgc Pisedk ukghn'k hdnrhghn' hg'jkh cbxgsk, fcvcckl xk x;x jcnctkcc hy'ng'r 'cgvx (dhowv, cfhl [n'gv'), suknh hnhl ghal 'a rudwkghn ;xl x l cckl c]nht'l vh phgrh rwnvwghn. Fw xax denxkc dejnl cdc pxl l c] ejvxdxl bhl hk fix rnw\ cpv-\edl hk' \ubvw, fix vcsjc oinw[ (rxdl) ejvx, fix vcsjc vc bigl dugkw se]vxgcn. Shk;x Hgghp'k fegc fcdwnvwywkw eajl cl xavxgcn...

﴿تِلْكَ الدَّارُ الْآخِرَةُ نَجْعُهَا لِلَّذِينَ لَا يُرِيدُونَ غُلُوًّا فِي الْأَرْضِ وَلَا فَسَادًا وَالْعَاقِبَةُ لِلْمُتَّقِينَ﴾

âFw homcj vikdhs'v'n ;x, ukw den ibikvc teshv jzncj l c; , isjiki ; jcgcf ej l c; xsjcl cdckgcn i]ik rcnbn mencn; , 'zbcg hrxfcj jcrmhg'ghn l coswsvvn.ß<sup>1</sup> Cgfcjic ;x! Hgghp'k hkv ugswk, ukw eajl xa mc cbfcngcl xavxgcn, gh;xk vikdh ukghn'k 'zbcnkvck b]ckjckl xa, ukwk fcnc-fcbc;gcxkc hg'vhl 'av'ghn.

H'hp ugwk! Vckckx dnhk mc xkshk nwp menck Hgghp'k hkv ugswk! C'cn u [hl hhj phb'n ugl hshdv' mc ukghn'k pi bwn mc ;zl c;gcxkc 'znc pz[[c] l ckc jhl hl ghkl hshdv'æ pcl ]xkxk, Hgghp'k hgl gcxkc zpvcskcc âbhj l 'k juo ugl hs'kh, l cbgwl wk h[g'y'kh vzbl cdikß vedc fix mcbxtc rudl hshdv', aifpcsx, ukwk (oxghtcjk) [xgumwkw ukwk zb fudkwkh hjhn, ukwk ho'n'k' cmcgvkxk [hl 'xgc snrhf evcnvl . Sxb vc dhoa' fhah vial isiki b ;x, sxbk fw vikdhk'b l cckl kcbcnl vc vxax ;e]xkxk fwnkwkvk 'cgck sw rcvcn vcdcnxbvxn!ß<sup>2</sup>

Vel xagcn... Xl hl 'k szbi fwnh ]hjkhv Xnhr'k khpxdcgcnxkvck 'cgl xa fix ;xax hdhyh rhgo'f dnb'g' fix mcnrcx u pbcncjc menvx. Xl hl ukw uowl hyh fhaghv'. Xfkx Hffhs ukh vevx... âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! : ha szbi ki ;csvdxk denvck vhmhl ejvxncdvxk!ß Fwdwnvw... âPedphj, ed Xfkx Hffhs! Fw fix axraxddc vxv ;x, ]zgc 'cgvx mc suknh denxkc ]c; xgvx.ß

---

vedxgl xavxn ;x, u ocsjcgckck bhl hk Usl hk ukw dugwol hyh 'cgvx;vc, i bi ki vxmnh ]emxnvx mc vkh'al hv'. Hgghp'k vph dhoa' fxgn!

<sup>1</sup> âRcsesß swncsx, hdc.83

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycbkxk âAxxraxddcß oijfcsxgc l capwn ughk i ]i k[i oijfcsxvxn. âAxxrarcß hy [xdcnc fckbcn fix aedvxn ;x, vcnc pcde[hkh 'cgvx;vc, ukwk hyb'kvk ]'o'n mc ukw ]zgc menckvc kc/nc ]c; xn.

Xfkx Hffhs vedxn...âHghph hkv ugswk, pe] fxn szb fhncsxkvc  
fw rcvcn rcl -ri sscgx ugl hl `av`l , ]i k; x Cl xncg-l z/l xkxkx  
xsjcvxdxkx vel cdc mhoj ]hjl hv`lß

Li cggxt vedxn... Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` fw szbgcnx  
wkwjl wa, dhowv `znl cl cbgxdc mwnl wa, dhgk`b Li hmxdc mc  
ukwk jcnctvnhghn`k`k xgjxbhl g` ugvyw mc ukwkgh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h  
rhna` vcgxg `c jxnvx; gcnx aedc xsjxkhv ejl xagcn.

4-ÅOXGHTCJ BUNH: -G-RGH FCNRCNHN UGWKWNß – SZBI KC  
XSJXVGHG EVCKGCNXX SZBI KI K JCKRXV EVXGLCSX

Pcn ;cs Xsghl jhnnoxkc kcbcn shgsh, fhah vi acn ;x,  
Ji n; xdcvc Usl hkg` oxghtcjkc rcvcn oxghtcj mc pz; wl cj  
bunh; `g`rgh jca; xg ugwk l wavwn. Bunh; `g`r ugl hvhk, txbx; x  
ri mmc xagcvxgl cvck ukwk jca; xg ugwk l hs` Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
pz; wl cjxkxk vzmni kvc ugvyw ; xl x dhgk`b ]uo khvxn  
phgghnvh `zbc vcdxn. Fw zb kzmfcxkvc scpxp mc hdv`kv`n, fw  
fhncvc pe] fxn l i khrxac duovwn. Hl l h ukghn`k vevxdx *âpcn*  
; cs *'i [ xagvcnc; l i scgl hkghnh rhgxf 'cgsc mc ocgxtc ugsh,*  
*l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx hvghkv`n`gsh, Hghph mc rxdhl cj 'i ki kc*  
*xl hkg` ughk pe] fxn ; cs i ]i k ukw xl hl fxgl cvxdx phgvh*  
*dwowdh 'ejl csx [hxb vedxgvxn, xsjcn dhoa` hvhl ugswk, xsjcnc*  
*vc \xs hvhl ß – szbi kc 'cgvx; vc xsc, fxb fw fzdi ; gcnxk kc*  
*vhk`av`y`k` fxgl xnx; ... " zncsck ukghn Xsghl [cl xddcjxkvc*  
*pz; wl cj jca; xg ejl c; i ]i k xghpx rhkwk mc acnxcjgcncvck*  
*szpfcj evxngcn, duosh axngcn mc \cgck'gcnc [cl xddcjxkvc ughk*  
*l eac rhkwkghn`kvhk?!*

Fxb fc/bxgcnxkxk xnhv jwjhnhr vevx; gcnx *âfw, ; e]l xavc; xgcnxk*  
*szbgcnxvn mc phb`n; `csnvc ukghn`k nc/d mc crxvcgcnc xgc*  
*l i mhtxr vedxgvxnß, egc[c vc fharhghn`k`k vevxdx âfw 'i k*  
*phb`nvhl l zm[wv ughk Xsghl [cl xddcjxkx rwnl hg`d`rß –*  
*szbgcnxkxk [hmhf`kvhl Scwvxddc Cncfxsjhk`k`k l cvncscgcncxkvc*  
*jcvnxs ugwkhl fxn ; xjhfk i b jcnctxkx hahy`vh sxbc 'zsjcnxnx; .*  
*Phgfw; x, Cncfxsjhk Fedjwggpdxg-Pcnhl `k – : c/fc emxkxk,*  
*Lcs[xvi g-pcnhl `k mc |edycl fcn l cs[xvxkx dengcavxdx denvx*  
*mc u pcbncj vc unvh vctk ugwk l wavwn. Fw ; xjhfvh Debvx*  
*jc/nxtgckxn, ukwk l cvpxkvc ]uogw ncmhdcjgcnc kcrge evxgxnl Debvx*  
*pcl xk acosvxn ; x, : c/fckx l hk[hkhrgh hjcac jwjl wa,*  
*|edycl fcn l cs[xvxkx mc u pcbncjxk pcnc l xkx i] 'i k zb*

unvswkh l i fhp ejl xavxn ;x, [hl hjj` r`ns`kghn, ukghn`k  
rhv`kghn` mc r`bghn` xgc bxkh ejsxkgcn.<sup>1</sup> Xkvx fegc fxn l cktwn  
acos ughk Debvx l i vhtxc ejl c; mc ukw jc/nxtgcl c; i ]i k fw  
;xjh` f` egc pcl xk acnxt pcncl gcnvc ]h\ evxngcn!!!



|EDYCLFCN | SI KKCSX XGC L I OHGXT UGHK BHG-L  
XLHLH JHFE UGLHR

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc åxl hl h xjhj ejl cdxk mh[xfgxdxß  
fzgi csxkvc redv ejvx; ;x, ukghn kcrj evxngcn ;x, |edycl fcn  
si kkcsxkc l i ohgxt ughk bhg`l swgjhk`k xjhjxkvck ]`ol hr  
rhvhyhk, ukh xjhj ejl c; xsc mh[xfvxn. Gh;xk Cpgx-fedj  
l c;jcfxkvc |edycl fcnvck kcrj ugwkhhk ]uogw ncmhdcjgc,  
oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk kcrj ejvxdx pcl xk ncmhdcjgcngc bxvvddcj  
jca;xg evxn. U [i l gcvck, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl | -xk kcmcsx  
Xl hl Pi sedk™ zb [cvvxkxk fegc fwdwnvwywkw kcrj evxn...

مَنْ رَأَى سُلْطَانًا جَائِرًا مُسْتَحِلًّا لِحُرَامِ اللَّهِ نَاكِثًا عَهْدَهُ مُخَالِفًا لِسُنَّةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ يَعْمَلُ فِي عِبَادِ  
اللَّهِ بِالْإِثْمِ وَالْعُدْوَانِ فَلَمْ يُغَيِّرْ عَلَيْهِ بِفِعْلٍ وَلَا قَوْلٍ كَانَ حَقًّا عَلَى اللَّهِ أَنْ يُدْخِلَهُ مَدْخَلَهُ

åPcn ;cs Hghp`k phnhl fwdwnvwywkw phgh evck, Hghp`k cpv-\edl hk`k

<sup>1</sup> Fw th[xcgcnx cjhthg` ac;xgvc ;xjh`k 3-[i [xgvxkvc åOxghtcj unvsw  
|edycl fcn pcncl xkx l i fhp e/ghk evxnß mc åoxghtcj unvswkwk L c; ;cdc  
vuynw pcnc; cjxß hvj` fhag` rghn`kvh uowdh[hrs`k`b.

\ubhk, |edycl fcnx si kksx xgc l iohgtcj evck, Hgghp`k fckvcgcnx xgc bigl mc 'i khpgh vhmnhk`f, ukghnh cbhf-cbxdcdj menck fixn bhg| ph;xl x 'znif cl cgvc, dhowv szbvc ukwk xsghp`kh jcvfxn 'znl cbsc, Hgghph mh[xfvxn ;x, ukw pcl xk swgjhk`k vhoxg evxgvdx denc (dc/kx [cpckkcl c) vhoxg ejxsk.B<sup>1</sup>

Fw mc fw ;xl x ncmhdcjgcnc oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc;x ncmhdcjgcnc l i rhdxsc ejvx;vc, hdv`k ugwn ;x, u ncmhdcjgcnc l i sl cgl hkghnh ph;xl ughk bhg| swgjhkghn` vcsjc;gcl c; mc ukghn`k oednxc xagcl c; i ]i k |edycl fcnx-C;ncl c kxsfcj menxgl xavxn. Fw xa cl cmxgcncx oxgtcjxkxk cmmcggcncxkvc x[nh evxgl xa, suknh x;xk[x px[nx csnxkxk cmmcggcncxkvc pcvxs dnb`ghn;ck ukghn` zb pcvxs ;xjhfgghn`kvh – xsjcn scpxp, xsjcnc vc l i skcv ;xjhfgghn`kvh dengcavxn<sup>1</sup> xa<sup>2</sup> mc ukghn`k xsjxskhs`b ughnhr phl `s`k`k vi b`i k ugl hs`kh, ukghnh cl cg evxgl csxkxk mh[xfgdx fhncvc tx;xn fxngdxkxk 'cgl xagcn. Fwkvh suknh jhnxo fudwk ph;xl swgjhkghn`k vxk ohvxl gcnc...l i pcvvxsgcn, rhbxgcnc, ocjxfgcnc, xl hl [i l cgcnc, xl hl [hl hhjghn mc s. fi j i k Xsghl zg;cgcnxkvc – Ahl mc Xs\hkdxdvh cl cmxgcncxk, Fhyvhvvh hfhsxgcncxk, Ji n;xdcvc usl hkg`ghn`k, L xsxncv ph;xl l cmhgxcncxk, Xnhkvh scg[wxgcncxk mc rcbkcmxgcncxk, Ahl vh ;i nvgcncxk mc s. vzmngcnxkvc ukghn` acnp evxf phaxdc dhbl hrgh mc vcsjc;gcl c;gc l caywg ugl wa, ph;xl ped/cj jcnctxkvck l hg-vzmgcj, vi kdcmx l crhl h mc ahk-azpncjc khxg ugl waghcn, ukghn`k ki twbgw hnv`[`gghn` vh pcl xk dugw vhmhl ejvxnl xagcn.

Fegcgx;gc, l i scgl hkghn x;x fzdi ; txnrcdc hdn`gv`ghn... Ukghn`k fixnk[xx oi gcth l c;jcfvxn ;x, ukghn`k hgxl gcnc xgc l i hsnx ughk ph;xl gcnc ukghnh ]uogw l hg-vzmgcj, l crhl mc l ckscf menl xa, ukghn`k zb tx;xngcnxkx dhdhkghn`k xojxdhn`kvh pcn kzm xl ;hk rudl wavwghn. X;xk[xx Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfvxn ;x, ukghn`k tx;xn, ph;xl xddcj mc xsjxgh]`g`rghn`k` vcsjc;gcdck ncmhdcj mc tx;xngcnxk rhna`s`kvh [xvvx l i rhmxl cj 'zsjcnxnvxgcnc ph;xl ped/cj vc ukghn` rcjgc dejxnx f bxkvkhk shg`n, si n`i k evxn mc ;xjhfohkhghn`kh di ni a ejl c;gc ;xjhfgghn`k` l cpm evxn, uvvh dhkv`n`nv`.<sup>3</sup> Jhnxo fudw ukghn fw xagcn dhgk`b fwkh 'znc

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, âJhnxox xfkx Csxñß, âL crjcgx Ohncbl xß, xl hl Pi sedk  
™ -`k Pi nn xfkx Debvx Nxdhpxdc oi jfcxskvc.

<sup>2</sup> Fwkwk xbhph` 2-[x [xgvxk cmmcggcncxkvc redv ugwkx[hrv`n.

<sup>3</sup> Fwkwk cjnhtg` xbhph` pcl xk ;xjhfk` âL ukrug-jhjnhghn`k Xsghl zg;cgcnxk di ni agcnxß fzgl csxkvc redv ugwkx[hrv`n.



'zni nvi gcn ; x, |edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk ; eadxxkvc vwnhk tx; xn  
mc vi ai k[cgcn [cl xddcjvck d'y'a'gs`k, l i scgl hkghnvhk 'xbgx  
rhgs`k.<sup>1</sup> Redv ugwkhhkghn` kcbnc hgl hrgh fw bhl hkvh  
pcrxrcjgcxk ke]c thxbxkxk fxbx ]hjv`y`k` dhgk`b Hgghp fxgn!

#### FW FCPSXK OI GHSCSX

âScrxtcß 'i ki kvc l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k vkh`a`r mc cl cgxkc  
ph; xl ughk l ckjxr pcgc vc rcfxgc ph; xl xddcj i sgwfw vxv. U  
'i kvc Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj, ocgxtc Zl cnxk vevvdx ; xl x,  
jcgcs; ckgx; phg`kvh fha menck fxn sh\l h vxv. Zl cn vc oxghtcjc  
awnhdh pcmhgc evckvc Hgghp`k : xjh`kvhk mc |edycl fcn  
si kkcsxkvck pe] fxn vcgxg 'cjxnl cvx mc dhgk`b zbi ki k acosx  
x[jxphv`kh xsjxkhv ejvx. U x[jxphv ejvx mc zbi kvck suknh;`  
âmcgxddx cl nßx jc/dxk ejl cdx dhgk`b zbi ki k jc/dxk ejvxdx hgj`  
kctcnc – fwkghnvhk rednxsxkc duo – pcmhgc ejvx. Pcl vc u zb  
acosx kcbcnx xgc fw hgj` kctcnx ckshnvhk vedxg, phl `s`k`  
l i ph[xngcnvck jca; xg ejvx. Egc[c vc x[jxphv evcnc; oxghtcjc  
khl xbcvxx jc/dxk ugwk l hs`k` Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umth –  
fharhs`kh duo – pcmhgc evcnc; vevx... âC'cn x; x kctcn fxnx xgc  
mc x; x kctcn vc fharhs` xgc ugshghn, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k ugvwyw  
jcctc i sji kgi ; menxgn.ß Pcl ]xkxk x[jxphv evcnc; vevx... âC'cn  
Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fxn cgxkx u fxnx cgxkc mwsh, ukh xjhcj evxk.ß  
Ocgxtc Zl cnxk x[jxphv`k` Hgghp`k : xjh` mc |edycl fcnxk  
si kkcsx xgc fxn jwjhk, ukw xsghl x rhkwk]wgwr mc acnxcjxk  
l ckfcdx peshf evck acosgn fegc vedxngcn... âXl hl cj hgj`  
kctcngx; awnhk`k mhsxjcsxgc fcnrcnhn ugwkwnæ fegc ; x, ukghn`k  
fea kctcnx fxn kctcngc fed/cj evxn.ß

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k âmc cl nwpwl awnh fcdkcpwl ß  
hdcsxkc xsjxkhv ejl cgcx Hgghp mc |edycl fcn jcctxkvck fxn  
'zsjcnxa ugl hdhk xagcnvc awnhdh i sji kgi ; menxgl csxkc vcghgcj  
evxn. } i k; x Si fphk Hgghp pcn denvc fxn aedxx mh[xf ugl hs`k`  
xnhvc ejscdvx, ukw â; wjxf cgc d; wl ß, âtcncbcß, â[ccgcß, dhowv  
âmcxß mc s. ; xl x szbgcngc mc mh[xf vcghgcj evck fharh  
xthvcgcngc fcdhk evcnvx.

Hl l h âmc ahmxnpwl tvg-cl nß hdcsxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, u dhgk`b  
|edycl fcnc oxjh` evxn. Fwnhvh âl i ahmxncß vevx; vc, l i phnxfc  
xgc cghrcvhn xagcnvc, l i scgl hkghn` [xphvh phb`nghl hr ghb`l

<sup>1</sup> Fwkwk cjnhtg`xbhp` 'cgc[c; vc redv ugwk[hrv`n.

ughk dengcnvc, egc[c vc l i anx; gcnxk hnhs`kh ac; ; , jcnvvi v mc  
xojxght shgl hr ghb`l ughk dengcnvc l camcnj ejl c; kbcnvc  
jwjwgn. Fi ji k fw xagcnxk phl `s` acn/x pz; l i k jhk`kl hs` xgc  
vedxg, dhgk`b acncj pz; l i k k ke[c x[nh ugwkl hs` mc ke[c  
jc/dxk ugwkl hs` xgc cghrcvhnv`n. Fwkvhk cghmc, ukghn xl hl `k  
jc/dxk ugwkl hs` bhl hk` awnhk`k ke[c jca; xg evxgc[cdxkx vc  
fcdhk ejl cl xagn. Fxb vc Usl hk`k oxghtcjx i]i k jca; xg  
ugwkhk awnhk`k ke[c sukh ]hjv`y`k` 'znvi ; . Fwnh rcvcl fcdhk  
ugwkhkghn awnh xgc cghrcvhn ughk szpfcjgcn vxv.

Hi l h fed/cjc 'cgvx; vc xsc, redv ejl cgxdx; ; x, bunh; `g`r mc  
sxghp 'i [i kc hg`khk, 'i khp i]i k denxkc dejxngck, egc[c vc  
Hgghph rhna` xjhcsxbgx; evck acosgc cghrcvhn ughk fed/cj pe]  
mhoj 'en]c; gcal cl cgvxv.

Scphfcgcnxk sxncsx (jwjvwyw dug mc hvcj-ck/ckc) vc c`cn  
Hgghp`k : xjh` mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx xgc edkx scmddcvc  
ugwf, xsghl x rhkwk]wgwr mc acncj i]i k l z/jcfc fcn l ckfc  
peshf ugwkhnsh, ukh xsjxkhv ejl c; vi b'i kvi n, c; s phgvh xsc  
duo. Fw fhncvc xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k L i hmxddc dhbv`y` l c; jwf  
xsjxkhv evxgl csxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, redv ejl cgxdx; ; x, fwnhvh  
fegc fcn aedc epjx[h[ mc xsjxkhv evxgnvx ; x, rhna` (vi al ck)  
jcnctx ukh xgjbhl g` ejsxk. Fw vh crg shpxfgcnx kbcnkv  
fcdckxgck fcn xavv.

Fwkw vh redv evc; ; x, scphfcgcnxk xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k, xl hl  
Pcsck mc xl hl Pi sedk £ -`k xajxnh; ` xgc fxngx; vc ughk  
(xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jc/fcnxkvc redv ugwkvwvyw ; xl x) tx; xn fxngdx  
Hgghp`k nhb`g`y`kh vcghgcj evv.

Hi l h fc/bxgcnxkxk vevxdx āpcn ; cs bugh, 'i [ xagcjl c; gc  
rcgcfc ]hgsh, u, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnvvn mc ukh xjhj ejl c;  
mh[xfvvn, xsjc dhoe` hvhl ugswk, xsjcnc vc \xs hvhl β –  
szbi kc 'cgvx; vc xsc fw egc fcn 'en]c; gx; vxv ; x, ukghn fw tx; nc  
cl cg ejl cdc mc ukwk vhmhl ejvnxgl csxkc hvcj ejl xagn.  
Fegc ; x, fw pcrxrcj, Xsghl vh ocgxtcgcnxk jhnxoxkx hnhav`nhk pcn  
; cs i]i k hdv`k l cscgcvn.

Fwnh rcvcl vedxgckgcn oigcth l c; jcfxkxk xl hl cj  
fhncsxkvc; x vcgxcgcnx mc ukwk hnhav`n`gl hs`kvhk xfhncj vxv.  
Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk kbcnxdcdsx mc ukghn`k vcgxcgcnx vc  
x; xk[x [xgvvc hnhav`n`gh[hrv`n. Xkahgghp!

Mcj-pcl vw ggghpx Ncfxg-hgcl xk!

# L I KVCNX{ HJ

BISMILLAHIR-RØHMANIR-RØHIM .....	7
ZK SZB.....	9
HGGHP-K : XJHF- MC   EDYCL FCN j                      SI KKCSX	
L EPMCNCXKVC MCPVCJ .....	11
L I RCVVXL HJX FCPSGCN .....	15
L I RCVVXL C .....	15
1-L I RCVVXL C .....	17
OHNX{ X JCONXFHJ} -G-R HL XGGCNX.....	21
2-I L L CJ ZMGHVGHN- HNHS-KVH L I AHPXVC EJVXDXL	
XOJXGHTGHN-K FC/BX JC/SXNGCNX.....	26
FXNXK{ X SCTCN.....	27
2-X: XK{ X SCTCN.....	28
3-HGGHP-K FC/BX SXTJCJGCNX MC UKGHN-K FHNC SXKVC	
XOJXGHT-K L CKACDX .....	33
HGGHPGH " ZNI A FHNC SXKVC .....	35
FEPXAJVC HGGHPGH " ZNI A .....	36
FW NCMHDCJGCNXK L C/KHS- MC JC/MXGXKVC L ZM{ WV	
UGHK XOJXGHTGHN .....	37
XFKX PI BEDL CKXK : XJHF-K-K FC/BX FZGL CGCNX.....	38
HGGHP-K FC/BX SXTJCJGCNX FHNCVC UGHK XOJXGHT-K	
L CKACDX .....	39
CGX ™ --K SZBI KC XSJXKHV EVXNGCN .....	40
4-  EDYCL FCNGCNXK SXTJCJGCNX FHNC SXKVC UGHK	
XOJXGHTGHN MC UKWK L CKACDX .....	42
EDYCL FCN j                      -XK HY-B SWDWKH JCFCNNI : E J L C: .....	43
EDYCL FCNX-C: NCL j                      -XK VCSJCL HB SWDWKH	
JCFCNNI : .....	43
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j                      -XK JI : I KC JCFCNNI : E J L C: .....	44
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j                      -XK UOWKH JCFCNNI : E J L C: .....	46
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j                      -XK CGXKXK DENXKC JCFCNNI :	
E J L C: .....	46
F)   EDYCL FCN j                      -X HGGHP VCN" HP-KVH ACTHCJ} X	
RCNHN MENL C: .....	47
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j                      -XK SXTJCJGCNX XGC CGHRCVHN	
XOJXGHT-K L CKACDX.....	50
5-HGGHP-K SHGEP FCKVCGCNXKXK MC   EDYCL FCNGCNXK	
OHJXNCSXKXK CBXB JWJWGL HS- FHNC SXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT .....	58
H) XFNHPXL ™ --K L CRHL ~ (L CRHL X XFNHPXL).....	58
F) SETH MC L CNMC .....	59
OCSHNCJ MC FCVFCOJ} XGDXK FXN L C: HKVHK FHARH	
L C: HKH SXNHDCJ E J L CSX.....	61
L C: HKGHNH OEDXN-FCNC: CJXK MC DH OCSHNCJ MC	
FCVFCOJ} XGDXK L CKACDX.....	62

6-HGGHP ZMGXDHGHN-K-K MC   EDYCL FCNGCNXK RCFXNGCNXKX JC/L XN EJL CDXK MC ÉKGHNVH XFHVCJ	
EJL CDXK FHNCXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT .....	64
FW PCVXS FHNCVC JCKRXV MC L I GHPXBCGCN .....	65
FW PCVXS FHNCVC JCKRXV MC L I GHPXBCGCN .....	67
EDYCL FCNGCNXK RCFXNGCNX I BCNXKVC XFHVCJ" HP	
JX: XGL CSXKXK { HXB UGVWYWKW VEDCKGCNXX VCGXGGCNX .....	67
7-L EDDXJC HYGHL HR FHNCXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT MC UKWK L CKACDX .....	70
EDYCL FCN C: NCL i -XK ZB UYGW XFNHPXL C	
HYGHL HS- .....	71
EDYCL FCNXX ZB KCMCSXKC HYGHL HS- .....	72
EDYCL FCN i -XK ZB CLXSX PCL BCDC HYGHL HS- .....	72
EDYCL FCN C: NCL i ZB HKHS-K-K L CBHN-	
I SJI KVC HYGHD-N MC FHARHGHN-K- VH HYGHV-N .....	73
EDYCL FCN i L I SXFCJ " ZNCKGCNC DEL C: " ZKVCNVX .....	73
EDYCL FCN C: NCL i L HJCL L CNHSXL X I } I K	
PCVV-PI VWV JC/DXK EVXN .....	73
L EDDXJC HYGHL HR FHNCXKVC UGHK XOJXGHT-K L CKACDX .....	74
8-JC/MXG MC L C/KHGHN-KVH XOJXGHT UGWKHK RWN/HK HDCGCN .....	77
H) HGGHPVHK FHARHS-K- } HY-NL HR .....	77
F) HGGHPVHK FHARHS-K-K PZ: L I .....	78
FW X: X L CSCGCVC L I OHGXTGCNXX { HMFH- .....	80
HGGHP-K L HGX: XDDCJ MC PH: XL XDDCJX .....	82
HGGHP-K OHGXRDDCJX MC VXXGJL CSX .....	83
MCGXDD (RCDDWL ) MC ACTX (ACTHCJ} X) .....	85
EDYCL FCN i -X } HY-NL HR MC HGGHP DUGWKVH	
UKH JCMCSSI G EJL C: .....	88
H) XOJXGHT-K DHNHKL HS-KVH UGHK FXNXK{ X PCRXX L CRSCV .....	89
OXGRCJXK CMMCGXKVC .....	89
EDYCL FCN C: NCL i -XK CSNXKVC .....	91
FXBXL CSNXL XBVC .....	92
FCPSXK OI GHSCSX .....	92
F) XOJXGHT-K DHNHKL HS-K-K X: XK{ X SCFCFX .....	92
9-OI GHSC MC DE: WK .....	94
FW : XJHF-K FCPSXKXK I SGWFGHN- .....	96
X: X L C: JCFXK XSGHL X ACNXCJ L CKFCGCNXXVC: X	
KCBCNXDDCGCNX .....	99
L I RCVVXL C .....	99
XOJXGHTG- PHGGHN .....	99
CNCF VXGX MC XSGHL X XSJXGHPGHN (JENL XKGCN) .....	100
FXNXK{ XSX JC/NXT MC JCRSXL (FZGI ) .....	100
H) CNCF GI YCJX .....	100

F) XSGHL XSJXGHPGHN-, DHOWV L I RCVVCS ACNXCJ	
JCNCTXKVCK RUDWGHK HVGHN.....	101
R) L I JCACNNXC XSJXGHP, DHOWV L I SCGL HKGHN	
JCNCTXKVCK RUDWGHK HV.....	101
Y) PCRXRCJ MC L C{ HB.....	102
X: XK{XS...CNCF GI YCJ L C{ L WCGCNXKXK KE{ C D-Y-GL HS-.....	103
FXNXK{X FCPS.....	105
X: X L C: JCFXK SZPFCJ MC SCPHFC FHNC SXKVC UGHK	
KCBCNXDDCGCNX.....	105
FXNXK{X TCSXG - X: X L C: JCFVC SCPHFCKXK JC/NXTX.....	107
H) OI GCTH L C: JCFXKVC SCPHFCKXK JC/NXTX.....	107
F) CPGX-FEDJ L C: JCFXKVC SCPHFCKXK JC/NXTX.....	108
M) OI GCTH L C: JCFXKVC SCPHFCKXK JHK-KL H DUGGHN-.....	109
SCPHFCKXK JHK-KL H DUGGHN-KVH L ZM{ WV UGHK XNHV.....	109
X: XK{X TCSXG.....	113
X: X L C: JCFXK KCBCNXKVC SCPHFCKXK CVHGCJX.....	113
H) OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK SCPHFCKXK CVHGCJX	
FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNXDDCSX.....	113
F) CPGX-FEDJ L C: JCFXKXK SCPHFCKXK CVHGCJX	
FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNX.....	116
Y) L Z/L XKGC L I KHTXRK JHK-KL HS-K-K L E/DHN-.....	120
I } I K{ I TCSXG.....	124
X: X L C: JCFVC SCPHFC FCPSXKXK OI GHSCSX.....	124
H) OI GCTH L C: JCFXKVC SCPHFC MC UKWK CVHGCJX.....	124
F) CPGX-FEDJ L C: JCFXKVC SCPHFC.....	124
X: XK{X FCPS.....	127
X: X L C: JCFXK XL HL CJ MC OXGHTCJ FHNC SXKVC: X	
KCBCNXDDCGCNX.....	127
FXNXK{X TCSXG.....	127
XSGHL -K CMMCGGCNXXKVC OXGHTCJXK JCA: XG UGWKL HS-K-K	
JHNXOX " EN} C: GDX.....	129
EDYCL FCN i -XK SUK MCSXDDCJX.....	130
EDYCL FCN i -XK MCTHJ- BHL HK- ZL CNXK	
JWJVWYW L ZMRE.....	131
SCRXTC PHVXSCSX, ZL CNXK MHSXJCSX XGC CFW FC: NGC	
FED/CJ EVXGL CSX.....	132
I L WL X FED/CJ.....	140
I L WL X FED/CJVCK SUKNH.....	141
EDYCL FCN i -XK VCTK L CNHSXL XKVC XAJXNH:	
EVCKGCN.....	141
EDYCL FCN i -XK VCTK UGWKL HS-KVHK SUKNH: ~	
PHVXSCGCN.....	142
E/JXNHB CGHL CJX UGHNHR THJXL EDX-BCPNH ϕ --K	
EMXKVC D-Y-GL H.....	145
CFW FC: NC FED/CJVCK XL JXKH EVCKGCN.....	155
1-TCNMCJ XFKX CL N.....	155

2-OHGXV XFKX SCXV CL CMX .....	155
3-SC/V XFKX I FHVC .....	156
ZL CNXK OXGHTCJX MC UKWKGH FED/CJ .....	160
USL HKGH FED/CJ MC AWNH .....	160
XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> OXGHTCJXK UKVHK WBHRGHAH{ HY-K- FXGXNVX.....	165
XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> -GH FED/CJ .....	169
X: XK{X TCSXG.....	173
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK XL HL CJ FHNCXKVC: X KCBCNX .....	173
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK KCBCNXDDCSX MC UKGHN-K VCGXGGCNXKXK CSHS- .....	175
1-OCGXTC CFW FC: NXK KCBCNX.....	175
2-OCGXTC ZL CN XFKX OCJJHF-K KCBCNX .....	175
3-OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK HNV-{ -GGHN-K-K KCBCNXDDCSX.....	176
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j -GC L I OHGXT UGVWYW PHGVH FEGC, XL HL H XJHCJ EJL CDXK MH{ XFGXDX.....	181
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK SUK DI B XGGX: VC " CJXNVX: GCNX VCGXGGCN .....	183
XL HL CJ MC OXGHTCJ FCPSXKXK XSJXGHPGHN-.....	183
1-AWNH .....	183
2-FED/CJ .....	184
H) CNCF VXGXKVC FED/CJXK L C/KHS- .....	184
F) XSGHL VH FED/CJXK L C/KHS-.....	185
1-CRCFEDX-WGH FED/CJX .....	185
2-CRCFEDX-SHKXDC FED/CJX .....	186
3-FED/CJX-NXBMHK, DHOWV FED/CJX-AC{ CNCB.....	187
L CJGCFXK OI GHSCSX.....	190
3-OCGXTC MC HGGHP-K DEN I BI KVC: X OCGXTCSX.....	191
1-OCGXTC MC OXGHTCJ .....	191
H) FXNXK{X OCGXTCKXK VZMNI KVC.....	192
F) X: XK{X OCGXTCKXK VZMNI KVC .....	192
2-HGGHP-K DEN I BI KVC: X OCGXTCSX .....	193
1-XSGHL X XSJXGHPVH HGGHP-K OCGXTCSX .....	193
HGGHP-K OCGXTCGCNX XKSHKGHN-K NCPFCNGCNXVXN.....	194
HGGHP ZB OCGXTCGCNXKC E/{ HB (L Z/{ I BC " ZSJCNL C: ) L CRHL - MENXN .....	196
EDYCL FCNX C: NCL j -XK OCGXTCSX.....	199
2-L I SCGL HKGHN-K XSJXGHP-KVH OCGXTC MC OCGXTCJWGGHP .....	199
H) CL CMXGCNXX MC HFFHSXGCNXX VZMNI KVC.....	199
F) USL HKG-GHN-K VZMNI KVC .....	200
M) FXBXL CSNXL XBVC .....	200
L CJGCFXK OI GHSCSX.....	202
4-CL XNCG-L Z/L XKXK .....	203
5-XL HL .....	204
6-CL N MC WGWG-CL N .....	205

H) CNCF GI YCJXKVC .....	205
F) L I SCGL HKGHN-K I NTI KVC.....	207
M) XSGHL X L CKFCGCNVC .....	208
7-MCSX MC MCSXDDCJ .....	209
X: X L C: JCFXK OXGHTCJ MC XL HL CJ FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNXDDCSXKXK HNHAV-N-GL HS-.....	211
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK KCBCNXDDCSX MC UKGHN-K XSJXKHV EJVX: GCNX VCGXG.....	211
1-CFW FC: NXK SZBI .....	211
2-ZL CNXK SZBI MC KCBCNX .....	211
FW X: X VCGXG FHNCVC JCKRXVX L I GHPXBCGCN .....	211
3-OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK HNV-{ -GGHN-K-K OXGHTCJ FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNXDDCGCNX.....	213
1-AWNHDH XSJXKHV EJL CDXK JCKRXV EVXGXF HNHAV-N-GL HS- .....	213
AWN HK-K VI B" I KGI DI KI K XSFHJ EVXGL CSXKVC HGGHP-K : XJHF-KH MC  EDYCL FCN SI KKCSXKC XSJXKHV EVXGL CSX.....	213
H) FCVN VZDI AI .....	215
PHVXSCKXK JCTSXGHJ- .....	216
F) I PI V L I PHNXFCSX.....	219
M) OCKVC: L I PHNXFCSX.....	221
2-FED/CJC XSJXKHV EJL CDXK HNHAV-N-G-F JCKRXV EVXGL CSX.....	224
3-SCPHFCGCNXK CL CGXKC XSJXKHV EJL CDXK HNHAV-N-G-F JCKRXV EVXGL CSX.....	230
XL HL CGX™ --K KCP{ I G-FCGHYCVC: X SZBI KC XSJXKHV EVCKGCNXK SZBGCNXKXK HNHAV-N-GL HS- .....	231
4OXGHTCJ BUNH: -G-RGH FCNRCNHN UGWKWN – SZBI KC XSJXVGHG EVCKGCNXK SZBI KI K JCKRXV EVXGL CSX.....	238
EDYCL FCN ; SI KKCSX XGC L I OHGXT UGHK BHG-L XL HL H JHFE UGL HR .....	239
FW FCPSXK OI GHSCSX.....	241